



Fortifications of the New Zealand Wars

Nigel Prickett

In Memory

Tony Walton [26 November 1952 – 6 November 2008]

New Zealand archaeological sites central file-keeper

New Zealand Historic Places Trust [1978–1987]

Department of Conservation [1987–2008]

This report is one of the last Department of Conservation archaeological contract projects in which Tony was involved and reflects his interest in historic sites of the New Zealand Wars, and so is a fitting tribute to his career.

Cover: Alexandra Redoubt, near Tuakau, was established by British troops the day after General Cameron crossed the Mangatawhiri River on 12 July 1863 at the start of the Waikato War. The earthwork fortification was located to secure the right flank of the invasion route and to protect military transport to the front on the Waikato River 100 m below. The outstanding preservation is a result of the redoubt now being within an historic reserve and cemetery. See Section 3.10 in the report. *Photo: Nigel Prickett, April 1992.*

This report is available from the departmental website in pdf form. Titles are listed in our catalogue on the website, refer www.doc.govt.nz under *Publications*, then *Books, posters and factsheets*.

© Copyright May 2016, New Zealand Department of Conservation

ISBN 978-0-478-15069-8 (web PDF)

ISBN 978-0-478-15070-4 (hardcopy)

This report was prepared for publication by the Publishing Team; editing by Sarah Wilcox and Lynette Clelland, design and layout by Lynette Clelland. Publication was approved by the Deputy Director-General, Science and Policy Group, Department of Conservation, Wellington, New Zealand.

Published by Publishing Team, Department of Conservation, PO Box 10420, The Terrace, Wellington 6143, New Zealand.

In the interest of forest conservation, we support paperless electronic publishing.

CONTENTS

Abstract	1
1. Introduction	2
2. Bay of Islands	17
3. Auckland	23
Auckland city	23
South Auckland	27
4. Waikato	35
Mangatawhiri to Rangiriri	35
Ngaruawahia and Waipa River	47
Hamilton and Waikato River	56
Te Awamutu and district	59
Waikato west coast	66
5. Bay of Plenty	67
Tauranga and district	67
Rotorua and district	76
Eastern Bay of Plenty	77
Te Urewera and its western approaches	83
6. Central North Island	89
Napier-Taupo Road	89
South end of Lake Taupo	92
7. Poverty Bay and East Coast	99
Poverty Bay	99
East Coast	103
8. Hawke's Bay and Wairarapa	107
Northern Hawke's Bay	107
Central and southern Hawke's Bay	110
Wairarapa	112
9. North Taranaki	113
New Plymouth and Bell Block	114
Waitara and district	124
North of Waitara	142
Omata and Oakura districts	147
Tataraimaka and Okato districts	153
South of Hangatahua (Stoney River)	160

10.	South Taranaki	167
11.	Whanganui	181
	The town	181
	Whanganui River	184
	North to Patea	187
	South—including Rangitikei and Manawatu	199
12.	Wellington and district	203
	Wellington	203
	Hutt Valley	205
	Porirua Road and district	206
13.	South Island and Chatham Island	211
	South Island	211
	Chatham Island	213
14.	Conclusions and recommendations	214
15.	Acknowledgements	223
16.	References	224
<hr/>		
Appendix 1		
	Summary of fortifications	229

Fortifications of the New Zealand Wars

Nigel Prickett

Email: nigel.prickett@gmail.com

Abstract

This report catalogues 505 New Zealand War fortifications, 322 (63.8%) of them European and 183 (36.2%) Māori. Episodes covered are the 1843 Wairau Incident and other 1840s conflicts in the Bay of Islands, Wellington and Whanganui districts, the 1850s Puketapu Feud in Taranaki, the decisive 1860s fighting in North Taranaki, Waikato, the Bay of Plenty and Whanganui / South Taranaki, Te Kooti's 1868-72 struggle in the central and eastern North Island and the 1880-81 Parihaka Campaign.

Fortifications are presented by region as follows: Bay of Islands (13 fortifications); Auckland (41); Waikato (82); Bay of Plenty (56); Central North Island (19); Poverty Bay and East Coast (22); Hawke's Bay and Wairarapa (16); North Taranaki (142); South Taranaki (29); Whanganui (59); Wellington (21); South Island and Chatham Island (5). Except for the Bay of Islands and South Taranaki all regions are further subdivided for ease of access. Of total catalogued sites, 348 (68.9%) are recorded in the N.Z. Archaeological Association Site Record Scheme and 157 (31.1%) were recorded at the time of writing.

The introduction outlines the significance of the works and describes different Māori and Pākehā forms. Conclusions make use of the catalogue to examine changes in form and in the tactical and strategic purpose of fortifications in 40 years of armed struggle. Research needs are outlined. Significant sites and landscapes are identified. Their protection is an urgent task, especially where rapid land-use change is now taking place, as in the Waikato, Taranaki, Bay of Plenty, Whanganui and South Auckland regions where the most significant New Zealand War sites and landscapes are located.

Keywords: New Zealand Wars; colonial war; fortifications; Pākehā; Māori; pā; rifle-pit; redoubt; blockhouse; stockade.

1. Introduction

1.1 The New Zealand Wars

To understand the present we must know the past. War was at the heart of a process of expansion and dispossession that has defined our country for 150 years. In today's renegotiation of the Pākehā-Māori relationship, there is no escaping reference to the New Zealand Wars and their results.

Fighting in the New Zealand Wars took place throughout much of the North Island and in the 1843 Wairau Incident in the South Island. Campaigns and conflict episodes are summarised chronologically in Table 1 (see also Fig. 1).

Table 1. Periods of conflict or campaigns of the New Zealand Wars.

CAMPAIGN OR EPISODE	YEARS	REGION
Wairau Incident	1843	Marlborough
Northern War	1845–46	Bay of Islands
Wellington	1846	Wellington
Whanganui	1847	Whanganui
Puketapu Feud	1850s	North Taranaki
First Taranaki War	1860–61	North Taranaki
Waikato War	1863–64	Waikato
Tauranga Campaign	1864	Tauranga
Second Taranaki War and after	1863–69	North Taranaki
Whanganui and South Taranaki	1864–66	Whanganui, South Taranaki
East Coast	1865–66	Opotiki, Poverty Bay, Hawke's Bay
Titokowaru's War	1868–69	South Taranaki, Whanganui
Te Kooti's War	1868–72	Poverty Bay, Hawke's Bay, Taupo, Te Urewera, Whakatane
Parihaka Campaign	1880–81	Taranaki

These episodes and campaigns outline the fighting and military operations that have left behind a legacy of historic landscapes and fortifications to tell the story of the wars. Just as there is no doubt about the significance of the wars in New Zealand history, so the archaeological sites and landscapes they have left are among our most important historic places.

The earliest fortifications date from the 1840s in Auckland, Wellington, Whanganui, the Bay of Islands and the South Island. Most, however, relate to major campaigns of the 1860s in the Waikato, Taranaki, Whanganui and Bay of Plenty regions. Included in the New Zealand Wars is fighting that took place between Māori groups, in the Northern War, Taranaki's Puketapu Feud, in fighting on the East Coast in the 1860s and in Te Kooti's War that followed. After the fighting, in the 1860s, 1870s and 1880s, fortifications were used to secure Pākehā settlement frontiers on confiscated land.

1.2 The report

This report outlines current knowledge of 505 Pākehā and Māori fortifications of the New Zealand Wars. It is aimed at archaeologists, historians, heritage managers, planners, land-owners, land managers and any others who are interested in this period of New Zealand history and its associated significant historic places. Entries include archaeological data (site record number if available, map reference, location and present condition) and historical information (who built it, when and why, the original form, and any significant later history). Knowing both history and archaeology of a site is necessary when considering its research potential, and significance for conservation, protection and planning purposes.

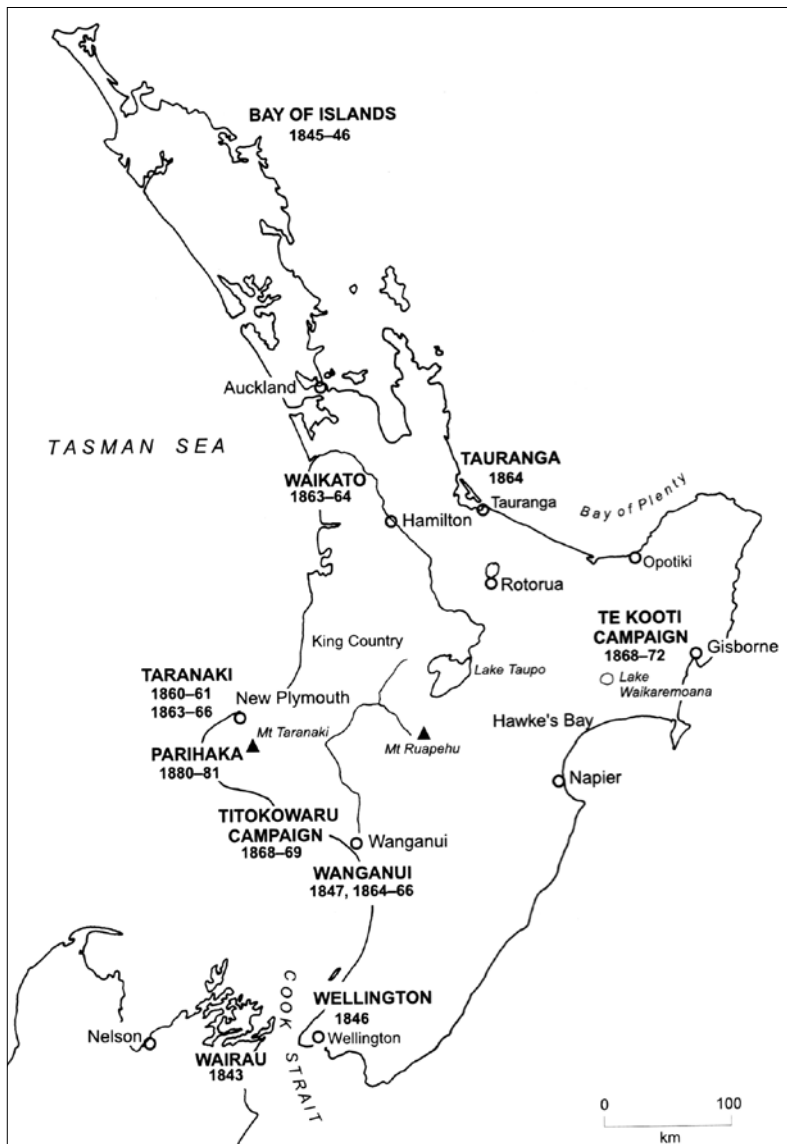


Figure 1. Location map of major campaigns and episodes of the New Zealand Wars.

The report is organised by region (Chapters 2-13). Most chapters are further subdivided according to district or geography for ease of use. Information on the archaeology and history of fortifications varies considerably. Some site descriptions are based on good recent records, others rely on old data, while for others no information is available. Site histories include those with well known, significant circumstances, to places where the barest date or historical reference is available. A few have no known history, although from their form and location they are almost certainly of the period. Every fortification listed here would benefit from more research.

In the Bay of Islands, Wellington and Central North Island, all or nearly all the works date from one campaign. Some Auckland works date from the Northern War (1845-46), but most are from the Waikato War a generation later. In the Waikato, there was fighting over nine months in 1863-64, followed by two decades of stand-off at the fortified frontier of European settlement. Fortifications were used throughout several episodes from 1864 to 1872 in the Bay of Plenty. In Taranaki and Whanganui there was conflict over more than 20 years—from the 1850s to early 1880s in Taranaki and 1847 to 1869 in Whanganui. Throughout the New Zealand Wars, fortifications played an important part in the strategy and tactics of both sides and in nearly all engagements.

Appendix 1 lists all catalogued sites, with site record number (if available) and fortification date and type.

1.3 Strategy and tactics in the New Zealand Wars

Fortifications were used for tactical and strategic purposes. Most Pākehā works were strategic in defending communication lines and holding positions and territory. The success of strategic posts was not just in repelling an attack but in none being made. Notable among tactical Pākehā works were eight redoubts (see **9.44-51**)* put up to protect the long advance by sap (attacking trench) near Waitara in early 1861.

The New Zealand Settlements Act 1863 allowed the confiscation of tribal land from groups deemed to be in rebellion against the Crown, and so encouraged a shift to strategic works. With the aim of the war now being to take the land, Pākehā military objectives and the political agenda were brought into line. Frontier posts in Taranaki and Waikato secured European settlements on confiscated land until the Armed Constabulary was disbanded in 1886.

Māori works also might be strategic or tactical in purpose. The tactical use pā of was important for a fighting force without artillery and still using muskets in the 1860s when the enemy had rifles with vastly greater accuracy and rate of fire. To the end of the 1860s Māori did what they did best in constructing pā for tactical advantage. Notable successes over the British Army took place at Ohaeawai (**2.3**), Puketakauere (**9.52, 9.54**) and Pukehinahina / Gate Pā (**5.11**); colonial forces were beaten in attacks at Te Ngutu o te Manu (**10.23**) and Moturoa (**11.26**). But most European attacks on pā were successful, while many other pā were not put to the test. Only in Titokowaru's campaign was Māori success with fighting pā translated into a significant strategic advantage, until Tauranga Ika (**11.36**) was abandoned without a fight.

Māori strategic options eventually were closed down by the loss of land, an increasing weapons disparity, the loss of fighting men and by the continuing flood of Pākehā settlers into New Zealand. In 1858 European numbers were about the same as Māori; in 1870, after a decade of fighting, five of six New Zealanders were Pākehā. By the early 20th century, 19 of 20 New Zealanders were Pākehā (data from Baker 1966).

1.4 The fortifications

Both sides had long experience in the use of fortifications in war. For centuries Māori had used pā to defend communities and territory. When muskets became available in the early 19th century, pā were shifted from hill-tops to level ground for more effective defensive fire. Defenders moved from the high platforms in traditional pā, which were vulnerable to an enemy with guns, to trenches behind stockades for protection and firing positions. When the British Army brought artillery into the equation, bunkers were dug inside pā where defenders sat out a bombardment then manned the firing trenches as an attack came in.

In this report, Māori fortifications are listed as pā or rifle-pits. All or nearly all pā had rifle-pits or trenches as part of their extended work, either within the pā defences or as associated outlying positions. A small number of recorded rifle-pits were stand-alone positions which were not part of pā defences.

The British Army also had considerable experience of small field works. Colonial or imperial campaigns similar in scale to the New Zealand Wars had been carried out in Europe, North America, Asia and Africa. In New Zealand, the British Army had the particular advantage of fighting an enemy without artillery, so that defensive works would not be battered or breached prior to an assault. When the main period of fighting ended, Pākehā changed from earthwork redoubts to stockades and blockhouses, which took longer to build but could be defended by smaller, more economical garrisons.

* Bolded numbers refer to numbered sections within the text.

1.4.1 Pākehā fortifications

Pākehā works comprised earthwork redoubts, timber stockades and blockhouses, and rare ‘fortified buildings’, saps and ‘earthworks’ other than redoubts, which might defend a position or camp. There was considerable variation in form within these general types.

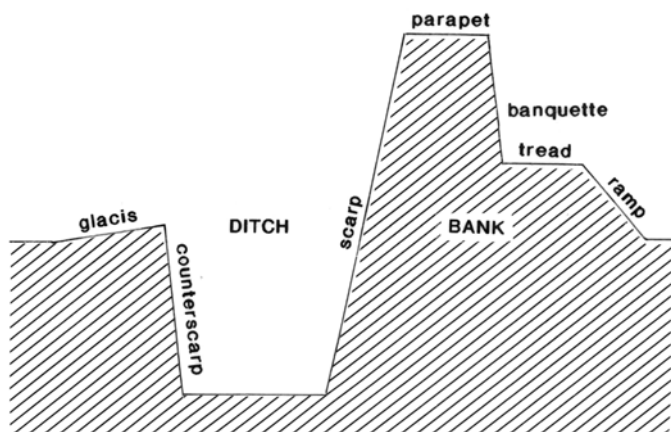


Figure 2. Cross-section of redoubt defences.

Redoubts were defended by ditch and bank earthworks (Fig. 2). They were made by digging a ditch to a depth of c. 6 ft (1.8 m), the excavated soil being thrown up on the inner side to form a bank c. 8 ft (2.4 m) high. This gave a total height from ditch bottom to parapet of 4.2 m. There was often a drawbridge over the ditch to the entrance that was otherwise a point of weakness. Most redoubts were of an overall square or rectangular plan or ‘trace’, but they could take many forms depending on the lie of the land or wishes of the Royal Engineer or officer in charge of construction. Redoubts were the most common Pākehā work and were mostly used in campaign situations

where they could be thrown up quickly, unlike timber works which took days or weeks to build. The 60 m square Waireka Camp (9.90; Fig. 3) near New Plymouth was built in one day under enemy fire.



Figure 3. Waireka Camp (9.90), Taranaki, 1860: a classic redoubt form with bastion defence at two corners covering all four sides. Photo: N. Prickett, 1975.

Square or rectangular works commonly had bastion defence at two or four angles to cover all four sides. Waireka is an example of the classic two-bastion form. Miranda Redoubt (4.10; Fig. 4) on the Hauraki Gulf, is an example of bastions at all four corners each covering one side, a form described in 1869 as the ‘...usual New Zealand redoubt’ (Young 1869: 12). Examples of irregular or complex traces are Kakaramea (10.4; Fig. 104), South Taranaki, and Meremere (4.8; Fig. 31) in the

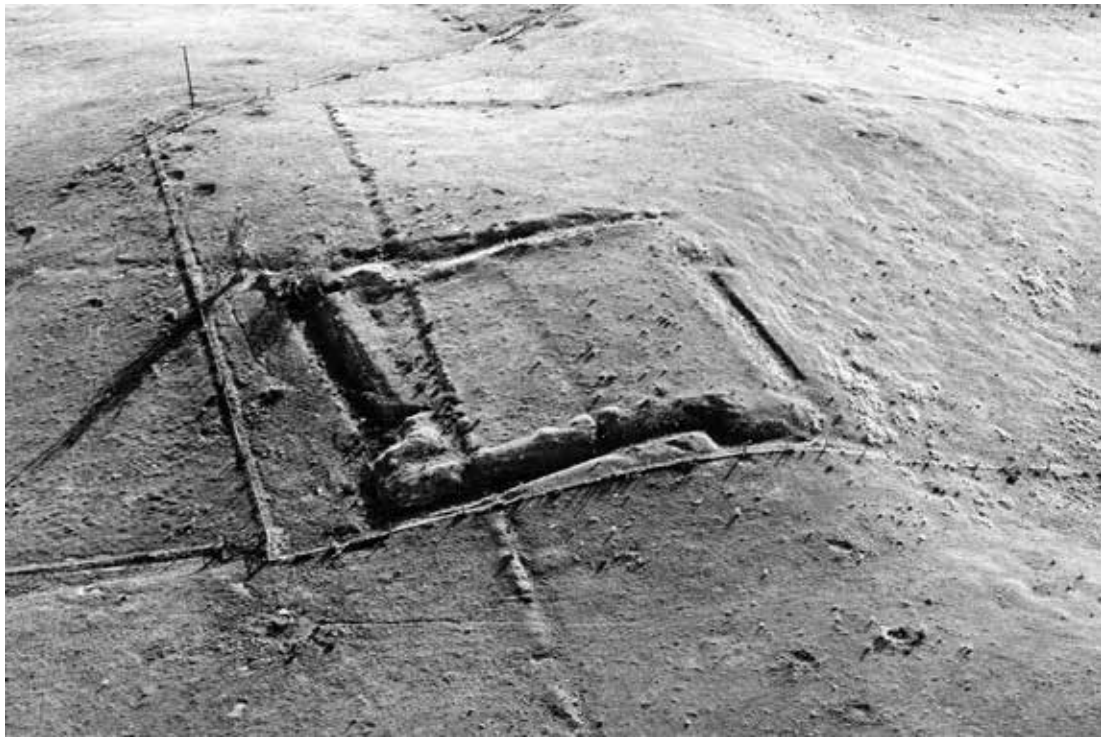


Figure 4. Miranda Redoubt (4.10), 1863, on a hill west of the Firth of Thames: an example of the 'New Zealand redoubt' form commonly used late in the wars, of bastion defence at all corners, each covering one side. Photo: N. Prickett, 1992.

Waikato. Some redoubts follow older engineers' manuals, such as Alexandra Redoubt (4.23: Fig. 36) in Pirongia where each side is covered from two directions as if in consideration of a breach from enemy artillery, and Rotoorangi (4.78: Fig. 44) where sides are angled to the centre and a ravelin earthwork covers the entrance, again after an older European model.

Redoubts were typically built for one or two companies of c. 100 men. Colonel H.J. Warre, commanding officer in Taranaki from 1861 to 1865, sketched the internal arrangements of standard one- and two-company works. The smaller redoubt (Fig. 5) shows a 35 × 28 yard (32 × 25.6 m = 820 m²) interior accommodating 20 bell tents, one each for the commanding officer, orderly room, doctors, hospital, magazine, guard and drivers ('sappers' and 'drivers' were enlisted Royal Engineers), two each for the officers and commissariat and nine 12-man tents for rank and file. The two-company work for 30 tents was 42 × 35 yards (38.4 × 32 m = 1230 m²). Both had 8–10 m² bastions at two angles, which added c. 150 m² to their defended area.

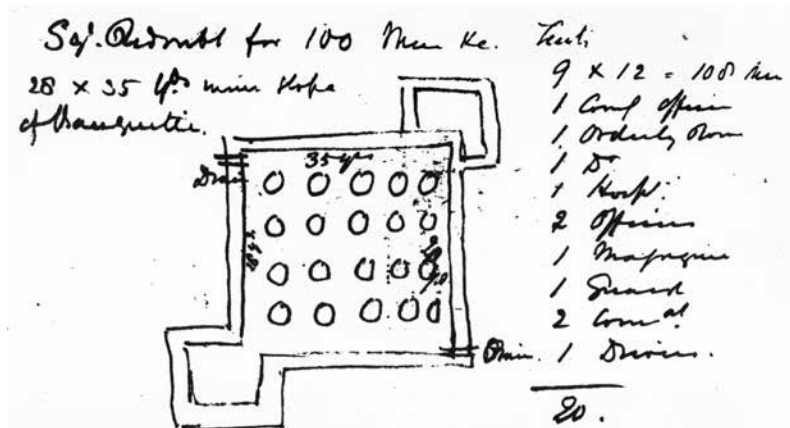
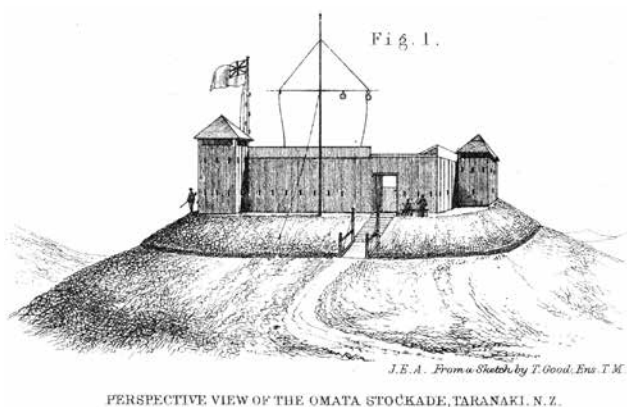


Figure 5. Form and internal arrangement for a 100-man redoubt. Colonel Henry James Warre, 1863, pencil on paper, Sketchbook p. 131, Hocken Collections, Uare Taoka o Hākena, University of Otago, acc 11,326.

New Zealand's largest redoubts were Queen's Redoubt (3.26: Fig. 25) in Pokeno and Camp Waitara (9.26: Fig. 76) in Taranaki. Queen's Redoubt was 100 yards (91 m) square internally (8281 m²), of classic form with two bastions covering all four sides, and accommodated 450 men in huts. Camp Waitara was built in two phases to enclose c. 8500 m², with bastions arranged to defend an unusual trace.

The smallest redoubts were guard posts attached to otherwise unfortified road-building camps in the 1880–81 Parihaka Campaign, such as Werekino (9.124) and Pungarehu (9.118) where sentries were stationed in c. 8 m diameter earthworks on top of small volcanic mounds. Although there was no fighting, the invasion force was nonetheless conducting a military campaign.

Stockades were defended by close-set timbers, 10 ft (3 m) high or more, loopholed for defensive fire. Like redoubts, they had bastions projecting from the work for an enfilading fire along the length of an enemy attack on the stockade wall. Bastions sometimes had more than one floor and level of loopholes, behind the high timber walls. There was often a ditch outside the stockade line and a drawbridge over the ditch to the entrance.



PERSPECTIVE VIEW OF THE OMATA STOCKADE, TARANAKI, N. Z.

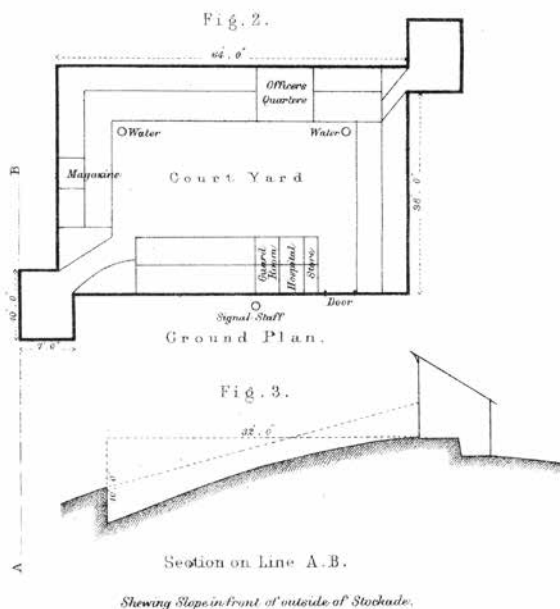
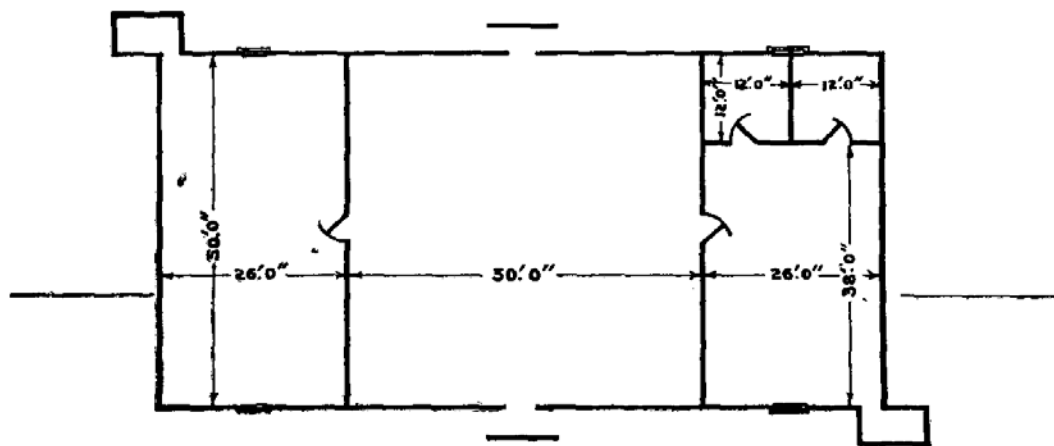
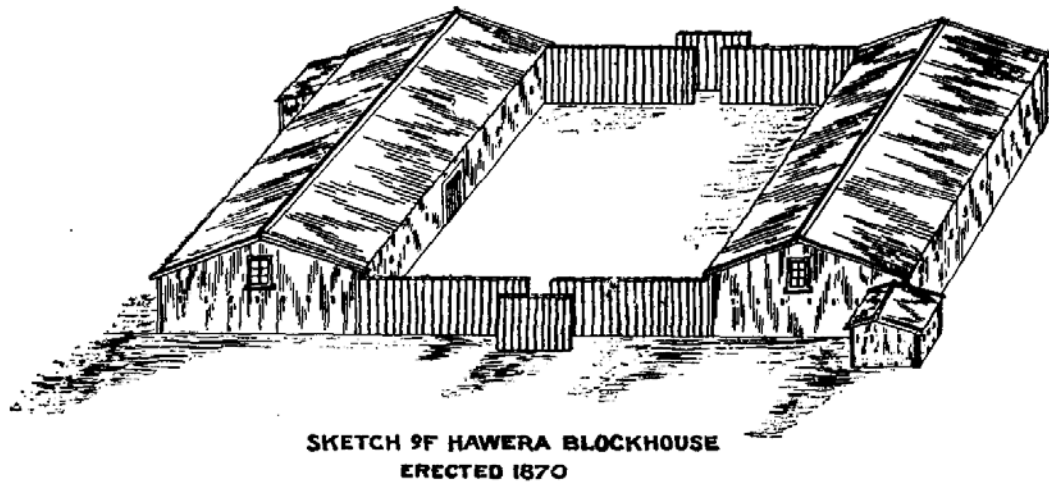


Figure 6. Omata Stockade (9.83), Taranaki. From Alexander 1863.

The Omata Stockade (9.83) (Fig. 6), Taranaki, illustrates the stockade form. Two bastions cover all four sides from two rows of loopholes and a third firing position beneath the roof. The walls have a single row of loopholes and there is a defensive ditch and drawbridge outside. Buildings inside are constructed against the stockade wall to maximise the yard space available within a total defended area of only 9.3 × 12.8 m (247 m²), plus the two 3.2 × 2.3 m bastions. Stockades were much smaller than redoubts. In the First Taranaki War, the Omata Stockade housed 54 to 73 local men (Alexander 1863).

Most stockades were of rectangular plan, with bastions at two corners. Early in the wars they were used in the course of fighting, such as Matarikoriko Stockade (9.42; Fig. 80) in Taranaki, which had single-storey roofed accommodation buildings in the bastions and sentry boxes over the other two angles. Matarikoriko was constructed in two weeks, mostly from the trunks of tree-fern, and held 60 men (Carey 1863: 157). In the northern Waikato, Bluff Stockade (3.12; Fig. 23) was 15 × 14 m in plan and had three buildings around a small yard. It was flanked from three corners, except for the side above the scarp to the river. Stockade timbers were 4.2 m in length—1.2 m in the ground and 3 m above. The nearby Mangatawhiri Stockade (4.6) was a less formal work, sited on an older pā and consisting only of a rough stockade.

When fighting ended, stockades were common at the settlement frontier, where investment in construction was offset by savings in long-term manning levels. A rectangular stockade around two buildings (labelled 'blockhouses') was typical, with a small yard between the blockhouses, and bastions at two opposite corners. At the 31 × 15 m Hawera Stockade (10.2) (Fig. 7), the two blockhouses were loopholed to the yard as well as along external walls, with pits dug beneath the bastions to provide a second row of loopholes near ground level. Smaller stockades include



Origin of plans: J. Orchiston, Esq., M.I.E.E. Drawn, C. P., 1920]

Figure 7. Hawera Stockade (10.2). From Cowan 1983 II: 486.

Mataitawa Blockhouse (9.38), with a stockade defence despite the name, at 15.5 × 14.9 m plus two 3 × 2 m bastions. Hawera and Mataitawa both served for several years as muster posts for local militia as the military frontier was transformed into a frontier of Pākehā settlement.

Armed Constabulary stockades in the late period were often larger than militia posts at the farming frontier and were sometimes irregular in plan. Runanga Stockade (6.3; Fig. 57) on the Napier-Taupo Road was c. 30 × 22 m, with triangular bastions jutting from the centre of three sides, and a slight projection next to the entry on the south side (Mitchell n.d.). Unlike the Hawera Stockade there were no buildings against the defences, allowing easy access to all of the stockade's interior walls. The fort was held by the Armed Constabulary from September 1869 to March 1876, and in 1871 was rebuilt from a simple initial two-bastion form.

Blockhouses were stand-alone defensive buildings designed for small numbers of men. The term originally referred to a detached building 'blocking' a strategic point or access. In New Zealand they were of one or two storeys and loopholed for defence. Two-storey works might be enclosed in earthworks or a stockade, of an area not much larger than the building itself.

The term 'blockhouse' can also refer to strong points at the corner of a stockade or redoubt, as at Queen's Redoubt (3.26), South Auckland, and Manaia Redoubt (10.6; Fig. 105), in South Taranaki. Barrack buildings that were inside or associated with a larger fortification such as Hawera Stockade were also called 'blockhouses'. The building inside Kaitake Redoubt (9.80; Fig. 95), Taranaki, was referred to as a 'blockhouse', but was not itself a defensive work.

An example of a single-storey work is Marangai Blockhouse (1.50) (Fig. 8), south of Whanganui. Notable groups of blockhouses date from winter 1860 in New Plymouth and Auckland in the same year, when the small early towns were ringed by blockhouses on elevated or otherwise strategic sites. Auckland had eight from Point Resolution to Freemans Bay by way of the Domain, the hospital grounds and Karangahape Road (3.2; Fig. 20), with three other blockhouses at Onehunga (3.6), Otahuhu (3.7) and Whau (3.9; from which Blockhouse Bay gets its name). All or nearly all were of brick construction. Only the cross-shaped Onehunga Blockhouse survives. At New Plymouth, nine timber blockhouses (9.2, 9.5-10, 9.17-18) looped around the town at the edge of high ground inland and at strategic places near the coast, as part of a defensive system which included also an inner entrenchment around the small urban centre (9.16; Fig. 70).



Figure 8. Marangai Blockhouse (1.50), Whanganui: example of single-storey fortification; restored in recent years, with added concrete base. Photo: N. Prickett, 2001.

Two-storey blockhouses may have followed a North American model where they were used in a similar role at the settlement frontier. In their first appearance in New Zealand, three were erected at Akaroa after the 1843 Wairau Incident. The English Blockhouse (13.1; Fig. 128) typically had an upper storey extending out from the lower. There were two rows of loopholes in the bottom storey and another row in the upper storey. A low stockade or fence surrounded the work. More than two decades later, the Orakau Blockhouse (4.70) was built to a similar arrangement, but without loopholes in the lower storey. Instead, the surrounding stockade was loopholed and the upper storey loopholed all round. The lower floor was c. 16 × 20 ft (5 × 6.5 m), with the upper extending out a further 3 ft (1 m). Puketotara Blockhouse (9.22) (Fig. 9) near New Plymouth is an example of a stand-alone two-storey work without additional defence.

1.4.5 Māori fortifications

Pā were much the most numerous and important Māori fortifications, with a variety of pā forms reflecting changing tactical and strategic objectives. The only other significant standalone Māori fortification was the rifle-pit, but these were more commonly part of pā complexes.

The major challenge to pā was artillery, so the most significant innovations in the New Zealand Wars were aimed at contending with this. But throughout the wars there were still pā without bunkers or other anti-artillery defence. This was especially so where Māori groups without artillery fought each other, such as in the 1850s Puketapu Feud in Taranaki and on the East Coast in 1865. Or they were older, unmodernised pā, or were otherwise not intended to play a part in the conflict which suddenly caught up with them. Hurirapa (9.29) (Fig. 10), at Waitara in Taranaki,



Figure 9. 'Puketotara Nov. 18' [1864]. Puketotara Blockhouse (9.22), near New Plymouth, is an example of a two-storey work. Colonel H.J. Warre, Sketchbook 1864-1865, p. 51, Ref: E-294-051, Alexander Turnbull Library, Wellington.

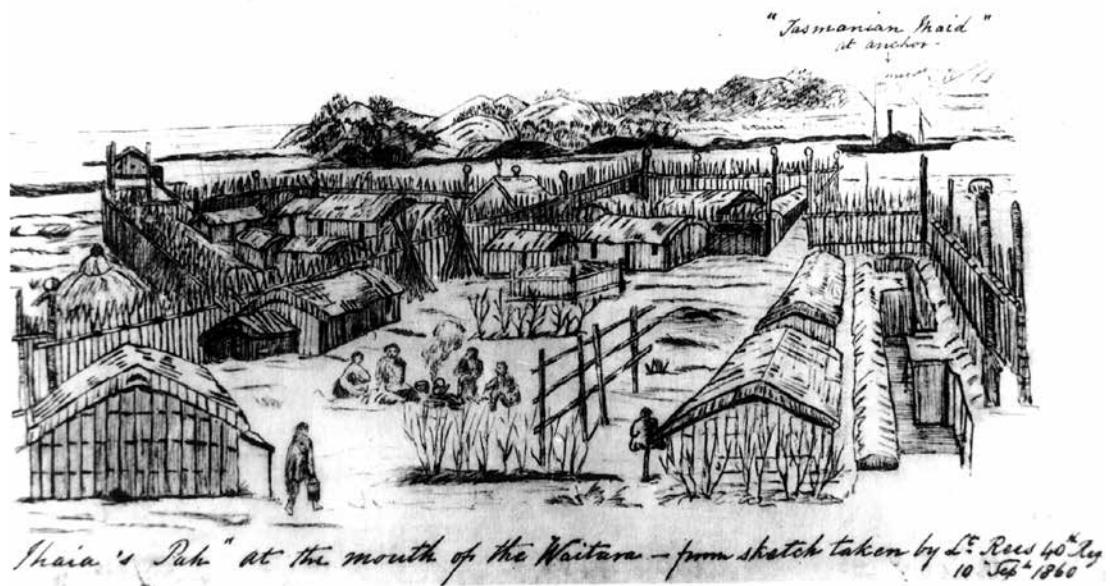


Figure 10. 'Ihaia's Pah at the mouth of the Waitara'. Hurirapa (9.29), Waitara, 1860, a gun-fighter pā with traversed rifle trench at right, but without artillery bunkers. William Fraser copy photograph of original sketch by Lieutenant J.V.H. Rees, collection of Puke Ariki, New Plymouth, PHO2009-012.

1860–61, was an older style of 'musket pā' with rifle trenches behind the stockade. As the home of Māori who were allied to Pākehā, there was no need for shelter from artillery.

Te Kahika (2.10; Fig. 18), Ohaeawai (2.3) (Fig. 11) and Ruapekapeka in the Bay of Islands, were the first pā to include significant anti-artillery innovations. Defenders sheltered in rectangular pits under huts at Ohaeawai and in deeper bell-shaped pits at Ruapekapeka. There were several defensive lines. The inner and strongest of three stockades was immediately behind a line of firing trenches and rifle-pits. Two outer stockades allowed defenders to push their guns through the inner stockade close to ground level and fire out beneath the outer stockade. A flax screen on the outer stockade absorbed enemy fire and hid damage to the main defences. This arrangement was widely used by later stockade pā.

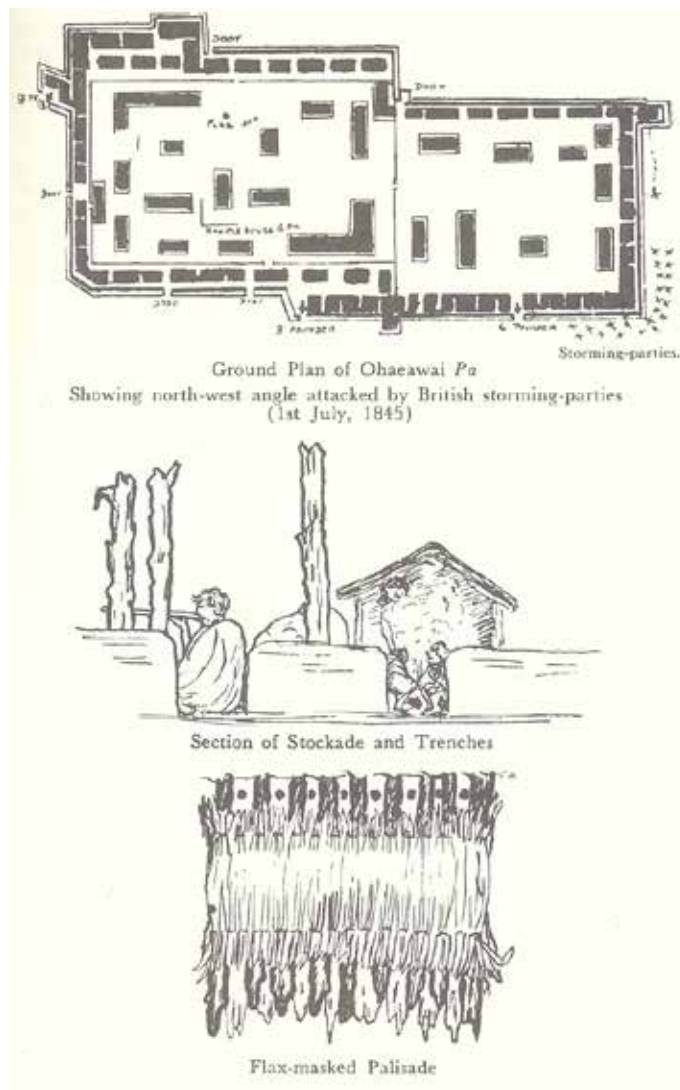


Figure 11. Ohaeawai (2.3), Bay of Islands, 1845, showing huts and bunkers within the pā, with the standard arrangement of two stockade lines in front of a traversed rifle trench and one behind. *From Cowan 1983 I: 53.*

Stockade pā had the disadvantage of requiring considerable resources and man-power to build. Despite this, in the year-long First Taranaki War Māori built more than 30 pā, most of which were not tested. Another disadvantage was that the stockades were an easy target for artillery. In early 1860, an innovative earthwork pā was constructed at Kaipopo (9.78), near New Plymouth, defended only by a light fence in front of bunkers and rifle trenches. Although taken in the Battle of Waireka, it was nonetheless the first of many. Notable later earthwork pā, that is, without a stockade, were Paterangi (4.33; Fig. 37) (Fig. 12) Rangiriri (4.14; Fig. 32) (Fig. 13) and Orakau (4.69; Fig. 42) in the Waikato, and Pukehinahina / Gate Pā (5.11; Fig. 48) (Fig. 14) at Tauranga. Te Kooti's Te Porere (6.15; Fig. 59), south of Lake Taupo (1869) was also an earthwork pā, although unusually followed the classic Pākehā two-bastion redoubt form.

Most pā were enclosed and defended on all sides, though some, such as Kaipopo (see above) and Porou (9.102) at Katikara, Taranaki, were defended only to the direction of an expected attack and were open at the rear. More significant is the distinction between enclosed and 'barrier' pā. Enclosed pā could have a tactical or a strategic purpose. Barrier pā were never other than strategic, being designed to halt the enemy advance. Barrier pā were important in the Waikato, notably at Rangiriri and Paterangi (see above), and required a considerable construction investment. Paterangi had c. 1 km of rifle trenches and six strong points, and was the longest continuous defensive earthwork of the wars. A small part of Rangiriri survives as one of the war's

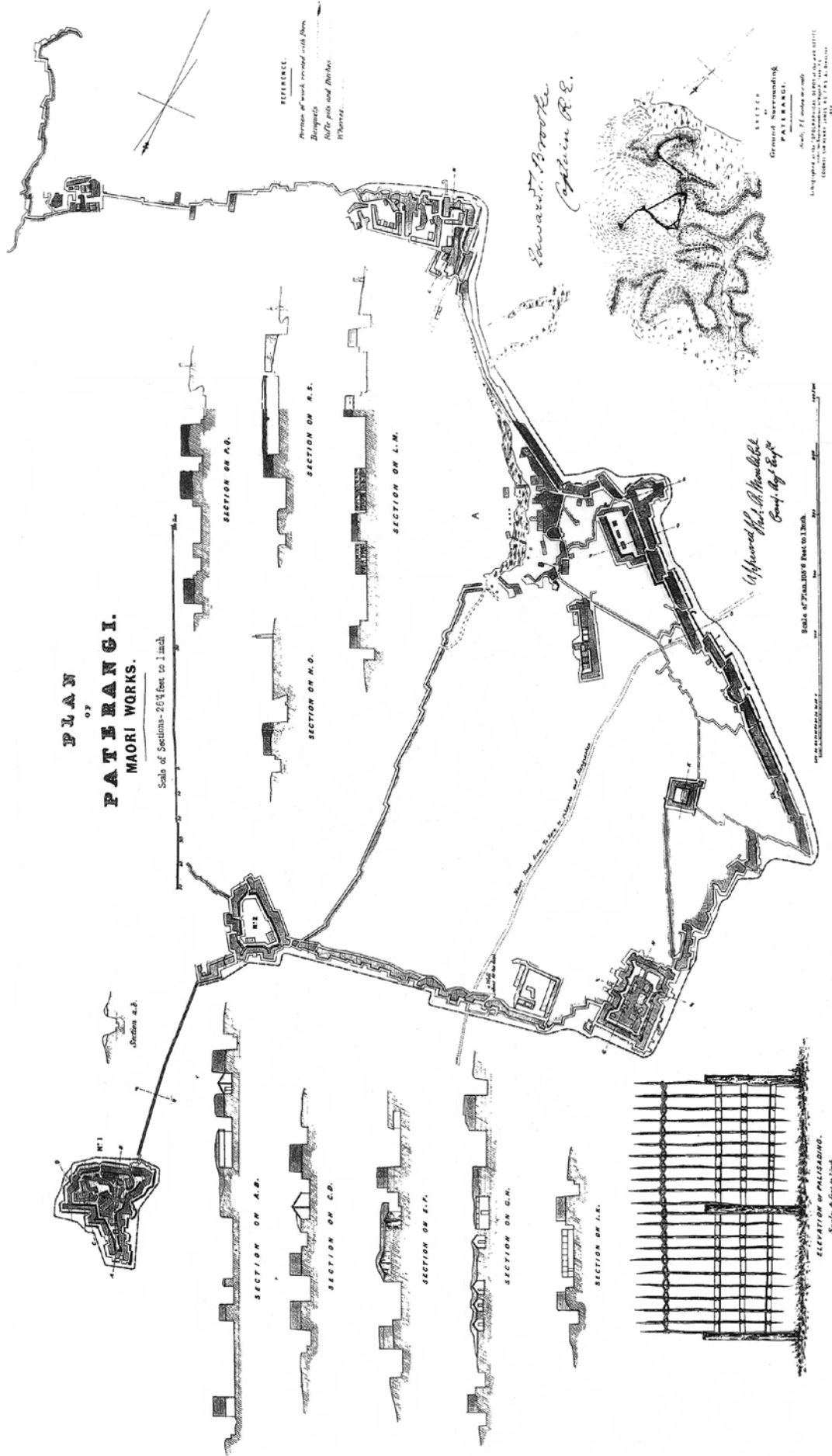


Figure 12. Paterangi (4.33), Waikato, the largest of all barrier pa. Plan by Captain E.T. Brooke, Royal Engineers, from War Office 0270 II: opp. p. 20.



Figure 13. Rangiriri (4.14), Waikato, 1863, a short section survives of the barrier pā which was scene of arguably the most important battle of the New Zealand Wars. *Photo: N. Prickett 1992.*



Figure 14. Pukehinahina/ Gate Pā (5.11), showing the slight fence and small pā interior, and traversed firing trench with access to underground bunkers. *Lieutenant H.G. Robley, 68th Regiment, watercolour, Auckland Museum PD48(47).*

most significant historic places (Fig. 13). Other barrier pā were Huirangi (9.27) and Te Arei (9.56) near Waitara, which took two and a half months to overcome by an extended sapping operation, and Te Ranga (5.16), near Tauranga, which was a barrier pā in the making when it was attacked.

Among the largest pā were Ruapekapeka (2.7; Fig. 17) at 110 × 80–40 m and Tauranga Ika (11.36; Fig. 119), north of Whanganui, at c. 140 × 140 m, both designed for large numbers of defenders. Tauranga-Ika was bigger than any Pākehā fieldwork. Small pā include Pukekakariki (9.103), at Kaihihi River, Taranaki (October 1860), which may have been 25 × 25 m. It was, however, not on its own, but one of three designed to act in concert, along with Orongomaihangai (9.101; Fig. 100) and Mataiaio (9.99). In the First Taranaki War, in nearby Tataraimaka district, five pā (9.107) were described as being arranged ‘en echelon’, i.e. one end of the line of pā was forward of the other. These were separate fortifications, but designed to act in concert as a barrier work.

Evolving defensive arrangements are seen in the three pā where Māori defeated the British Army. In 1845, Ohaeawai (2.3; Fig. 11) had a strong double stockade backed by a rifle trench similar to earlier musket pā, but with the addition of anti-artillery bunkers. In 1860, Onukukaitara (9.52; Figs 83, 85) and Puketakauere (9.54; Figs 83, 88) were designed to operate together. Onukukaitara had a light, part-single and part-double stockade, with innovative concealed rifle-pits forward of the main work, which surprised and turned back the 40th Regiment attack. In 1864, Pukehinahina / Gate Pā (5.11; Figs 14, 48) had only a light fence around a complex of bunkers and concealed firing positions.

New Zealand’s last pā were in the central North Island, near Waiouru, where the two ‘Waiiau’ pā (6.18–19), and Auahitotara (6.8) and ‘Donnelly’s Fort’ (6.9) date from inter-tribal land conflict c. 1880.

Many kāinga (villages) had stockades even if they were not strictly pā, and some ambiguity remains in defining these terms. Omaru-hakeke near Wairoa in Hawke’s Bay, is called a ‘stockaded settlement’ and a ‘pa’ by Cowan (1983 II: 128–129). Omarunui near Napier, was clearly a kāinga, but had several palisaded enclosures to provide firing positions and a measure of protection for the c. 100 mostly Ngāti Hineuru fighters inside (Cowan 1983 II: 136–142).

More work is needed to identify and locate pā and unfortified settlements of the New Zealand Wars.

Rifle-pits, otherwise ‘rifle trenches’ or ‘firing trenches’, were first developed as part of earlier inter-tribal ‘musket pā’. They were an essential part of pā in the New Zealand Wars, providing defenders with protected firing positions (Fig. 15). Rifle-pits were often covered by timber and earth to protect occupants from artillery and plunging small arms fire. Traverses part-way across rifle trenches prevented enfilading fire—firing down the length of a defended trench from a position at one end. Access from rear bunkers was by way of tunnels or trenches. In pā, rifle pits were located behind one or two stockades or earthworks. Stand-alone rifle-pits often had no forward defences, relying on quick access to rear gullies or bush as needed.

1.5 Data presentation

Each site entry contains five sections. Unattributed information is from the relevant New Zealand Archaeological Association site record.

1.5.1 Identifying data

Name: the commonly used name of the historic place (e.g. Omata Stockade). If no historical name is known, a name is given from the location, in italics and not fully capitalised (e.g. *Koheroa rifle-pits*).

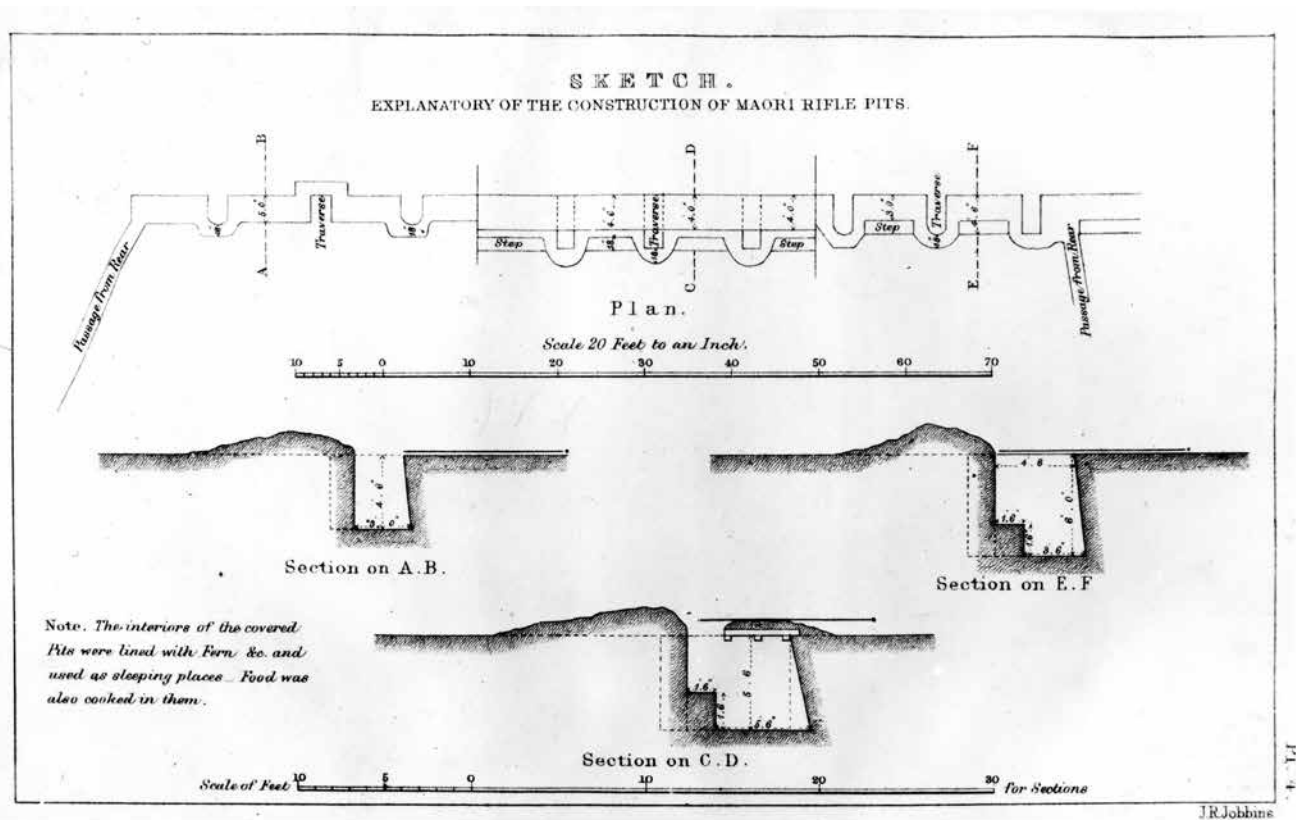


Figure 15. Plan and sections of Māori rifle-pits. From Pasley 1863: Pl. 4.

New Zealand Archaeological Association (NZAA) site record number: this number includes the NZMS 260 metric map sheet number, followed by a unique number assigned as required for particular site records on that map sheet (e.g. S13/112).

Where sites are given as having 'no site record', this refers only to the absence of a record in the NZAA site recording scheme and not as having no record elsewhere. Sites described as 'not located', again are not recorded in the NZAA site record file, or are located on the site record sites from historical information only, without an accurate location from field observation.

Metric map grid reference: seven-digit grid references are given for the 1:50,000 NZMS 260 map series. All site record grid references have been checked for this report.

Grid references are rounded to finish with '00' or '50', to avoid spurious accuracy of map references to a 1 m or 10 m location, which can be unhelpful for land managers charged with protecting historic sites. Map references are located as much as possible to the bottom left (southwest) corner of sites.

Map references to the 'NZTopo50' map series introduced in September 2009 are not used in this report.

Imperial site record numbers are provided where sites were first recorded using the old imperial inch-to-the-mile map series (e.g. N129/176). This is to assist in using early reports which refer to imperial site record numbers only, before introduction of the NZMS 260 series from the late 1970s.

Site record history: gives the year first recorded, and year(s) of updated record(s). Site records and updates are nearly always based on a field visit.

Other names of the site, if any.

Heritage New Zealand Pouhere Taonga: On 19 May 2014 the New Zealand Historic Places Trust (Pouhere Taonga) had a name change by Act of Parliament to 'Heritage New Zealand Pouhere Taonga'. 'Heritage New Zealand' is used throughout in this report, in place of 'New Zealand Historic Places Trust'.

1.5.2 Location and access

This section begins with the name of the district or suburb or township or larger urban area where the site is located, and is sometimes followed by the name of the wider district or town, or a nearby more widely known place-name, if this is thought useful.

There follows a more detailed location description in relation to points that can easily be described and identified in the field, such as road junctions, notable landmarks, trig stations, etc.

Information about access to the site is stated if useful, and where it is available from personal knowledge or from the NZAA site record.

Where they are known, names are given of previous Māori fortifications or other historic places at the site location.

1.5.3 History

A brief history of each site is given, depending on available information. A shared or similar history of more than one site may be given in each case, or reference is made to one record where historical information applies to a group of associated sites.

1.5.4 Fortification

Fortification descriptions are deliberately brief. Where possible, this includes the form of work (pā, rifle-pits, redoubt, stockade, blockhouse, etc.), size of the fortification, any unusual aspects of form or treatment of defences, something of interior arrangements and external living quarters, etc. Also noted are changes to the work, as in the case of Pākehā works that began in campaign mode for large numbers of men and were later remodelled for small garrisons at the frontier of confiscated land.

1.3.5 Site condition

Descriptions of site condition may include historical records and present condition as is available, mostly from NZAA site records.

2. Bay of Islands

The only military conflict of the New Zealand Wars north of Auckland was the 1845-46 Bay of Islands campaign, or 'Northern War'. This was fought between sections of Nga Puhī under Hone Heke Pokai allied to Kawiti's Ngāti Hine, against British and colonial European forces alongside other sections of Nga Puhī under Tamati Waka Nene and Te Taonui. Fighting began with a successful Māori attack on the Pākehā town of Kororareka (Russell) and continued with European attacks on inland pā at Puketutu (May 1845), Ohaeawai (June and July 1845) and Ruapekapeka (January 1846). The only clear success on the government side was by Nene's Nga Puhī at Te Ahuahu (June 1845).

See also Chapter 3 for Pākehā works in Auckland relating to the Northern War.

2.1 Lower Blockhouse

Q05 (c. 2612950E 6659600N); no site record, not located; Fig. 16

Russell; north end of town on low hill near Flagstaff Road.

For the history of this fort see Maiki Blockhouse (2.2) and Polack's Stockade (2.6). Soldiers driven from Maiki Blockhouse early in the morning of 11 March 1845 withdrew to the Lower Blockhouse, which they occupied until ordered to evacuate after gunpowder store at Polack's Stockade exploded (Wards 1968: 120-124; Cowan 1983 I: 22-33).

A contemporary sketch (Fig. 16) shows a smaller building than at Maiki Blockhouse.

No known remains.

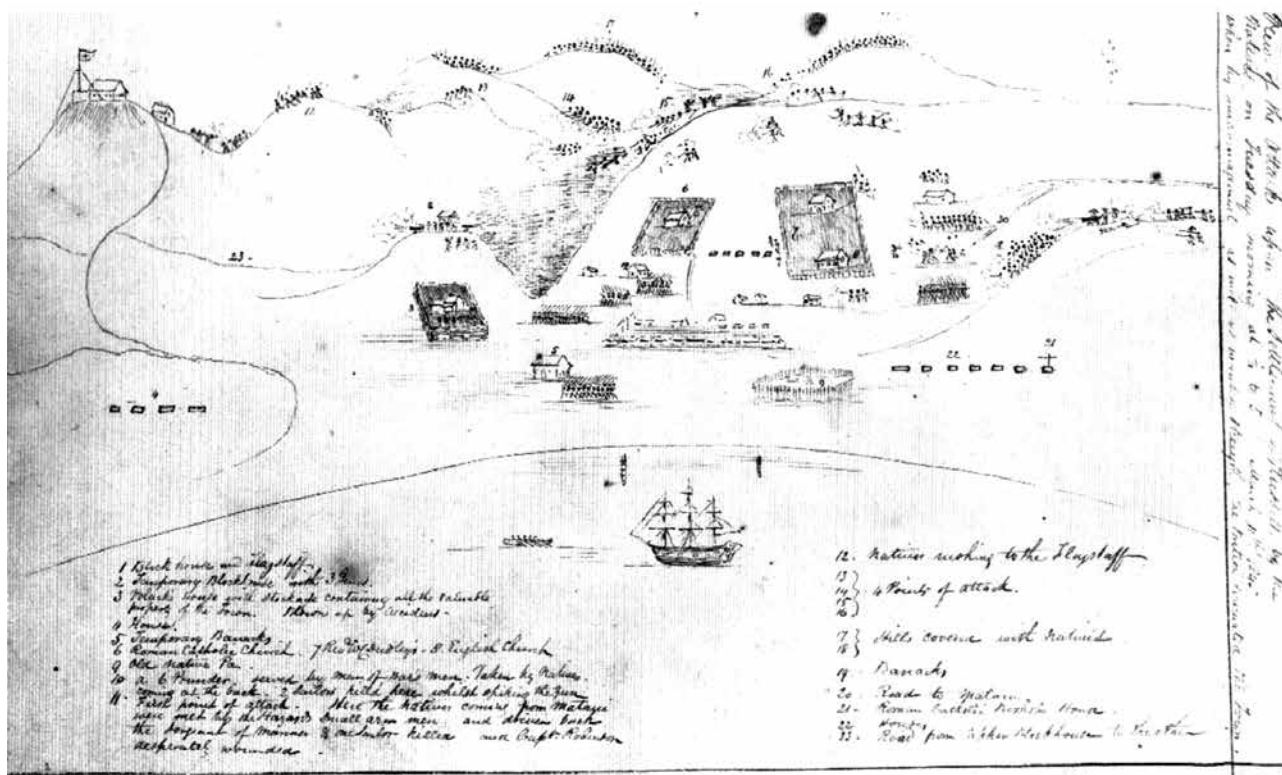


Figure 16. 'View of the attack upon the settlement of Russell by the natives on Tuesday morning at 1/4 to 5'. Sketch of the attack on Russell, 11 March 1845, showing the Maiki (Flagstaff) Blockhouse on the skyline at left, Lower Blockhouse at mid-left and Polack's Stockade below. William Bambridge, Diaries, Ref: MS-0130-249, Alexander Turnbull Library, Wellington.

2.2 Maiki Blockhouse

Q05/709 (2612650E 6659950N); N11/473; recorded 1983, update 1984; also Flagstaff Blockhouse, Upper Blockhouse and Signal Hill Blockhouse; Fig. 16.

Flagstaff Hill, Russell; access via Flagstaff Road; at trig '662', 98 m a.s.l.

A flagpole erected in 1840 to fly the Union Jack on a prominent hill at the north end of the town of Kororareka/ Russell was first chopped down by Hone Heke in July 1844, then twice more before a stockade and blockhouse were built for its protection. On 11 March 1845 the fort was taken and the flagpole chopped down for a fourth time in an early morning attack by Heke and Kawiti. The garrison fled to Lower Blockhouse (2.1), before Polack's Stockade (2.6) blew up and Russell was then evacuated. Māori forces then sacked the town (Wards 1968: 120–124; Cowan 1983 I: 22–33).

A contemporary sketch shows a loopholed single-storey blockhouse with the flagpole in a small stockade at one end (Fig. 16).

A 20 × 20 m blockhouse platform with external ditch is in good order; the present flagpole dates from 1858.

2.3 Ohaeawai

P05/205 (2588400E 6646700N); N15/16; recorded 1964; Fig. 11.

Ngawha, Ohaeawai; St Michael's Church is built on the pā location on elevated ground 200 m north of SH12.

The pā of local chief Pene Tauī was further developed by Kawiti to withstand artillery fire; troops arrived on 23 June 1845. Despite a week's bombardment having little effect on the defences, Colonel Henry Despard ordered an assault on 1 July, which was repelled with half the storming party of 220 men killed or wounded. Ten days later the pā was abandoned and was then destroyed by the troops (Wards 1968: 153–159; Cowan 1983 I: 49–72).

Ohaeawai measured 100 yards east–west × 40–43 yards (91 × 37–39 m). Stockades were 10–15 feet (3–4.5 m) high, built mostly of whole tree trunks. An outer flax screen absorbed fire and hid any damage to defences. Next was a massive, loopholed stockade with close-set posts and a firing trench behind. A third line behind the rifle trench was on the two forward faces only; the other two sides—against a gully to the rear—had only two stockade lines. Pits or bunkers in the pā gave protection against artillery fire (information from Cowan 1983 I: 50–54).

Much of the site is now occupied by St Michael's Church and churchyard cemetery.

2.4 Otuihu

Q05/398 (2613200E 6652750N); N15/75; recorded 1970, update 2006; also Pomare's pā.

Otuihu, Bay of Islands; on a prominent point over the inlet 1 km southeast of Opuā wharf.

The pā was destroyed and the chief Pomare taken prisoner on 30 April 1845, when detachments of the 58th and 96th Regiments were landed from HMS *North Star* (Wards 1968: 136; Cowan 1983 I: 35).

The pā is of traditional (pre-European) location and form on a steep-sided headland.

Now under pasture, trees and scrub, with some recent damage.

2.5 Pakaraka

P05/228 (2597600E 6647800N); N15/44; recorded 1969, update 1992.

Pakaraka, Moerewa; 500 m east of Ludbrook Road, east of Puketotara Stream; site identified by Leahy and Nevin (1993: 27),

The pā of the chief Haratua was sacked by British troops from Waimate on 16 July 1845, after the British defeat at Ohaeawai (2.3; Buick 1926: 189).

No recorded indication of gun-fighter defences.

Under pasture; extensive earthworks indicate a traditional hill-top pā; archaeological excavations in 1983–84 (Leahy & Nevin 1993).

2.6 Polack's Stockade

Q05 (c. 2612800E 6659450N); no site record, not located; Fig. 16.

Russell; north end of town, near York Street.

From 1844 the likelihood of fighting in the Bay of Islands grew and Pākehā military and civilians moved to secure Russell from attack. On high ground to the north were the Lower (2.1) and Maiki (2.2) blockhouses, while at the south end of town a cannon covered the valley approach from Matauwhi Bay. The stockade around the trader Joel Polack's house was erected as a civilian refuge. But it also held ammunition and powder and during the Māori attack of 11 March 1845 this exploded at 1.00 pm, destroying the stockade. Pākehā authorities then evacuated the town (Wards 1968: 120–124; Cowan 1983 I: 22–33).

A contemporary sketch shows a rectangular stockade enclosure around Polack's house and adjacent yard (Fig. 16).

Condition not known; it is unlikely anything has survived.

2.7 Ruapekapeka

Q06/139 (2614500E 6637500N); N16/185; recorded 1973, update 1998; Fig. 17.

Ruapekapeka; 14 km from Kawakawa via Ruapekapeka Road, access from Monument Road corner; historic reserve.

The third and last European movement inland in the Northern War was aimed at Kawiti's Ruapekapeka pā at 300 m a.s.l. on a bush ridge south of Kawakawa. More than 1100 troops, mostly 58th and 99th Regiments and Royal Navy, plus 450 allied Māori, reached the pā on 31 December 1845. Skirmishes took place before a bombardment on 10 January 1846. Early on 11 January, the pā was found to be empty and was occupied by troops, who then followed Māori into the bush behind, where most casualties occurred (Wards 1968: 199–203; Cowan 1983 I: 73–87).

A large pā, 110 × 80–40 m, situated across a broad ridge descending north towards any attack; double stockade of puriri trunks with a third stockade line in places behind the rifle trench, deep rua (pit) bunkers in the extensive interior, some connected underground.

Under pasture; good order in Department of Conservation historic reserve.

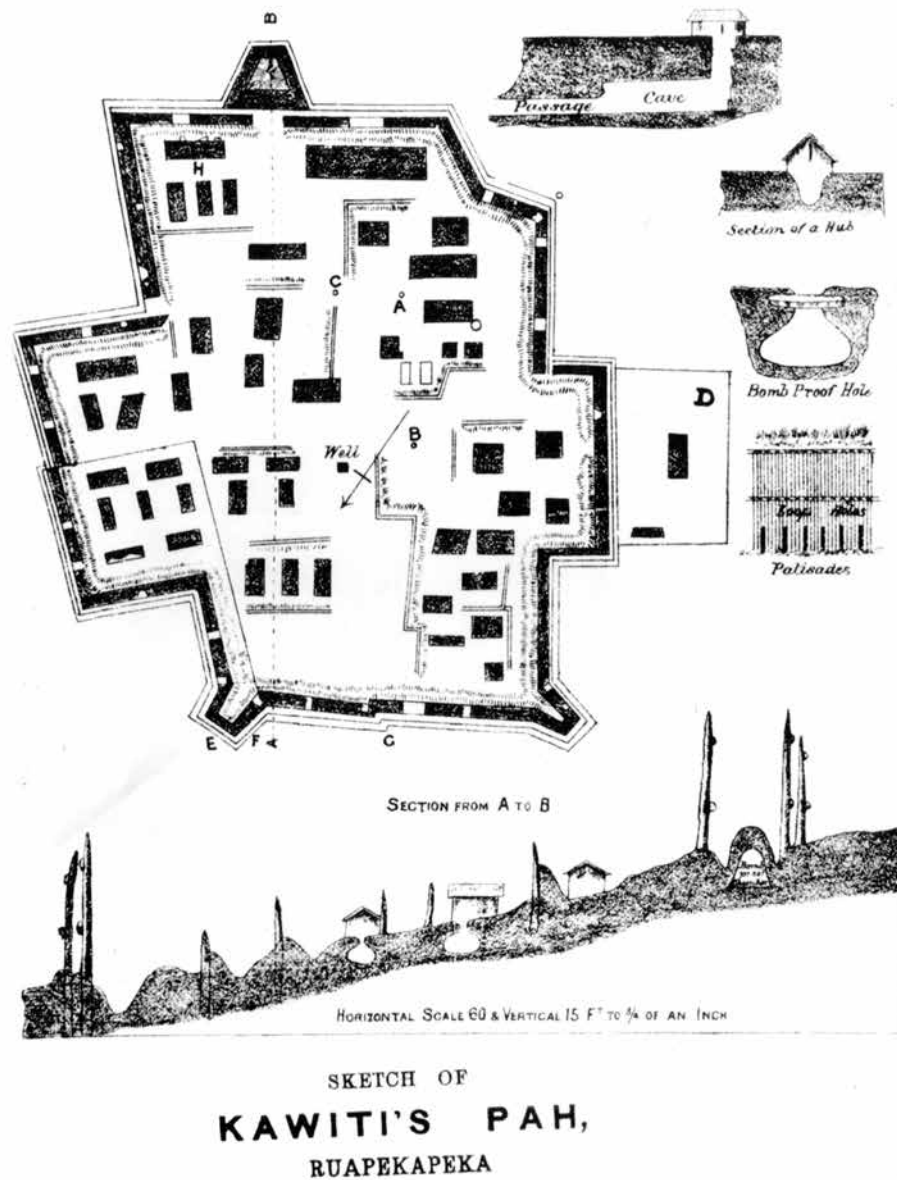


Figure 17. Ruapekapeka plan, section and details of artillery-proof bunkers and stockade. *Auckland Museum C3009.*

2.8 *Ruapekapeka British works*

Q06/565 (2614350E 6637900N); recorded 2009.

Ruapekapeka; 200 m north of Ruapekapeka and Monument Road corner, on ridge-top immediately east of the road; historic reserve.

Earth breastwork protecting British artillery bombarding Ruapekapeka pā in January 1846.

Under pasture; in good order although not all well defined.

2.9 Te Ahuahu

P05; no site record, not located.

Te Ahuahu, Ohaeawai.

Following the fight at Te Kahika (2.10) on 8 May 1845, Hone Heke moved to Te Ahuahu, a small pā 3 km east. But after vacating it for a period he returned on 12 June, only to find it occupied by the pro-government chief Te Taonui, reinforced by Tamati Waka Nene. Te Taonui and Nene came out of the pā and a fight took place, recognised by both sides as a success for Nene and his allies; Heke was wounded and two major supporters were among the killed or wounded.

Site condition not known.

2.10 Te Kahika

P05/238 (2584300E 6651800N); N15/60; recorded 1970; also Puketutu and Heke's Pā; Fig. 18.

Lake Omapere; northeast side of lake, cut by SH1 at its closest point to the lake (Cowan 1983 I: 48).

Te Kahika was attacked on 8 May 1845. In the pā were 200 men under Hone Heke, supported by 140 under Kawiti within the bush edge to the south. Lieutenant Colonel William Hulme commanded 300 of the 58th and 90th Regiments, 120 Royal Navy and 40 volunteers; allied Māori under Nene were present but took no part in the fight.

Although Pākehā had the better of fighting that took place outside the pā, the pā itself was not taken and the result probably favoured Heke and Kawiti. Hulme then returned to the coast (Cowan 1983 I: 37-48; Belich 1986: 41-44).

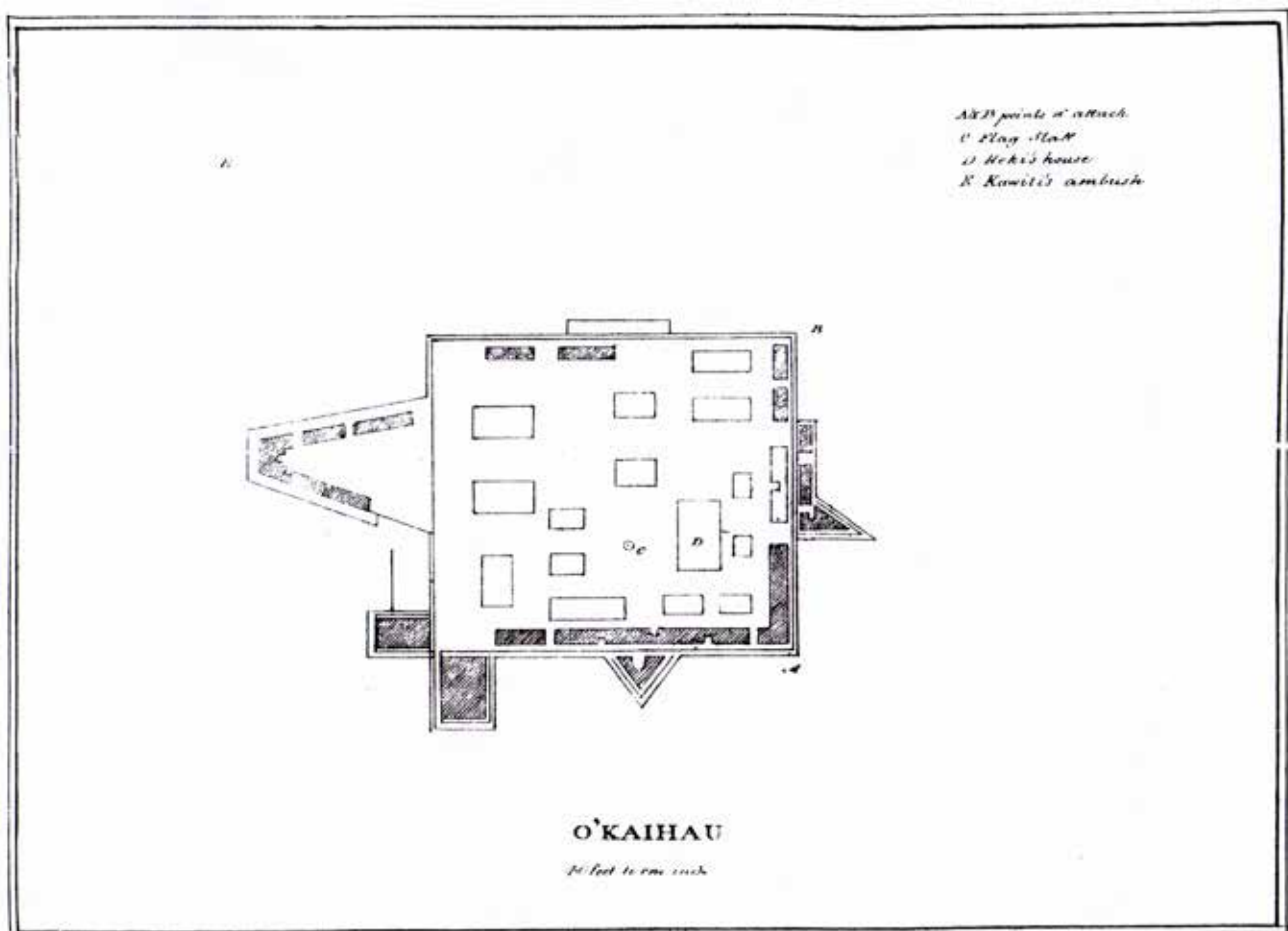


Figure 18. Te Kahika with pits and shaded rifle trenches. From Challis 1990: 10.

Situated on a slight mound, the pā was a rectangular work, c. 60 × 40 yards (55 × 37 m), with defensive angles projecting from three faces. As at Ohaeawai (2.3), there were three palisade lines with the rifle trench firing position behind the second line; heavy boulders were piled against the inner palisade line; there were huts in the interior (Challis 1990).

Destroyed but for subsurface remains.

2.11 *Waikare pā*

Q05; no site record, not located.

Waikare; at the head of Waikare Inlet, east of Opua.

A pā of the Kapotai tribe, reported to contain plunder from the sacking of Kororareka. Attacked on 16 May 1845 by 200 soldiers from the 58th Regiment under Major Bridge and 100 Māori led by Repa and Mohi Tawhai. The inhabitants were driven out and the pā was then burned and sacked (Buick 1926: 122–127; Cowan 1983 I: 47).

Condition not known.

2.12 *Waimate earthworks*

P05 (2590600E 6653300N); no site record, not located.

Waimate North; at or near the historic Church of England mission station.

After the 1 July 1845 defeat at Ohaeawai, Major Cyprian Bridge ordered the construction of earthworks at the Waimate mission and adjacent army camp. When Colonel Despard returned from Auckland in September, he ordered the works levelled: 'I could never admit that a European force of between 300 and 400 men, well supplied with arms and ammunition and four pieces of cannon, required any rampart to defend them in an open country against a barbarian enemy' (Buick 1926: 197).

Buick (1926: 197) refers to substantial earthworks around the camp, so extensive that in Despard's view, three times the available force could not have manned them.

Assuming a ditch as well as a bank, subsurface evidence for the earthwork will have survived.

2.13 *Waka Nene's pā*

P05/246 (c. 2580700E 6653600N); N15/7; recorded 1973.

Okaihau; the map reference is c. 800 m east of the associated undefended British camp, which was at or near the location of the present golf course clubhouse.

Waka Nene's pā in early 1845, from which skirmishing took place with Hone Heke's force 3 km to the east at Te Kahika (2.10). On 6 May, Hulme's force arrived from the Bay of Islands and camped nearby, attacked Heke's pā on 8 May, and departed 11 May (Wards 1968: 139–141).

When told of the plan to take Te Kahika (Puketutu), Nene said that Hulme would not even be able take Nene's own pā which was not half as strong (Wards 1968: 139).

Condition not known.

3. Auckland

The first Auckland fortifications relating to the New Zealand Wars date from the 1840s fighting in the Bay of Islands (2), which was seen as a threat to the infant colonial capital. In the early 1860s, following the emergence of a Māori king in the Waikato, and contemporary with the First Taranaki War of 1860-61, a line of blockhouses was put up to defend the town, with other new blockhouses further out.

Most Pākehā military activity in the region relates to the Waikato War of 1863-64, when men and supplies were sent south to the fighting from Albert Barracks in central Auckland and camps at Penrose, Otahuhu and Drury, by way of the Great South Road. South Auckland works relate entirely to the Waikato War. Pākehā preparations for the war began at the end of 1861 with construction of the Great South Road to the Waikato River and the establishment of an associated chain of forts and camps. All works listed below are European, except for Kuketai's pa (3.19) which belonged to a chief allied to the government.

Auckland and district fortifications are listed under:

- Auckland city
- South Auckland

AUCKLAND CITY

3.1 Albert Barracks

R11/833 (2668000E 6481800N); N42/876; recorded 1979, update 2003; Heritage New Zealand Category I registration No 12 (wall remnant only); Fig. 19.

Auckland; Albert Park, University of Auckland, Princes Street, and adjacent roads and properties.

Prompted by 1845-46 fighting in the Bay of Islands, in 1846 tenders were called for building a stone barrack wall enclosing 22 acres (9 ha) in central Auckland. The work was finished in 1852. Inside were numerous stone and wooden barrack and other buildings. For much of the 1850s and 60s, the barracks were the headquarters of the British Army in New Zealand. The last regiment left in February 1870 and most of the wall was demolished from 1871 to 1873 (Clough & Associates 2003).

Largely destroyed but for a length of stone wall in the university grounds (Fig. 19); excavations in 1979 (Nichol 1979) and 2001 (Clough & Associates 2003) have recovered significant subsurface remains in area of undisturbed ground.

3.2 *Auckland blockhouses*

R11; no site records, not located; Fig. 20.

From about 1860, eight European blockhouses were put up around central Auckland (Lennard 1986: 205, 209-211). Their locations and other available information is given below.

1. Auckland Hospital grounds: three chains (60 m) northeast of Park Road corner. A brick building of cross plan (compare with Onehunga Blockhouse, 3.6); the building was later incorporated into a dwelling, and subsequently demolished for a hospital building.
2. Point Resolution: seaward end of St Stephens Avenue, Parnell.
3. Auckland Domain: on the ridge south of Auckland Museum, at or near the location of a World War II anti-aircraft battery; sold for removal in 1892.
4. Northeast of the Grafton and Carlton Gore Road corner, at or near the site now occupied by Whitecliffe College.



Figure 19. Albert Barracks loopholed stone wall, Auckland University grounds, Alfred Street. *Photo: N. Prickett, 1992.*

5. In the reserve immediately southwest of Symonds Street and Karangahape Road corner. Consisted of a cross plan brick blockhouse; originally probably within a stockade, but not when photographed c. 1870 (see Lennard 1986: 203, 210).
6. Northeast of Karangahape Road and Pitt Street corner.
7. Union and Nelson Streets corner.
8. Freemans Bay: at the corner of Victoria and Union Streets opposite Rob Roy Hotel (now Birdcage); in 1877 sold and demolished.

The blockhouse locations are marked on a contemporary map (Fig. 20); the existence of any remains is not known. Most or all the blockhouses were made of brick. See also Onehunga Blockhouse (3.6), Otahuhu Blockhouse (3.7) and Whau Blockhouse (3.9) from the same period.

3.3 Fort Ligar

R11/1636 (2667400E 6482100N); recorded 1987, update 1988.

Auckland CBD; in the block between Hobson and Federal Streets now occupied by Sky City Casino.

Built in 1845 as a response to the Northern War, but not completed and never used.

Archaeological excavations in 1988 located sections of the defensive ditch of a square earthwork c. 50 × 50 m, also a probable well, rubbish pit, ceramic and glass artefacts, stone and wood items (Smith 1989).

Destroyed by casino development and underground car parks.

3.4 Fort Richard

R11; no site record, not located.

Otahuhu; Sturges Park.

Established 1850s, abandoned before 1860 (Lennard 1986: 215).

Described as a redoubt by Lennard.

Destroyed by park development.

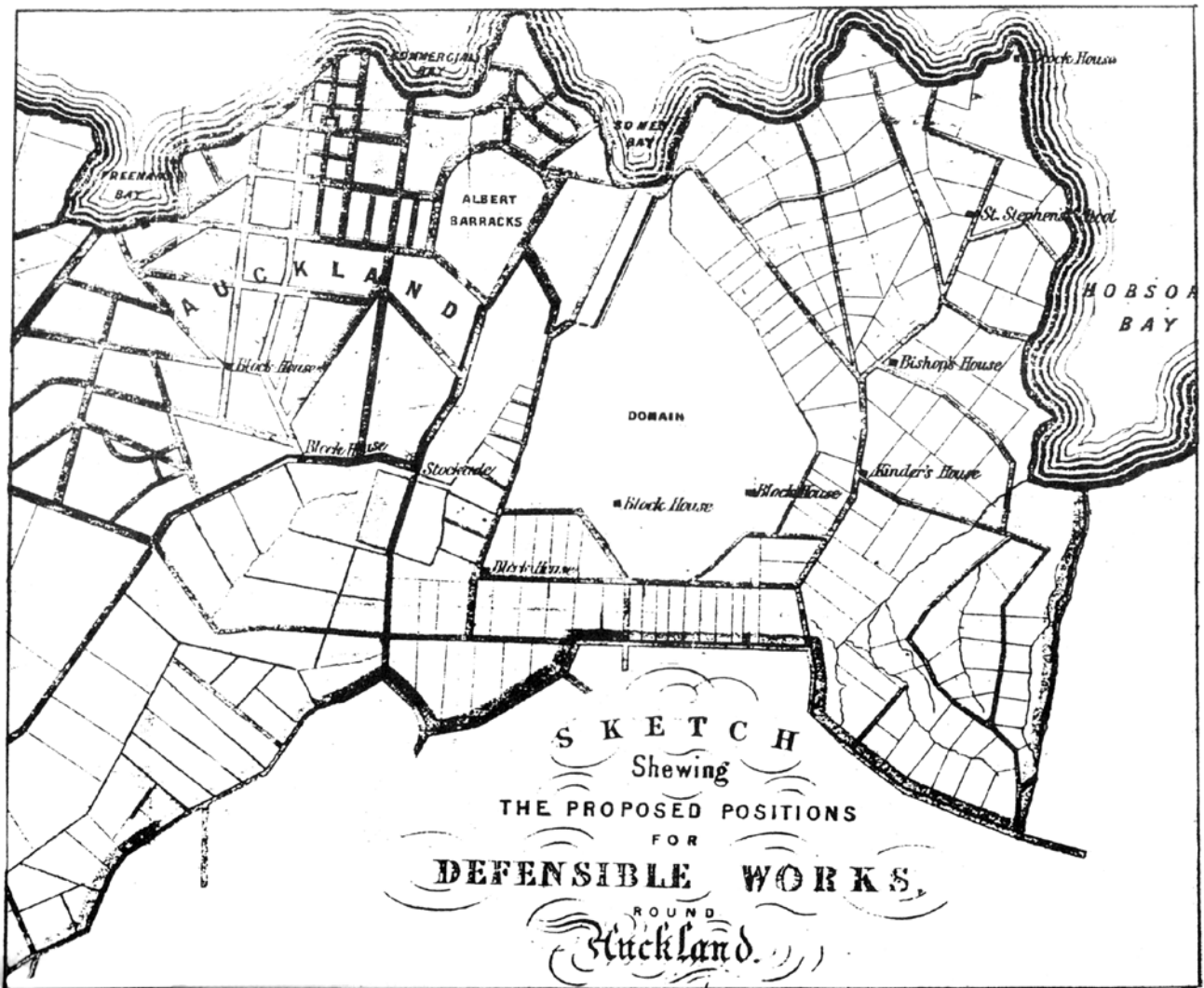


Figure 20. Auckland 1860 blockhouse locations. Plan by Colonel T.R. Mould, Royal Engineers, from Lennard 1986: 210.

3.5 Howick Stockade

R11/326 (2682150E 6477000N); N42/333; recorded 1976, updates 1981, 1998, 2005, 2006; Fig. 21.

Howick; Stockade Hill, off Ridge Road.

Established July 1863, for local defence at the start of the Waikato War when Māori forces in the Hunua Ranges threatened South Auckland.

Stockade 40 × 30 m with external ditch; bastion defence at northwest and southeast corners covered all sides.

Under grass in reserve; highly visible with an unknown amount of modern reconstruction of earthworks; World War I memorial at the centre of the earthwork; sealed path through the site; some erosion of the bank on the north side.

3.6 Onehunga Blockhouse

R11 (2669000E 6474400N); no site record; Heritage New Zealand Category I registration No 91.

Onehunga; 1 Park Gardens, Jellicoe Park.

Built in 1860 to a plan by Colonel Thomas Mould, Royal Engineers, completed November 1860 and occupied by Auckland Militia. Reported dilapidated in August 1863, although apparently held by militia to 1865 (Lennard 1986: 213).



Figure 21. Howick Stockade; the defensive ditch outside the stockade defence has been subject to reconstruction. *Photo: N. Prickett, 1992.*

Brick building of cross plan; the main part (east–west), 41 × 20 ft (12.5 × 6 m) is of two rooms with back-to-back fireplaces; two smaller square rooms, 12 × 12 ft (3.7 × 3.7 m), north and south make up the cross plan (Lennard 1986: 213).

Later used as a private school, council chambers and family dwelling; restored by NZ Historic Places Trust (now Heritage New Zealand) 1962–64.

3.7 Otahuhu Blockhouse

R11; no site record, not located; also Otahuhu Stockade.

Otahuhu; in the area of Hokonui and Hauti Roads.

Completed on 28 June 1860. Near the portage from Otahuhu Creek, Tamaki River, to Manukau Harbour. After the Waikato War it was used as a drill shed by Otahuhu Volunteers (Lennard 1986: 214).

Kauri and corrugated-iron blockhouse, surrounded by a stockade.

Present condition not known.

3.8 Panmure Redoubt

R11; no site record, not located.

Panmure; western end of bridge (Lennard 1986: 211).

Present condition not known.

3.9 Whau Blockhouse

R11/1815 (2661900E 6473750N); recorded 1993.

Blockhouse Bay; 8 Gilfillan Street; hence ‘Blockhouse Bay’.

Completed 1 June 1860 and first held by 14th Regiment (Lennard 1986: 214–215).

Cross-shaped building in earthwork on a commanding hill above Manukau Harbour (Lennard 1986: 215).

Demolished 1886; a depression visible in 1993 near the southern property boundary may mark the defensive ditch.

SOUTH AUCKLAND

3.10 Alexandra Redoubt

R12/141 (2682450E 6433300N); N51/17; recorded 1977, update 2004; Fig. 22.

Tuakau; at the end of Alexandra Redoubt Road, on a commanding hill 100 m above Waikato River; historic reserve.

On the day General Cameron crossed Mangatawhiri River to start the Waikato War, 12 July 1863, Colonel Wyatt led 300 men of the 65th Regiment from Drury to secure Waikato River traffic and the right flank of the Pākehā advance, arriving early the next day near Tuakau, a Ngāti Pou kāinga, and starting work on the redoubt overlooking the river. The post was later held by Waikato militia to October 1864 (Swarbrick 1984: 13–22; War Office 0270 I: 44–45). The name is after Princess Alexandra of Denmark who married Queen Victoria's eldest son, the future Edward VII, in March 1863.

Rectangular work c. 50 × 20 m, with bastion defence at two corners covering all sides. A stone path within the parapet is an unusual feature.

Under grass; outstanding condition in public ownership; a surrounding cemetery has destroyed some or all evidence of external buildings and other features; 365 steps to river (Lennard 1986: 83) were not found in 2004.

3.11 Baird's Hill Stockade

R12/184 (2686400E 6445200N); N46–47/185; recorded 1979.

Bombay, South Auckland; 100 m northeast of the Bombay and Portsmouth Road junction.

Camp established in 1862 for troops working on Great South Road to Waikato River, prior to the Waikato War. Abandoned before the war when a new fortified post was established on the Bombay ridge at Williamson's Clearing (Lennard 1986: 47).

The only known fortification is a 60 × 60 ft (18 × 18 m) square stockade for recalcitrant soldiers (Lennard 1986: 12), and so not strictly a defensive work.

Under pasture; no visible surface evidence.



Figure 22. Alexandra Redoubt, Tuakau. Photo: N. Prickett, 1992.

3.12 Bluff Stockade

R12/161 (2689700E 6434300N); N51/98; recorded 1980, updates 1995, 2004; Fig. 23.

Pokeno; on a hill above the Waikato River; access from the end of Bluff Road.

Located to secure the Te Ia landing place, at the end of the original Great South Road to the Waikato River, before the road was diverted through Pokeno to the Mangatawhiri Stream. Fifty men began work on the post 19 May 1862 (Lennard 1986: 18). The stockade was a transshipment and landing place for European river traffic throughout the Waikato War.

Rectangular stockade 50 × 46 ft (15 × 14 m); 14 ft (4.3 m) timbers had 4 ft (1.2 m) in ground and 10 ft (3 m) above (War Office 0270 I: 20). A sketch by the surveyor Percy Smith (Fig. 23) shows a stockade enclosing two buildings and a small yard.

Under pasture, some gorse, pine and gum trees at the scarp edge above river (1995). Built on the site of an older pā, likely to be the origin of five terraces below the stockade platform, which are reported in recent records (White 1995: App. 1).

3.13 Commissariat Redoubt

R12 (c. 2683100E 6453550N); no site record, not located.

Drury; immediately north of the Bremner Road bridge, between the motorway and Ngakoroa Creek.

Established in 1862 for troops working on the Great South Road. At the navigation limit for small vessels bringing supplies across Manukau Harbour from Onehunga.

Earthworks destroyed for construction of buildings on the site (Lennard 1986: 6).

3.14 Drury Redoubt

R12/123 (2683850E 6453550N); N46/156; recorded 1979, update 2004.

Drury; northeast of the Great South Road and Waihoehoe Road corner.

Redoubt for 50 men replaced the earlier Drury Settlers' Stockade (3.15).

No remains known to Lennard (1986: 6).

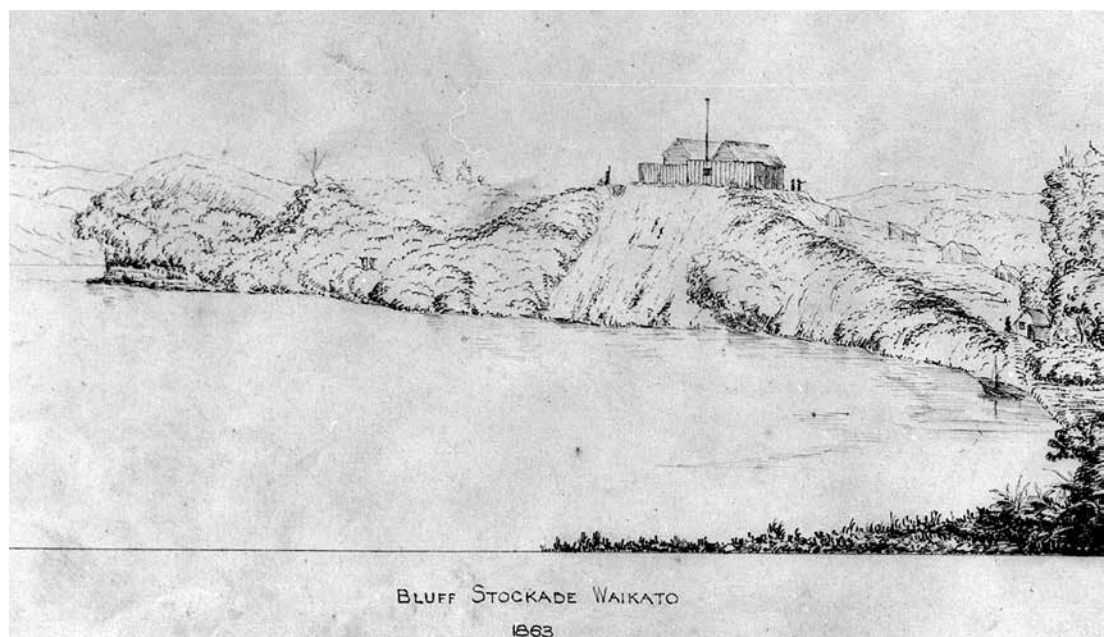


Figure 23. Bluff Stockade. S. Percy Smith, 1863, *Auckland Museum*, MS281, 43, vol. 3 p. 80.

3.15 Drury Settlers' Stockade

R12; no site record; not located.

Drury; west of Great South Road opposite Jolly Farmer Hotel, at the high point in the township.

Erected by local settlers early in Waikato War for a guard of 50 men; later replaced by Drury Redoubt (3.14) c. 200 m south (Lennard 1986: 6).

No known remains.

3.16 Galloway Redoubt

S11/533 (2692100E 6466400N); N43/663; recorded 1979; also Wairoa Redoubt.

Clevedon; 48 North Road.

Established in July 1863 as part of a Pākehā fortification line along the Wairoa River valley to Papakura, for control of Māori movement north from the Hunua Ranges. Held by Major William Lyon and 200 Auckland Militia. Name from Major General Thomas Galloway (Cowan 1983 I: 247; Lennard 1986: 100).

Lennard (1986: 101) describes a rectangle 80 × 30 yards (73 × 27 m) with bastions at two corners covering all sides; a drawing by Colonel Morrow shows internal arrangement of six rows of eight (?) bell tents (Cowan (1983 I: 291).

Levelled ditch and bank defences are behind and on the south side of the house at 48 North Road.

3.17 Kerr's Farm Redoubt

R12; no site record, not located; also Ramarama, York (from 65th York and Lancaster Regiment), Tuamata (after nearby Māori settlement), and Shepherd's Bush (Lennard (1986: 43).

Ramarama, South Auckland; west side of Great South Road opposite Ararimu Road.

A road-builders' camp was established at the location in early 1862. The redoubt was put up by troops of 65th Regiment at the end of July 1863 after the 17 July 1863 attack on a Great South Road convoy (see Razorback Redoubt; 3.27).

A 100-man redoubt.

Destroyed by farming, buildings and road.

3.18 Kirikiri Redoubt

R11/956 (2685750E 6459250N); N46/154; recorded 1978, updates 1994, 2002; also Ring's Redoubt.

Papakura; 931 Papakura–Clevedon Road.

On 18 July 1863, Captain James Ring and 200 of the 18th Regiment moved to Kirikiri on the Wairoa Road (now Papakura–Clevedon Road) to cover the end of Māori tracks through the Hunua Ranges (War Office 0270 I: 48); on 22 July 1863, troops from the redoubt fought Māori nearby.

Bastioned earthwork c. 40 × 40 m.

The east ditch and bastion survive under trees and pasture, otherwise destroyed by house and garden.

3.19 Kukutai's pā

R12/732 (2677100E 6435900N); recorded 1991, updates 2003, 2004.

Camerontown, Pukekohe; south end of Cameron Town Road, 50 m from Waikato River in historic reserve; see also site records for R12/731 ('landing') and R12/733 ('military depot').

Cowan (1983 I: 262) refers to '... a small pā on a hill, weakly stockaded' held by Ngāti Whāuroa under Waata Kukutai of Te Kohanga, guarding a Pākehā transshipment depot at Camerontown early in the Waikato War (War Office 0270 I: 57). Ngāti Maniapoto attacked the depot on 7 September 1863, destroying stores and sacking Kukutai's pā. Troops who came from Alexandra Redoubt were driven off, Colour-Sergeant McKenna being awarded the Victoria Cross for his leadership in the withdrawal (Cowan 1983 I: 262-264).

A transverse ditch cutting off 40 m of a narrow spur end is likely, but unconfirmed, evidence of Kukutai's pā.

Site in stable condition.

3.20 Lower Wairoa Redoubt

S11/534 (2693850E 6469200N); N43/664; recorded 1979.

Clevedon; '... at the present wharf and boat harbour near the mouth of the river' (Lennard 1986: 109).

Established 1863 to protect the landing place for vessels from Auckland, from which small boats took supplies up-river to Galloway Redoubt (3.16).

From an aerial photograph described as c. 60 × 60 ft (18 × 18 m); sometimes referred to as a stockade (Lennard 1986: 109).

Under pasture; Lennard was unable to see it on the ground.

3.21 Martyn's Farm Stockade

R12/183 (2685300E 6446400N); N46-47/184; recorded 1979; Fig. 24.

Ramarama, South Auckland; west of Great South Road and Ngakoroa Stream, now 'Martyn's Farm Estate' (Barton 1997).

Camp established in 1862 for troops working on the Great South Road to Waikato River prior to the Waikato War. Strengthened to protect Great South Road between Drury and Pokeno after the 17 July 1863 attack on a military convoy (see Razorback Redoubt; 3.27).

Stockade probably of irregular plan, 1.8-2.4 m high, enclosing the Martyn farmhouse and other buildings.

Largely or completely destroyed by the present subdivision and previous Ravensthorpe Hospital on the site.

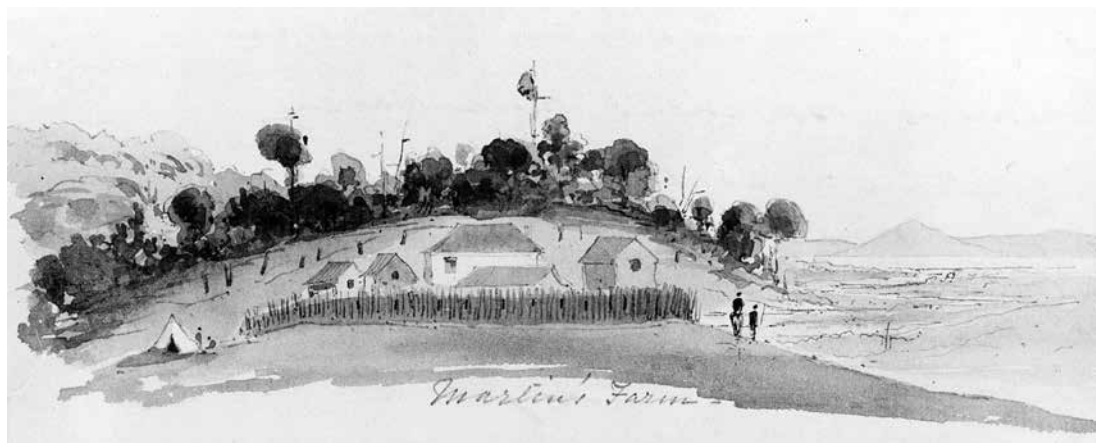


Figure 24. 'Martin's Farm' (1864). A stockade has been erected around existing buildings, on the Great South Road, Auckland. Lieutenant Colonel E.A. Williams, Royal Artillery, pencil and watercolour on paper, Hocken Collections, Uare Taoka o Hākena, University of Otago, acc 78/133.

3.22 Papakura Redoubt

R12/120 (2683100E 6458000N); N46/152; recorded 1979; also Campbell's Redoubt after the officer in charge (Lennard 1986: 90).

Papakura: Methodist church site, Broadway.

Redoubt completed in August 1863, held by militia and some 65th Regiment; stables for 120 cavalry horses (Cowan 1983 I: 246; Lennard 1986: 90).

Earthwork details not known.

Site condition not known.

3.23 Papakura churches

Three Papakura churches were fortified early in the Waikato War (Lennard 1986: 90–91).

Christ Church (Church of England), west of Great South Road at the Queen Street corner, had walls filled with sand to 6 ft (1.8 m) and loopholed for defence.

Presbyterian church enclosed in 3 inch (75 mm) vertical planks, loopholed.

Methodist chapel east of Great South Road, taken over by the army Commissariat and a stockade erected around it.

3.24 Pokeno stockade

S12; no site record, not located.

Pokeno; '...on a hill west of the Queen's Redoubt' (Morris 1963: 143).

Fortification put up 1868 to reassure newly arrived European settlers coming into the district.

A stockade.

Site condition not known.

3.25 Pukekohe East Church Stockade

R12/741 (2683060E 6444100N); recorded 1995, update 1999.

Pukekohe East, South Auckland; Runciman Road, on a prominent site opposite Rutherford Road.

Church fortified as a militia post at the start of Waikato War. On 14 September 1863 c. 200 mostly Ngāti Maniapoto and Ngāti Pou used the cover of standing and felled trees to get close in an attack on the stockade, but withdrew when British troops arrived from Ramarama. Three Pākehā were killed in the fight, and six or more Māori, some of them now buried in the churchyard.

Stockade and external ditch c. 3 m out from church building enclosed an area c. 14 × 11 m; small bastions at the northwest and southeast corners covered all sides.

Earthworks at the front end and south side of church, front part of the north side and the southeast bastion have survived; the west side of the earthworks were largely destroyed by a 1920s addition to rear of church.

3.26 Queen's Redoubt

S12/23 (2690000E 6437500N); N46/188; recorded 1978; Fig. 25.

Pokeno; south end of town, between the Great South Road and Auckland–Hamilton motorway.

Location of the redoubt was fixed by General Cameron May 1862, to secure the south end of the Great South Road and put pressure on Waikato tribes. It was also to be a base for invasion of the Waikato, if required. In June 1862, 400 troops were working on ditch and bank defences and

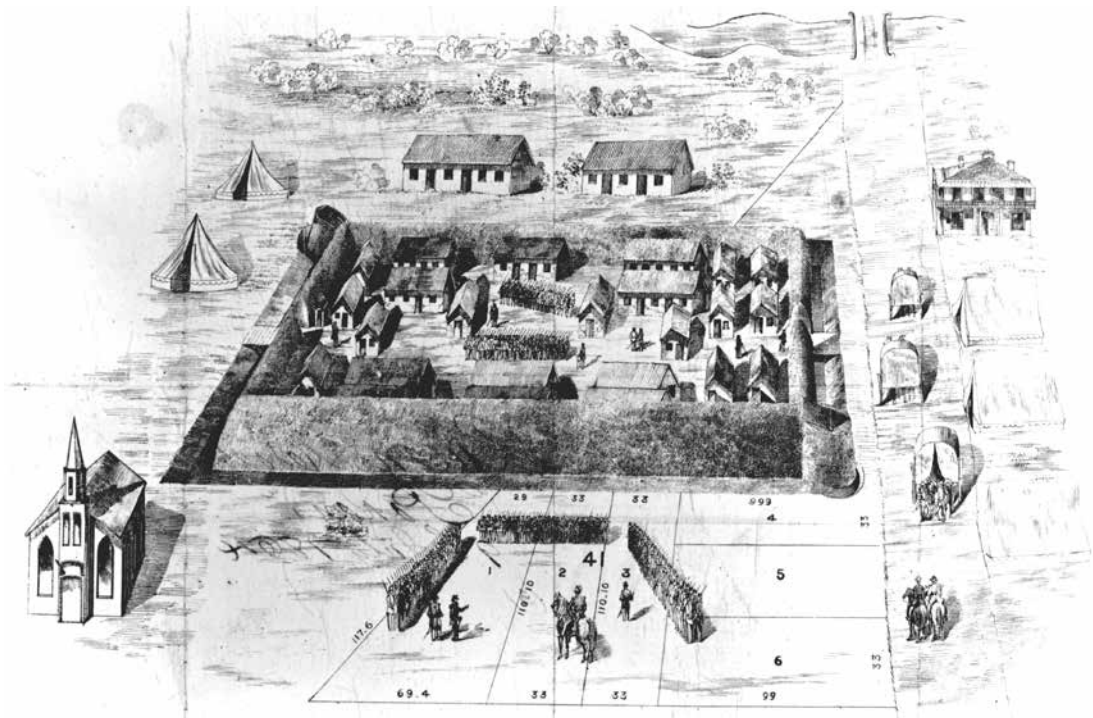


Figure 25. Queen's Redoubt, Pokeno: an 1864 drawing shows 27 buildings within the earthwork with two earth bastions; at right is the Great South Road and Queen's Hotel. Sir George Grey Special Collections, Auckland Libraries, NZ Map 4498-19.

accommodation huts. Cameron moved to the redoubt on 11 July 1863 and the next day crossed the Mangatawhiri River to commence the war. Queen's Redoubt was the invasion headquarters until the Battle of Rangiriri in November 1863, and remained the key post in a network north to Auckland, east to the Firth of Thames and south to the fighting front. Maintained to 1866; buildings sold in 1867 (Prickett 2003: 16).

At 100 × 100 yard (c. 91 × 91 m) square within the defences, an area of 8281 m² or 2.05 acres, with 27 huts accommodating 450 men, it was one of the largest European fieldworks of the wars (see also Camp Waitara, 9.26). Northwest and southeast bastions covered all sides; which incorporate blockhouses in two 1863 photographs (Prickett 2003: 18, 20), but are shown as earthworks in an 1864 drawing (Fig. 25). 1992 excavations showed a 2.4 m deep ditch, c. 2.4 m across the bottom and 4.8 m across the top (Prickett 2003: 25).

Most of the redoubt is now owned by the Queen's Redoubt Trust; the extensive associated camp has been largely destroyed by town development, roads, etc.

3.27 Razorback Redoubt

R12/185 (2687900E 6443000N); N46-47/186; recorded 1979; also Kakaramea Redoubt.

Bombay, South Auckland; 1.5 km south of Bombay township, on a prominent hill 200 m east of Great South Road.

After the 17 July 1863 Māori attack on a Great South Road military party (Cowan 1983 I: 255-257) 100 troops were ordered to: Kerr's Farm (3.17), Martyn's Farm (3.21), Williamson's Clearing (3.32), Razorback and Rhodes Clearing (3.28), to establish fortified posts 3, 5, 6, 8 and 9 miles (5, 8, 9.5, 13 and 14.5 km) from Drury (War Office 0270 I: 48, App. 12). A Māori approach to Razorback Redoubt on 8 September 1863 gave rise to minor skirmishing (Cowan 1983 I: 261-262; Lennard 1986: 50).

Square or rectangular redoubt c. 20 × 20 m, with bastions at northeast and southwest corners covering all sides.

Under pasture; intact, but for the south side ditch which is destroyed by a fence.

3.28 Rhodes Clearing

R12/186 (2688100E 6441600N); N46-47/187; recorded 1979.

Pokeno, South Auckland; c. 100 m west of the Great South Road, behind a house 150 m north of the Nikau Road corner.

One of several camps set up in 1862 for troops working on Grey's strategic Great South Road to the Waikato River prior to the Waikato War. Later strengthened to protect the Great South Road between Drury and Pokeno after the 17 July 1863 Māori attack on a military convoy (see Razorback Redoubt; 3.27).

Square earthwork 30 × 30 m strengthened by logs laid inside the bank (Lennard 1986: 50).

Under pasture and trees; earthworks traceable in 1970 (Lennard 1986: 50), now indistinct.

3.29 St Bride's Church

R12 (2671150E 6442900N); no site record; Fig. 26.

Mauku; Findlay Road, 300 m from Mauku Road corner.

Hill-top site, the church was built in 1861; loopholes and an external timber layer were added early in the Waikato War.

Church in good order; loophole covers are picked out in darker colour.

3.30 St John's Redoubt

R11/534 (2678600E 6465950N); N42/560; recorded 1978, updates 1988, 2002; Fig. 27.

Manukau City; 100 m south of Redoubt Road next to Wilisa Rise, mostly in an historic reserve.

Established on 21 July 1863 by militia, overlooking the Great South Road; laid out by Charles Heaphy (Lennard 1986: 36); named after an officer in charge (Cowan 1983 I: 246).



Figure 26. St Bride's Church, Mauku: defensive loopholes are still marked on the walls. *Photo: N. Prickett, 1982.*

Square earthwork 50 × 50 m with large bastions at east and west corners covering all sides.

Under grass; distinct earthworks protected in reserve except for the west bastion in adjacent property (Fig. 27).

3.31 Wairoa Stockade

S11/949 (2692200E 6465900N); recorded 2002; also Settlers' Stockade to distinguish it from the later Galloway Redoubt (3.16) on the other side of Wairoa River.

Clevedon; east of Wairoa River, near Kawakawa Road.

Built early in the Waikato War by Auckland Provincial Government and held by 50–60 Wairoa Rifle Volunteers (Cowan 1983 I: 247; Lennard 1986: 106).

A 40 × 16 ft (12 × 5 m), corrugated-iron barn was shifted to the site and enclosed in a rectangular loopholed stockade (Cowan 1983 I: 247, 295).

Present condition not known.

3.32 Williamson's Clearing

R12/187 (2686500E 6444700N); N46-47/189; recorded 1979.

Bombay, South Auckland; west of Great South Road, 1 km north of Paparata Road corner (Auckland Historical Society 1993: 39).

Established by General Cameron for protection of the Great South Road between Drury and Pokeno, following the 17 July 1863 attack on a convoy (see Razorback Redoubt; 3.27).

The nature of any fortification is unclear; historic artefact finds include buttons and clay pipes.

The 1979 site record refers to crop marks; accurate location is needed.



Figure 27. St John's Redoubt from the south: most of the earthwork is in an historic reserve; a matching second bastion is largely destroyed in the neighbouring property at left. *Photo: N. Prickett, 1992.*

4. Waikato

Waikato fortifications fall into two groups: Māori and Pākehā works associated with the invasion and fighting of 1863 and 1864, and Pākehā frontier works of the next 20 years. Most date from the 1863–64 Waikato War, which was the most important single campaign of the New Zealand Wars in terms of fighting forces involved and its role in deciding the overall outcome. Fighting began on 12 July 1863 when British troops crossed the Mangatawhiri River near Pokeno to Māori land, and ended at the Battle of Orakau of 31 March – 2 April 1864, near the Puniu River, which was afterwards the boundary of Pākehā settlement until 1881.

Waikato tribes contested the European advance by strategic works set across the invading army's southward route. Meremere and Rangiriri on the lower Waikato River, and Paterangi, Pikopiko and related works between the Waipa River and Te Awamutu are the most notable. Attacks on pā at Rangiriri and Orakau are among the best known and most significant engagements of the New Zealand Wars.

European fortifications, mostly earthwork redoubts, were built for security of the invasion army, a string of works along the Waikato and Waipa Rivers marking the route. South of Ngaruawahia, redoubts were built on both sides of the Waikato River at Pukerimu, and at Whatawhata, Ngahinapouri, Te Rore and Pirongia on the Waipa River. Some large camps had several redoubts: Koheroa (Mangatawhiri) at the start of the campaign and Te Awamutu at the end each had three defensive redoubts, while Te Rore on the Waipa River had four.

After the campaign, British troops were dispersed to other regions, notably Whanganui for the 1865 invasion of South Taranaki. European security along Waikato's Aukati ('Confiscation') Line was then provided by small works, mostly of stockade or blockhouse form, held by militia or Armed Constabulary. The last Pākehā fortification of the New Zealand Wars was established at Kawhia in October 1883.

Before July 1863, British troops prepared for war by building a military road south of Drury to the Waikato River. This was protected by Queen's Redoubt near the Mangatawhiri River boundary of Māori land and other works along the line of road. Although part of the Waikato War story, these works are listed with other Auckland and South Auckland sites in Section 3.

Waikato fortifications are listed here by locality, which also reflects movement of the fighting from north to south:

- Mangatawhiri to Rangiriri
- Ngaruawahia and the Waipa River
- Hamilton and the Waikato River
- Te Awamutu and district
- Waikato west coast

MANGATAWHIRI TO RANGIRIRI

4.1 Buckingham Redoubt

S12/321 (2691950E 6434800N); recorded 2004.

Kellyville, Mercer; 200 m south of the sharp bend on Kellyville Road, under or near a power pylon of the westerly of two high voltage power lines.

Dates from 12 July 1863, when British troops, mostly 14th (Buckinghamshire) Regiment, crossed the Mangatawhiri River boundary of Kingitanga land to begin the Waikato War (Lennard 1986:

63–65). One of three Koheroa works put up to secure a large Pākehā camp on Māori land (War Office 0270 I: Fig. 6; see also Eglinton Redoubt (4.2), Lower Redoubt (4.5)). By mid-August 1863 the redoubt was vacated but for a small guard (Lennard 1986: 65).

NZ Aerial Mapping 1942 photograph 281/38 shows an apparently irregular earthwork on the spur, of total dimensions c. 50 × 30 m.

Now under pasture; no surface evidence; west side already destroyed in the 1942 aerial photograph, the power pylon and cultivation may have destroyed the remainder since then.

4.2 Eglinton Redoubt

S12/204 (2692000E 6435200N); N48/192; recorded 1979, updates 1999, 2000, 2004; also Koheroa Redoubt; Fig. 28.

Kellyville, Mercer; west of Kellyville Road 1 km from SH1, on high end of ridge.

Dates from 12 July 1863, when British troops crossed the Mangatawhiri River boundary of Kingitanga land to begin the Waikato War (Lennard 1986: 63–65). One of three Koheroa works put up to secure a large Pākehā camp on Māori land (see also Buckingham Redoubt (4.1), Lower Redoubt (4.5)); on a commanding height (and site of earlier pā, War Office 0270.I: 44). Named after Lord Lieutenant of Ireland the Earl of Eglinton (Lennard 1986: 64).

Irregular earthwork redoubt of internal area c. 40 × 20 m with two interior levels. Perimeter mostly without flanking defence. The unusual form depends on available hill-top land, and/or earthworks of the earlier pā on the site.

Under pasture; good condition, some erosion of scarps through slumping and stock damage; fossicking has been reported.



Figure 28. Eglinton Redoubt: the irregular earthwork was one of three fortifications at the perimeter of the British Army camp put up south of Mangatawhiri River at the start of the July 1863 invasion of the Waikato. *Photo: N. Prickett, 1992.*

4.3 Esk Redoubt

S12/30 (2710950E 6442700N); N48/7; recorded 1967, update 1989; Fig. 29.

Mangatangi; on high ground 5 km west of Miranda, 100 m southeast of Trig '1534' (168 m a.s.l.); access from Miranda Road.

Miranda (4.10), Surrey (4.17) and Esk Redoubts were established in November 1863 between the Firth of Thames and Pokeno, to stop Māori from entering the Hunua Ranges to attack the Great South Road and Pākehā farming districts south of Auckland. HMS *Esk* helped transport troops from Auckland to Pokororo (Miranda). Sited to allow signal communication east to Miranda Redoubt and west to Surrey Redoubt.

Earthwork redoubt with bastion defence at three corners covering all sides; square interior c. 30 × 30 m, with three terraces separated by small scarps and drains; stone platform on one terrace; outside are stone paths and other stone works.

Under pasture; stock erosion; unusual and detailed archaeology within and outside the redoubt.



Figure 29. Esk Redoubt. Photo: N. Prickett, 1992.

4.4 Koheroa rifle-pits

Māori rifle-pits recorded on the ridges west of today's Mercer township date from the first phase of the Waikato War when Māori contested General Cameron's advance south of the bridgehead at Koheroa on the Māori side of the Mangatawhiri River. There are four site records for separate pit groups. How many of these relate to the Māori positions of the 17 July 1863 Koheroa engagement is unclear.

1. S12/21 (2692700E 6432700); N52/45; recorded 1976, update 1999

Mercer; 50 m south of S12/279 (below).

Pits, terraces and a defensive(?) ditch.

Under pasture; good condition in 1999 but possibly destroyed since by road works.

2. S12/270 (2693400E 6433200N); recorded 1994

Mercer; south of Koheroa Road on Mardon Road (which is a paper road to Oram Road, Whangamarino). Lieutenant Colonel Gamble's map of the 17 July 1863 engagement shows four lengths of Māori rifle-pits or trenches across the main Koheroa ridge (War Office 0270 I: Fig. 6). Defenders were driven from these in turn before escaping south from the end of the ridge at or near Te Teoteo pā (4.19). S12/270 is probably '1' on Gamble's map, and northernmost of the four Māori positions on the ridge, and so the only archaeologically recorded line of rifle-pits apparently matching historical records of the Koheroa engagement.

Under pasture; subsurface remains were probably destroyed in construction of the Waikato River water pipeline after the 1994 record.

3. S12/274 (2692500E 6433700N); recorded 1997

Mercer; c. 200 m from SH1, highest knoll east of farm track, iron survey peg at south end of knoll.

Five rifle-pits are c. 1.5 m apart on top of knoll: (1) 3 × 1 m; (2) T-shaped with 3 m long and 2 m short axis; (3) 3 × 1 m; (4) oval depression 1.5 × 1 m; (5) 2 × 1 m. There is also a larger pit on the ridge 30 m south of the knoll and main pit group.

Under pasture; filled in but showing as patches of dark green grass.

4. S12/279 (2692650E 6432650N); recorded 1997

Mercer; paddock east of SH1, on steep-sided knoll 100 m south of farmhouse, 2 m from road fence.

Single 4.5 × 2.5 m pit.

Under pasture in 1997; probably destroyed since in widening of SH1.

4.5 Lower Redoubt

S12/320 (2691800E 6435000N); recorded 2004; also 'third' redoubt in contemporary reports.

Kellyville, Mercer; west of Kellyville Road at end of spur above the railway line and SH1; at the edge of steep scarp above the river crossing (Lennard 1986: 63–65).

Dates from 12 July 1863, when British troops crossed the Mangatawhiri River boundary of Kingitanga land, to begin the Waikato War. One of three Koheroa works put up to secure a bridge-head on Māori land (see also Buckingham Redoubt (4.1) and Eglinton Redoubt (4.2)).

Lieutenant Colonel Gamble's map (War Office 0270 I: No. 6) shows only an angled ditch cutting off the end of the spur, which may possibly have made use of an older transverse Māori trench. A stockade gave protection against nearby high ground (Lennard 1986: 65).

Part of the work survived until c. 1980s when the spur end and site was cut away during work on the railway line below.

4.6 Mangatawhiri Stockade

S12/322 (2691450E 6435900N); recorded 2004.

Pokeno; right bank of Mangatawhiri River, immediately upstream of the Pioneer Road bridge (formerly SH1); also referred to as the 'Naval Stockade'.

The British Army camp and landing at Mangatawhiri River included a stockade on a small knoll (and site of older pā) on the right (west) bank of river. The river crossing was part of the main invasion route south before Māori forces abandoned Meremere on 1 November 1863 and steamers could then transport men and supplies up-river to the war. The associated Naval Camp (S12/213) is 100 m northwest, now largely destroyed by successive roads.

A small rough stockade above the crossing is shown in contemporary photographs.

Knoll and any sign of the stockade is now entirely destroyed.

4.7 Meremere

S13/116 (2693700E 6429400N); recorded 2004; Fig. 30.

Meremere; Department of Conservation historic reserve, access from Meremere Lane.

Meremere was the first major Māori position met by British troops in the 1863 invasion of Waikato. One of three north Waikato pā, with Paparata (4.12) and Pukekawa (4.13), where Māori forces assembled early in the war. Bombarded from Whangamarino Redoubt August–October; abandoned 1 November when British troops landed up-river to threaten the rear (Cowan 1983 I: 316–318; Swarbrick 1984: 32–39).

The pā comprised a hill-top strong point and rifle trenches and pits on spurs below, mostly on the long spur north to the river. Pā defences included three artillery pieces to contest enemy river traffic.

Meremere Redoubt (4.8) built on the hill-top after Māori withdrawal, has largely or completely destroyed the central Māori position. Associated rifle-pits and earthworks were mostly destroyed in constructing roads and buildings for the power station village.

Meremere rifle-pits

S13/117 (2693500E 6429400N); recorded 2004. Part of pā complex; west of Te Puea Avenue, above SH1 and river; three rifle-pits, each c. 2.5 m², connected by a ditch; present condition not known.

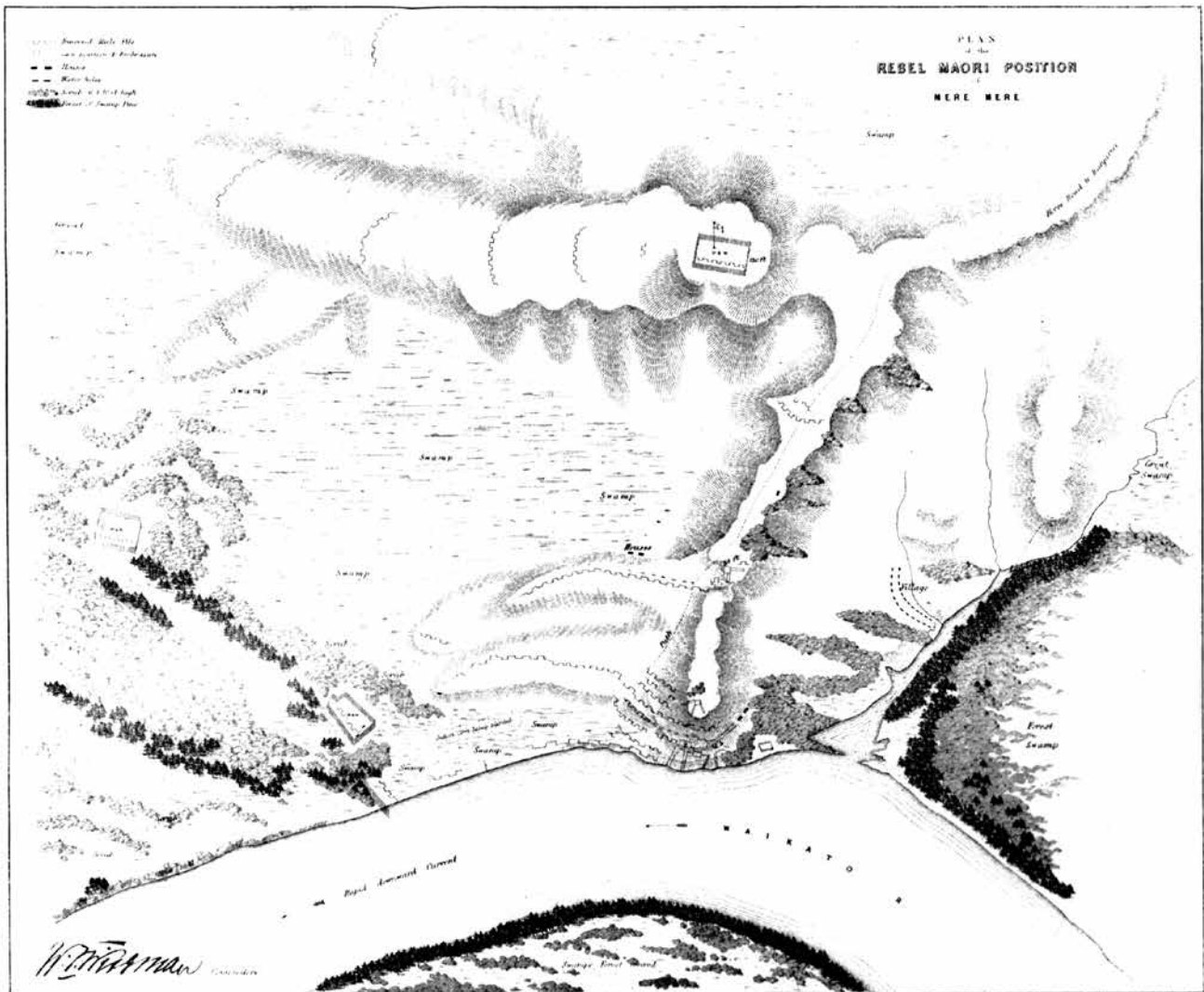


Figure 30. Māori fortifications at Meremere; the pā with flag at top centre occupies the site of the later Meremere Redoubt. GBPP 1864 [3277] opp. p. 108.

4.8 Meremere Redoubt

S13/7 (2693700E 6429400N); N52/12; recorded 1968, update 2004; Fig. 31.

Meremere; on hill above village; Department of Conservation historic reserve, access from Meremere Lane.

After Māori withdrew from Meremere pā (4.7) on 1 November 1863, a British redoubt for 200 men was put up on the main pā fortification on top of the hill. When the fighting moved south, militia occupied the post as a transhipment post for men and supplies; abandoned June 1864 (Swarbrick 1984: 32–35).

A ditch and bank earthwork c. 45 × 40 m of overall triangular plan, with flanked and unflanked faces. The unusual form may make use of former Māori earthworks.

Good condition under grass, in historic reserve.

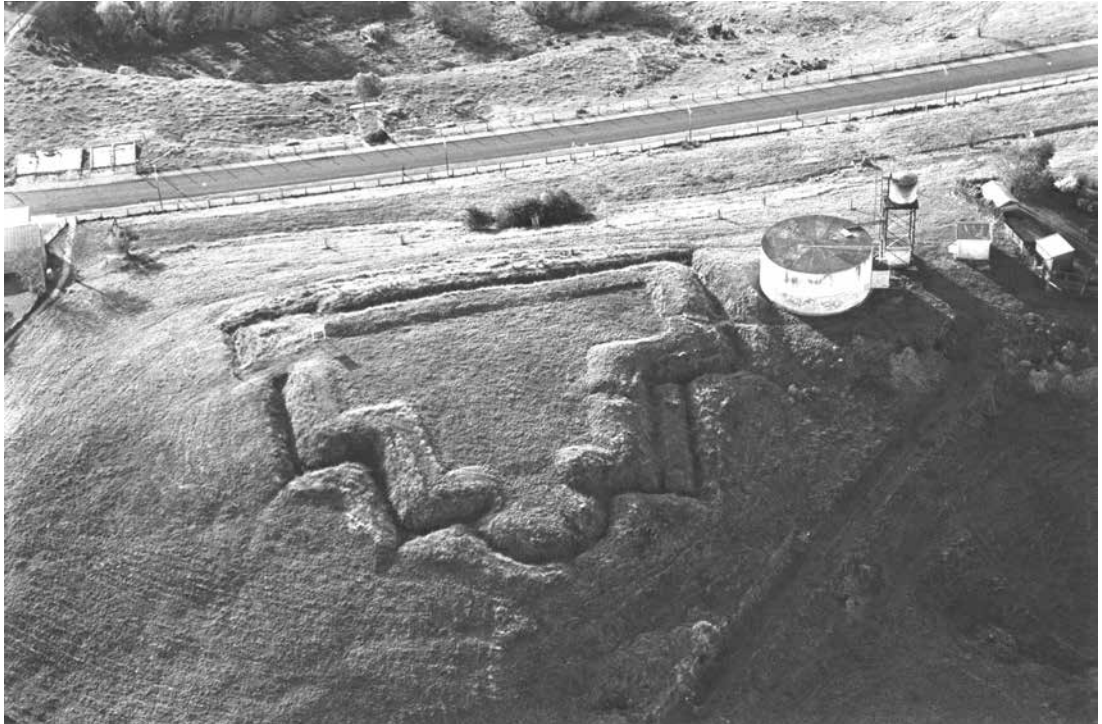


Figure 31. Meremere Redoubt. *Photo: N. Prickett, 1992.*

4.9 Miranda Lookout

S12/203 (2715400E 6443200N); N48/191; recorded 1979, updates 1989, 2000.

Miranda, Firth of Thames; on top of a prominent hill 400 m south of Miranda Redoubt (4.10).

Established November 1863 to secure high ground commanding nearby Miranda Redoubt.

Hill-top ditch and bank earthwork enclosing irregular platform c. 15 × 15 m.

Under pasture; ditch on south, east and some of west side is still visible, the rest is largely destroyed; bank almost all destroyed; on-going stock damage. Two pits and possible terraces outside may relate to an earlier Māori site. European graves within the defended area post-date the earthwork.

4.10 Miranda Redoubt

S12/46 (2715300E 6443500N); N48/24; recorded 1972, update 1989; Fig. 4.

Miranda; hill-top 200 m south of Miranda Road, east of Findlay Road.

Esk (4.3), Surrey (4.17) and Miranda Redoubts were established in November 1863 between the Firth of Thames and Pokeno, to prevent Māori from using Hunua Ranges for attacks on the Great South Road and Pākehā farming districts south of Auckland. Miranda was built first, above the troops' landing place at Pokororo. Miranda Lookout (4.9) is 400 m south.

A rectangular ditch and bank earthwork, interior 40 × 35 m, is early example of the so-called 'New Zealand redoubt', defined by bastions at all corners each covering one adjacent side. Terraces are on a spur below to the north.

Good condition under grass; some stock erosion of earthworks. Now in a lifestyle subdivision with threats from land-use change.

4.11 Mould's Redoubt

S13/112 (2693300E 6421100N); recorded 2002; also Camp Takapau.

Rangiriri, west of SH1 and Te Kauwhata; end of Sadlers Road, probably on the last level ground before road descends to the Waikato River. Contemporary reports give location as 'Ngariohe' (Survey Map SO 13102) and 'Takupetohetohe' (*Southern Cross* 5 Nov 1863; War Office 0270 I: 67).

Established 31 October 1863 when c. 700 troops landed from river boats on the right bank of the Waikato River, 10 km upstream of Māori defences at Meremere (4.7); that night shots were fired at the camp and replied to by artillery and rifle fire. Abandoned after the Māori withdrawal from Meremere on 1 November.

Fortification was a 2½ ft (750 mm) breastwork on three sides of a 100 × 40 yard (91 × 37 m) area, the rear (river) side being open (*Southern Cross* 5 Nov 1883).

No visible remains; under pasture and farm buildings.

4.12 Paparata

S12/45 (2701300E 6444600N); N48/23; recorded 1972.

Mangatawhiri; left of Mangatawhiri River after exiting from the Hunua Ranges and before turning south; 1 km north of the end of Lyons Road.

The pā was established by August 1863 (Cowan 1983 I: 270–272) and apparently enlarged in early October (War Office 0270 I: 63). One of three north Waikato pā, with Meremere (4.7) and Pukekawa (4.13), where Māori forces assembled early in the Waikato War. It served as the main Māori base between the Waikato River and Firth of Thames for access to Hunua Ranges and beyond; abandoned before November 1863.

Ditch and bank defences, pits and terraces were recorded and mapped in 1972 over an area c. 120 × 120 m. Associated rifle-pit groups are recorded separately (see below).

Under pasture; west half of site already ploughed in 1972. No recent visit.

Paparata rifle-pits

Recorded as associated with Paparata pā (above), or part of the pā complex; all data is from the 1972 site records.

1. Rifle-pits: S12/32 (2701100E 6444500N); N48/9. Spur east of Mangatawhiri River; 'bulldozed out'.

2. Pā/ rifle-pits: S12/33 (2700700E 6445500N); N48/10. Ridge leading west from Mangatawhiri River towards Paparimu. 'Musket pā'; 12 rifle-pits are in a line up the ridge beside the track; good condition in fern.
3. Rifle-pits: S12/34 (2701100E 6444600); N48/11. Flat point of land between two ridges east of Mangatawhiri River; bulldozed and partly filled.
4. Rifle-pits: S12/35 (2701200E 6443700N); N48/12. Spur east of Mangatawhiri River; filled by bulldozer.
5. Rifle-pits: S12/36 (2701300E 6444000N); N48/13. Spur east of Mangatawhiri River; filled by bulldozer.
6. Rifle-pits: S12/37 (2701300E 6444100N); N48/14. East of Mangatawhiri River; filled by bulldozer.
7. Rifle-pits: S12/40 (2699700E 6443700N); N48/18. Ridge to the left just before gate to the property; good condition.
8. Rifle-pits: S12/43 (2701000E 6443600N); N48/21. Above lagoon east of Mangatawhiri River; good condition.
9. Rifle-pits: S12/44 (2701000E 6443700N); N48/22. Above lagoon east of Mangatawhiri River; bulldozed.

4.13 Pukekawa

R13/23 (2685900E 6427750N); N51/49; recorded 1977, update 2004.

Pukekawa, north Waikato; on top of prominent rounded hill at 277 m a.s.l. 'Pukekawa' trig; 500 m west of Pukekawa village.

One of three north Waikato pā, with Meremere (4.7) and Paparata (4.12), where Māori forces assembled early in the Waikato War. September 1863 attacks on Camerontown (3.19) and Pukekohe East Church (3.25) were from Pukekawa. Reported enlarged early October (War Office 0270 I: 63); abandoned at the same time as Meremere, 1 November 1863 (War Office 0270 I: 67)

A sketch plan with the site record shows a rectangular ditch and bank earthwork of c. 120 × 65 m interior dimensions, with bastions at two adjacent corners covering three sides only. A second outer line of ditch and bank defence is c. 40 m forward of one long side only, presumably facing the expected line of attack.

Under pasture; present condition unknown.

4.14 Rangiriri

S13/50 (2698700E 6417200N); N52/39; recorded 1963, update 2004; Figs 13, 32.

Rangiriri; Māori earthworks extended from the Waikato River east to Lake Waikare. Access is from Te Wheoro Road west of SH1, Heritage New Zealand reserve.

Māori defensive line attacked in the Battle of Rangiriri 20–21 November 1863, arguably the most important single engagement of the New Zealand Wars (Adams 1978; Cowan 1983 I: 326–334; Swarbrick 1984: 41–52).

For most of its length, the defensive line between Waikato River and Lake Waikare comprised a single ditch and parapet. A major strong point lay across the north–south track which ran down a low ridge between outlying grouped rifle-pits and swampy ground to the east and west. At the time, Lake Waikare included the present Lake Kopuera and adjacent low-lying ground. Contemporary plans and photographs show the arrangement and scale of earthworks. See also Rangiriri Commissariat Redoubt (4.15) and Te Wheoro's Redoubt (4.20).

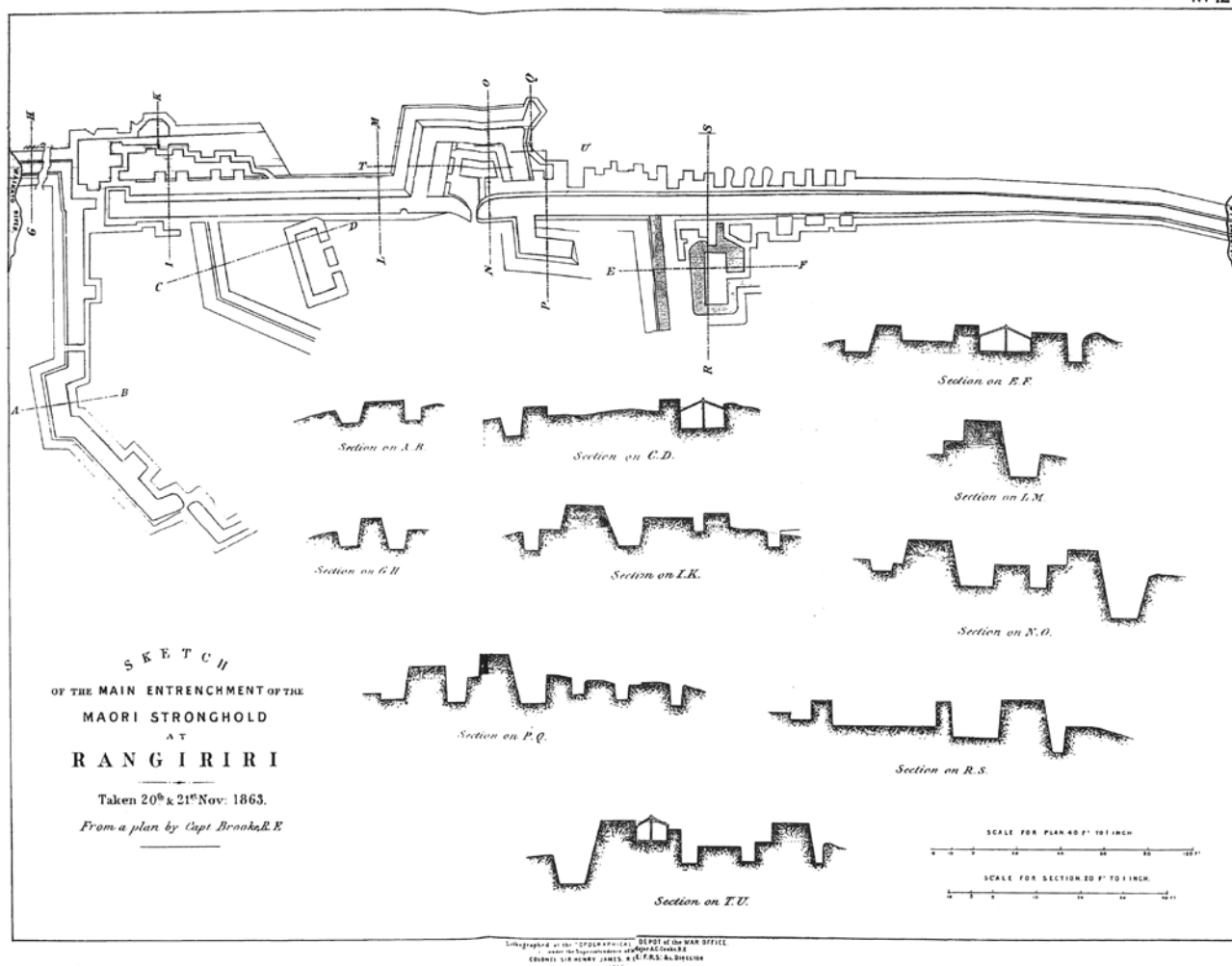


Figure 32. Rangiriri plan and cross-sections. Captain E.T. Brooke, Royal Engineers, from War Office 0270 II: opp. p. 175.

Part of the central strong point survives in the historic reserve in fair condition despite filling of the defensive ditch. Outside the reserve, west to Waikato River and east to Lake Kopuera, Māori earthworks are almost entirely destroyed by cultivation, SH1, houses, former Rangiriri school (now a kura kaupapa), the later Te Wheoro's Redoubt, etc.

4.15 Rangiriri Commissariat Redoubt

S13/135 (2699000E 6416650N); recorded 2009.

Rangiriri; at the river bank, between SH1 and river.

First established during the Battle of Rangiriri, November 1863, among Māori rifle-pits in a peach grove.

Earthwork redoubt with large building inside.

Surface evidence destroyed; April–May 2011 archaeological excavations preceded re-alignment of State Highway 1 through the site.

4.16 Suffolk Redoubt

S12/238 (2693300E 6432800N); N52/24; recorded 1976, updates 1984, 1999.

Whangamarino, Mercer; at 78 m a.s.l. spot height on metric map sheet, at the junction of three ridges.

Established in August 1863 near one of two lines of rifle-pits (4.4) of the 17 July Koheroa engagement, to secure high ground commanding Whangamarino Redoubt (4.22). Held by a company of 12th (Suffolk) Regiment under Captain Francis Williams (Lennard 1986: 120).

Irregular ditch and bank earthwork c. 25 × 20 m with rounded bastion on south side; 6 × 3 m depression outside east side; possible hut site on slope below west side (Auckland Historical Society 1993: 33).

Mostly fair condition under grass; a farm road has destroyed the west side defences.

4.17 Surrey Redoubt

S12/38 (2702500E 6442100N); N48/16; recorded 1972; Fig. 33.

Mangatawhiri/ Mangatangi; at the edge of a high scarp; 175 m a.s.l. spot height on metric map sheet.

Miranda (4.10), Esk (4.3) and Surrey Redoubts were established in November 1863 between the Firth of Thames and Pokeno, to stop Māori accessing the Hunua Ranges for attacks on Great South Road and Pākehā farming districts south of Auckland. Hill-top location gave visual communication west to Queen's Redoubt (3.26) and east to Esk Redoubt along southern margin of the Hunua Ranges. Name from the 70th (Surrey) Regiment.

Earthwork redoubt c. 30 × 30 m, with bastions at three corners covering all four sides (Auckland Historical Society 1993: 34-35).

Under pasture; good condition except for defences on the southeast side now largely destroyed by a farm road.



Fig. 33. Surrey Redoubt. Photo: N. Prickett, 1992.

4.18 Tapaehina

S13/11 (2694000E 6417500N); N52/16; recorded 1976, update 2004.

Churchill, Rangiriri; west bank of the Waikato River, between confluence with Whangape Stream and Pukekawa–Churchill Road. Also Tapahina or Tapaina in contemporary Pākehā reports.

A November 1863 fortification on site of older pā ('Ahikaeo?'); possibly intended to be part of the Rangiriri (4.14) fortified line. Midshipman Foljambe (1868: 26) of the *Pioneer* reported '... the natives had made a new redoubt at Tapaehina'. After the Battle of Rangiriri, shots were fired from Tapaehina at the steamer *Avon* travelling down-river with Māori prisoners and wounded Pākehā.

An 1894 survey fieldbook reports 'old rifle pits on summit of ridge 3 ch[ain]s' (LINZ Hamilton, Fieldbook 1104). Platforms, ditch and four pits are visible in 1949 NZ Aerial Mapping photographs 288/33, 34. In 2004 a short length of scarp was reported visible under grass and trees, with farm buildings at the north end.

4.19 Te Teoteo

S12/237 (2692950E 6432300N); N52/43; recorded 1976, update 2004.

Whangamarino; 2 km south of Mercer, north of Whangamarino Stream, on a spur end above SH1 road bridge. Department of Conservation historic reserve; on the Whangamarino Walkway from Oram Road (see also Whangamarino Redoubt; 4.22).

Early in the Waikato War an older pā was reoccupied by 200–400 Māori under Te Huirama, leading to the 17 July Koheroa engagement (Swarbrick 1984: 26), which Waikato Māori refer to as taking place at Te Teoteo (Cowan 1983 I: 255).

Transverse ditch c. 30 m long cuts off c. 30 m length of the dipping spur-end. Three or four terraces and some shell midden are within the pā.

Fair to good condition under grass.

4.20 Te Wheoro's Redoubt

S13/3 (2699000E 6417100N); N52/2; recorded 1960s, update 2004; Fig. 34.

Rangiriri; Heritage New Zealand reserve, access from Talbot Street.

After the 20–21 November 1863 Battle of Rangiriri, a 150-man redoubt was built on a group of rifle-pits south of the Māori defensive line from the Waikato River to Lake Waikare (4.14). It was first occupied by British troops, then abandoned in 1865. In 1869, the post was reoccupied by 30 Ngāti Naho under Wiremu Te Wheoro in response to Te Kooti's activities in the central North Island, when it was remodelled and reduced in size (Swarbrick 1984: 53–57), presumably to the present form.

Rectangular earthwork redoubt of 20 × 15 m internal dimensions, with four bastions, and a 1.5 m high scarp to the external ditch which is 1 m up on the outer side and 4 m wide at the top.

Good condition under grass; earthworks extend outside historic reserve to adjacent land.



Figure 34. Te Wheoro's Redoubt, Rangiriri, is on the ridge formerly occupied by the line of Māori defences. *Photo: N. Prickett, 1992.*

4.21 Waikare Tirohia

S13/61 (2696000E 6417500N); recorded 1983, update 2004; also Thompson's Pā.

Rangiriri; 2 km west of township, above Churchill East Road, east of Waikato River, on a low hill with 'Rangiriri' trig, 61 m a.s.l.

Shown on contemporary maps; unclear historical role.

Form not known.

Under pasture; no surface evidence.

4.22 Whangamarino Redoubt

S12/22 (2693060E 6432300N); N52/47; recorded 1976, update 2004; also Pickard's Redoubt; Fig. 35.

Whangamarino; 2 km south of Mercer, east of SH1, Heritage New Zealand reserve above Whangamarino Stream; access from Oram Road via Whangamarino Walkway (see also Te Teoteo pā; 4.19).

Site first occupied on 14 August 1863 by the 14th Regiment; the part stockade defences were completed on September 22 (War Office 0270 I: 53, 60). Held the south end of Koheroa Ridge with Suffolk Redoubt (4.16) on higher ground 600 m northeast. Guns at Whangamarino, under Lieutenant A.F. Pickard, Royal Artillery (later to win a VC at Rangiriri), bombarded Meremere (4.7) 3 km south. When Meremere was abandoned on 1 November 1863, militia replaced British troops at Whangamarino until the post was finally abandoned in October 1864 (Swarbrick 1984: 23–31).

Position for 150 men (War Office 0270 I: 53), c. 26 × 26 m square or near-square, with small bastions at two opposite corners. Earthwork defence faced south to Meremere; 18–20 ft (c. 6 m) stockade of split logs, built partly of timber from nearby Te Teoteo pā (4.19), faced north to higher ground (Lennard 1986: 119).

Under pasture; visible are the levelled interior of the work with banks, ditches and scarp; site apparently in good order.

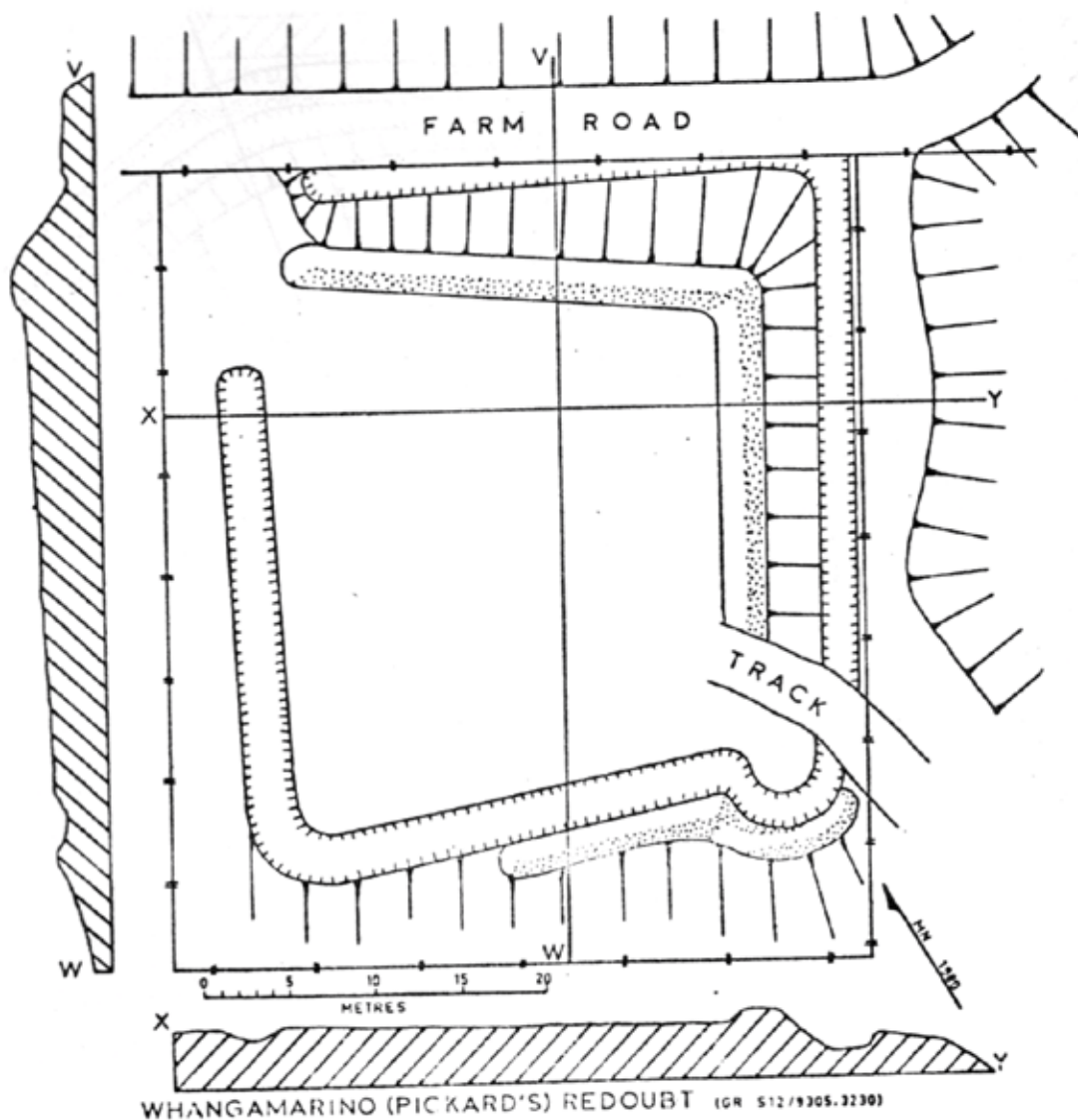


Figure 35. Whangamarino Redoubt. From Lennard 1986: 234.

NGARUAWAHIA AND WAIPA RIVER

4.23 Alexandra Redoubt

S15/28 (2703150E 6354150N); N65/48; recorded 1968, update 2004; Fig. 36.

Pirongia; west of main (Franklin) street between Bellot and Baffin Streets; Heritage New Zealand reserve.

In 1868 a redoubt was built around an 1867 church on 'Church Hill'; the church was removed in 1871, and in 1872 the present larger redoubt was built by the Armed Constabulary. On 11 July 1881, King Tawhiao laid down his weapons at Pirongia, bringing peace to the Waikato frontier; the redoubt was abandoned in 1886 (Swarbrick 1984: 73–82).

Rectangular earthwork 33 × 22 m, on the summit of a low but commanding hill; an unusual New Zealand form with bastions at four corners covering all sides from both adjacent angles.

In good order under grass in historic reserve, low bracken on earthworks; repaired 1994.



Figure 36. Alexandra Redoubt, Pirongia: bastions at four corners cover each side from both adjacent angles. *Photo: Kees Sprengers, Waikato Museum Te Whare Taonga o Waikato, Ref. No M542-26 (1980).*

4.24 Alexandra East Redoubt

S15/375 (2703190E 6354700N); recorded 1997, update 2004.

Pirongia; terrace edge east side of Waipa River, west of Aubin Close, off Crozier Street.

Two redoubts were established in June 1864 on opposite banks of the Waipa River at the head of navigation for steamers (see also Alexandra West Redoubt; 4.25). These took over from Te Rore as the transshipment point for supplying Te Awamutu where 3000 men were in camp in winter 1864. The 100-man Alexandra East Redoubt was occupied by Colonel Haultain's 2nd Waikato Regiment (Gumbley n.d.: 2).

A square work c. 30 × 30 m, with square bastions at adjacent southwest and southeast corners each covering both adjacent sides, and a triangular bastion from the centre of the north side above the river landing (the form is from map 'Pirongia IV' SO 157); commissariat store, hospital and other buildings nearby.

Under grass in Waipa District Council reserve; excavated 1998 (Gumbley n.d.).

4.25 Alexandra West Redoubt

S15/334 (2703200E 6355000N); recorded 1997.

Pirongia; left bank of Waipa River, on the terrace edge 200 m downstream of O'Shea Road.

Alexandra West and East Redoubts were established 1864 on opposite sides of Waipa River above the river landing for the Alexandra (later Pirongia) frontier settlement (see Alexandra East Redoubt; 4.24).

A contemporary map ('Pirongia IV' SO 157) shows an unusual redoubt trace, which needs archaeological confirmation; a 'Commissariat' is marked at the east side of the earthwork.

Under pasture; terrace considerably cultivated in recent years; subsurface evidence of ditch, and so redoubt form, will have survived.

4.26 Fort Newcastle

S14/190 (2699500E 6390750N); recorded 2004.

Ngaruawahia; between Waipa Esplanade and Herschel Street, near the east end of the Waipa bridge; at or near the location of an 1863 pā (4.32).

Redoubt constructed by Armed Constabulary in the late 1860s.

Bastioned, ½ acre (.2 ha) fort, with 120 loopholes (AJHR 1870 D-7: 8). A 16 ft (5 m) high brick tower was later used as a jail.

No surface indication of site, now under houses, gardens, roads, etc.

4.27 Harapepe Blockhouse

S15/381 (2697600E 6360800N); recorded 1997, update 2003.

Harapepe, Pirongia; 200 m north of Corcoran Road, 1200 m from Te Pahu Road corner.

Replaced Harapepe Redoubt (4.28) at the military settlement. Shows on NZ Aerial Mapping 1943 aerial photo as c. 20 m square earthwork on a long ridge.

Under pasture, considerably cultivated; a slight mound is the only surface evidence.

4.28 Harapepe Redoubt

S15/354 (2698100E 6360600N); recorded 2004.

Harapepe, Pirongia; south of Corcoran Road.

Established February 1865 by Forest Rangers at their allotted settlement site.

Redoubt shown on March 1865 survey plan of Harapepe military settlement (SO314); see also Harapepe Blockhouse (4.27).

Under pasture; does not show on early air photographs, no visible evidence in 2004.

4.29 *Mangaotama earthwork*

S15/31 (2701600E 6361850N); N65/56; recorded 1977, update 2003.

Te Rore; right bank of Waipa River, between Mangaotama Stream and unnamed stream to the south; access by Alcock Road.

Identification as defences of a Pākehā camp during Cameron's advance to Te Rore in late January 1864 is yet to be confirmed.

Single 100 m transverse ditch between two steep stream gullies cuts off the corner of a terrace.

Under pasture; the ditch is now filled in, except at the north end where there is 1–2 m length of ditch and remnant of internal bank, and south end where it is marked only by a slight depression.

4.30 Ngahinapouri Redoubt

S15/350 (2700500E 6364700N); recorded 2004.

Ngahinapouri; right (east) bank of Waipa River, opposite Te Pahu redoubt (4.37) on the west bank.

Redoubt for 200 men established 31 January 1864 as part of General Cameron's advance up Waipa River to Te Rore (War Office 0270 I: 91).

Earthwork redoubt, otherwise no particulars.

Present condition not known, but not apparent on aerial photographs and likely to have been ploughed.

4.31 **Ngaruawahia Redoubt**

S14/181 (2699500E 6390900N); recorded 2001, update 2004.

Ngaruawahia; within area bounded by Broadway, Sampson Street and Bradley Street. Terrace edge above low ground at the confluence of Waipa and Waikato Rivers, location formerly occupied by Māori rifle trenches (4.32).

Established by British Army on arrival at Ngaruawahia in early December 1863, two weeks after the Battle of Rangiriri.

Contemporary maps show rectangular earthwork with bastions at northeast and southwest corners covering all sides, unusually at northeast corner having separate bastions for the two adjacent sides.

Now under houses, gardens, roads, etc.; no surface indication of site; pieces of black bottle glass found in 2000 excavations for storm-water drains along the east side of Broadway.

4.32 ***Ngaruawahia Māori defences***

S14/187 (2699500E 6390750N); recorded 2004, update 2005.

Ngaruawahia; confluence of Waipa and Waikato Rivers from The Point to south of Waipa bridge. At the same location as Fort Newcastle (4.26). Another pā S14/31 at the site of Ngaruawahia Redoubt (4.31) is unconfirmed.

Māori defences of Ngaruawahia were abandoned December 1863 when the British Army reached Tawhiao's capital two weeks after the Battle of Rangiriri.

An 1864 map by Captain George Greaves has 'Maori Redoubt' east of Waipa River and a line of rifle-pits around the terrace edge above low ground on The Point. Colonel Mould (1869: 22) and Featon (1971: 65) both report a line of rifle-pits and 'small' or 'half-finished' Māori 'redoubt'.

Now under houses, gardens, roads, domain, etc.; subsurface remains likely of excavated trenches, rifle-pits, etc.

4.33 **Paterangi**

S15/61 (2706200E 6358100N); N65/104; recorded 1979, update 2003; Figs 12, 37.

Paterangi; elevated ground along Bell Road.

Extensive Māori fortified line from early 1864, located to prevent a European advance from the Waipa River to Te Awamutu and Rangiaowhia, along with Pikopiko (4.36) c. 3 km north, Rangiatea (4.75) and unrecorded Manga-pukatea (see Cowan 1982 I: 337). When General Cameron and nearly 1000 men bypassed Paterangi in the night of 20-21 February Māori forces pulled back to defend rear areas, many being involved in the 22 February fight at Hairini (4.62).

The largest continuous earthwork fortification and outstanding barrier work of the New Zealand Wars, comprising c. 1 km of rifle trenches connecting six strong points.

The site is now largely destroyed by farming, key areas have been built on in recent years. Little is now visible; significant subsurface remains likely of such a major earthwork.



Figure 37. Paterangi: the largest continuous barrier pā of the New Zealand Wars included nine strong points, two of them shown here at right and left distance, with rifle trenches between. *Photo: M. Higginson (attributed), Auckland Museum album 510, p. 6.*

4.34 Paterangi Redoubt

S15/75 (2706400E 6358250N); N65/131; recorded 1979, update 1997.

Paterangi; Bell Road, 'Pa-rangi farm', in front of cowshed, totara tree in middle of site.

European redoubt established after Māori evacuation of Paterangi pā (4.33), February 1864, on site of Māori strong point '2' (see Fig. 12).

Under pasture; some part of redoubt trenches are just visible in low light.

4.35 Pikiarero

S14/181 (2699500E 6391000N); N56/33; recorded 1981.

Ngaruawahia; Sampson Street, on scarp to Waipa River, mostly or all in the Domain.

Pā built in 1863, presumably with the aim of contesting European advance on Ngaruawahia, but not used.

Rectangular work 330 × 208 ft (100 × 63 m); traversed rifle trenches loopholed in bank under forward palisade line; angled trenches lead to five interior whare over pits; '... partly constructed' according to Cowan (1983 I: 337). An historical drawing with the site record shows a palisaded pā on the lower terrace ('Oikoi[?] Old Pah'), with a c. 60 ft (20 m) pole flying a flag with the name 'MATUTAERA' (for King Matutaera Tawhiao).

No known remains; subsurface evidence likely.

4.36 **Pikopiko**

S15/62 (2706000E 6361200N); N65/106; recorded 1979, updates 1998, 2003; Cowan (1983 I: 344) gives 'Puketoki' as the correct Māori name.

Ngahinapouri; Meadway Road cuts through site on broad ridge 600 m south of Hams Road corner, above and east of Lake Mangakaware.

Early 1864 Māori fortified line, north of the main Māori barrier pā at Paterangi (4.33); located to prevent European advance to Te Awamutu by a direct route southwest from Ngahina-pouri. Heavily manned in expectation of an attack when General Cameron's army passed by along the right bank of Waipa River on its way to Te Rore, 27–28 January; Pikopiko abandoned by Māori on 21 February after the invading army bypassed Paterangi at night.

Fortification complex of three strong points and connecting trenches c. 250 m across a broad ridge between Mangaotama Stream and Lake Mangakaware and c. 250 m in depth along the ridge; the largest, forward, strong point is c. 100 × 40–60 m; two rear strong points are c. 30 × 30 m (after plan by Captain Edward Brooke, Royal Engineers, in Cowan 1983 I: 345).

Under pasture, cut by Meadway Road; no visible surface evidence in 1998.

4.37 ***Te Pahu redoubt***

S15/38 (2700300E 6364700N); N65/70; recorded 1977, update 1989.

Te Pahu; east of Grove Road, 500 m north of Martelletti Road corner; on the terrace edge above Waipa River, north side of a short gully to the river.

Probably relates to 1864 British Army transport and communication on the Waipa River, opposite Ngahinapouri Redoubt (4.30) on the east bank, like other paired redoubts at Pukerimu, Whatawhata, Te Rore and Pirongia.

Bastion defence at northeast and southwest corners only; the northwest corner is unusually cut off at 45° to adjacent sides.

East side and corners and part of north and south sides is visible in a 1980 Waikato Museum aerial photograph.

Present condition not known.

4.38 ***Te Rore pā***

S15/279 (2702600E 6359550N); N65/144; recorded 1980, update 2004.

Te Rore; 150 m southwest of Kakaramea and Oakshott Roads corner.

Identified in the site record as Te Rore pā, said by Colonel Gamble to have been also the location of one of four Te Rore redoubts (4.40), but which is more likely to have been on the terrace south of Mangakaware Stream than the recorded pā location on the narrow, steep-sided and isolated ridge north of the stream.

A pre-European pā indicated by transverse ditch, pits and terraces; no indication of European works.

Under pasture and some large trees.

4.39 **Te Rore Piquet**

S15/311 (2703550E 6357450N); recorded 1986, updates 2003, 2004.

Te Rore, Pirongia; south of Bell Road and Macky Road corner, largely or all under new house on site.

'As our main piquet is about three quarters of a mile from the encampment [4.40] a small redoubt has been constructed for them' (War Office 0270 I: 91).

No known particulars of form.

House on the site has largely destroyed any remains.

4.40 **Te Rore Redoubt**

S15/63 (2702600E 6358300N); N65/107; recorded 1979, updates 2000–2003.

Te Rore, Pirongia; Kakaramea Road 3.5 km north of Pirongia. Included in the site record are: redoubt (on '... high hill overlooking the main road'), river landing, hospital site, cemetery, etc. Separate records for other features of Te Rore camp and locality are; pā (4.38); piquet (4.39); redoubt (4.41); military road S15/352.

European forces reached Te Rore on 28 January 1864 (Cowan 1983 I: 339) and a large camp with four redoubts established near Māori works at Paterangi pā (4.33). Te Rore was General Cameron's HQ until the 22 February advance to Te Awamutu, also the main transshipment point on Waipa River until this was moved in June 1864 upriver to Alexandra/ Pirongia (4.24–25). Colonel Gamble (War Office 0270 I: 91) reports of this work: 'A redoubt has been constructed for 150 men on our main encampment which covers a good landing place for stores on the river bank ... Another redoubt for 100 men has been constructed on the site of the old "pah" of Te Rore [4.38], and a third for 80 on the left bank [4.41] ... As our main piquet is about three quarters of a mile from the encampment a small redoubt [4.39] has been constructed for them.'

Under pasture, farmhouses, etc. No surface evidence seen in several visits 2000–2003, but subsurface evidence will survive. Military cemetery cleared and re-fenced in 2001.

4.41 **Te Rore redoubt**

S15/71 (2702050E 6359050N); N65/127; recorded 1979, update 2003; Fig. 38.

Te Pahu, Pirongia; on terrace, left bank of Waipa River, 200 m south of Te Pahu Road bridge.

One of four redoubts established by European forces on arrival at Te Rore, 28 January 1864: '... a third [redoubt] for 80 on the left bank ...' (War Office 0270 I: 91; 4.40).

Irregular four-sided redoubt with single bastion to the west.

Earthworks faint under pasture.

4.42 **Waddy's Forward Post**

S15/348 (2705300E 6357600N); recorded 2003.

Pirongia; east of Bird Road.

Little known of this post, which dates from early 1864 (4.43).

Repeatedly cultivated, no surface evidence in 2003; military relics including buttons, badges, buckles and bullets found over the years.

4.43 **Waddy's Redoubt**

S15/351 (2704700E 6356700N); recorded 2003.

Te Rore, Pirongia; high point immediately east of Bird Road, north of junction with paper road east to Waiari pā.



Figure 38. Te Rore redoubt on left bank of Waipa River. Earthworks are destroyed to the right of the fence. *Photo: Kees Sprengers, Waikato Museum Te Whare Taonga o Waikato, Ref. No M538-7 (1980).*

Established under Colonel Waddy after the arrival of General Cameron's army at Te Rore on 28 January 1864 (Cowan 1983 I: 339). On 11 February 1864, soldiers from the post were attacked while bathing in Mangapiko Stream near the old Waiari pā (4.44).

Nothing known of form.

Any surface evidence will have been destroyed by the house and associated buildings now on the site.

4.44 Waiari

S15/53 (2705700E 6356200N); N65/85; recorded 1977, revisited 2004; Fig. 39.

Pirongia; within northward loop of the Mangapiko Stream, 500 m north of Pirongia Road.

At location of the pre-European Ngāti Puhiawe pā (Phillips 1995: 127–130), but abandoned and under scrub when scene of the Waiari engagement, 11 February 1864 (Cowan 1983 I: 346–349).

Three ditches as much as 8 m deep cross a narrow isthmus to define the pā area c. 200 m long and 30–60 m wide.

The terrace is in pasture; scarps to river and defensive ditches are in scrub.

4.45 Waiari Redoubt

S15/74 (2705750E 6356400N); N65/130; recorded 1979, update 2004; Fig. 39.

Pirongia, on terrace north (right) of Mangapiko Stream, immediately across from Waiari pā (4.44).

Eight hundred officers and men of 50th and 70th Regiments began work on the 200-man redoubt on 13 February 1864, two days after the Waiari engagement (War Office 0270 I: 94).



Fig. 39. Waiari: three trenches across the river bend are the defences of Waiari pā; Waiari Redoubt is on the other side of the Mangapiko Stream under trees at lower left. *Photo: K.L. Jones, 2004.*

Rectangular redoubt, c. 40 × 35 m internal dimensions, with rounded bastion defence at two corners covering all sides.

Fair to good order under light vegetation.

4.46 Whatawhata Redoubt

S14/74 (2699650E 6376200N); N65/109; recorded 1979, update 2004.

Whatawhata; right bank of Waipa River, c. 100 m north of SH23 bridge.

On 28 December 1863, 1200 British troops advanced c. 15 km from Ngaruawahia up Waipa River to Whatawhata, where Colonel Mould (1869: 23) reported construction of a 'large stockade'.

Whatawhata was an important depot in the advance south to Te Rore and Te Awamutu. There is also an historical reference to 'Pehihoukoura Camp' at or near Whatawhata.

A January 1864 photograph shows the c. 30 m side of a redoubt earthwork with a massive timber gateway at the centre and a stockade bastion, next to an extensive camp (Stowers 1996: opp. 49).

A 1943 aerial photograph (831/28) shows one side of a rectangular earthwork redoubt and the adjacent square bastion. Half of the redoubt was destroyed by the road to an earlier bridge north of the present bridge; the rest appears to have been destroyed for a gravel pit by 1980. Some of the associated military camp will have survived where not destroyed by houses, cultivation, etc.

HAMILTON AND WAIKATO RIVER

4.47 Cambridge Redoubt

S15/320 (2727600E 6364500N); recorded 1991, update 2008; also Camp Cambridge (Gumbley & Keith 2010: 2).

Cambridge; within town block bounded by Victoria, Duke and Fort Streets.

Built in August 1864 by the 3rd Waikato Regiment at the Cambridge town site, and occupied as headquarters of the regiment. After the Waikato regiments were disestablished in 1867, the Armed Constabulary maintained a post at Cambridge to 1886 (Gumbley & Keith 2010: 2-6).

In February 1865 the redoubt of eight-pointed star plan is reported to cover 2¼ acres (c. .91 ha) and hold 1000 men; although this size may include the defences as well as interior since a plan of about the same date shows the unusual star form with an interior c. .44 ha (c. 1 acre) (Gumbley & Keith 2010: 4, 7-8).

The site is now largely built over; subsurface remains will have survived within the town block defined above; in 1963 trenches were uncovered on the Fonterra Milk Plant site, Fort Street. Further excavations were carried in 2008 (Gumbley & Keith 2010).

4.48 Crow's Nest Redoubt

T15/4 (2732700E 6360900N); N66/8; recorded 1967.

Karapiro; on ridge above the dam and Maungatautari Road, the site now occupied by two concrete water towers.

Redoubt built on the site of Wiremu Tamihana's stronghold, Te Tiki-o-te-Ihingarangi (4.57).

Present condition not known.

4.49 Firth Tower

T14 (2757350E 6374000N): no site record; Fig. 40.

Matamata; Tower Road, 2 km from the town.

Watch-tower and refuge, built in 1882 by Josiah Clifton Firth near the homestead on his 23,000 ha Matamata Estate.

16 m high reinforced concrete tower, loopholed at all three storeys.

Good condition and well maintained in Firth Tower Historical Reserve administered by Matamata-Piako District Council.

4.50 Galloway Redoubt

S14/95 (2713050E 6375900N); recorded 1983, update 1999.

Hamilton East; southwest corner of Galloway Park, between clubhouse, croquet lawns and Findlay Street.

Put up in 1868 by Armed Constabulary and local settlers.

Historical reference to a 'small redoubt'.

Under grass; likely location a raised area c. 1.5 m above the surrounding grounds; no recorded remains.



Figure 40. Firth's Tower, Matamata: built 1881–82 as a look-out and refuge on J.C. Firth's 23,000 ha Matamata Estate. Photo: N. Prickett, 2001.

4.51 Hamilton A.C. Magazine

S14/57 (2711500E 6376400N); N65/55; recorded 1977, update 1990.

Hamilton; St Peter's Cathedral, Victoria Street.

Fortified Armed Constabulary magazine built in 1873 at or close to the site of the 1864 Hamilton West Redoubt (4.53).

Parts of an old ditch are said to be intact under the cathedral floor; nothing else is visible in the vicinity.

4.52 Hamilton East Redoubt

S14/72 (2711950E 6376500N); N65/103; recorded 1977; also Moule's Redoubt.

Hamilton; above right bank of river at 24 Bridge Street.

Established in August 1864 and held by a section of the 4th Waikato Regiment who took up confiscated land in the vicinity. Nine buildings accommodated five officers and 135 men.

Completed in May 1865; later held by Armed Constabulary to 1877.

Rectangular earthwork; rounded bastion at southeast and square bastion at northwest corner covering all sides; unusual additional bastion on north side probably protected the nearby entrance.

No recorded remains; partly destroyed in cutting down Bridge Street for bridge approach; no archaeological evidence found in 2004 excavations (Simmons & Simmons-Ritchie 2007).

4.53 Hamilton West Redoubt

S14/57 (2711500E 6376400N); N65/55; recorded 1977, update 1990.

Hamilton; St Peter's Cathedral, Victoria Street.

Established in 1864 by two companies of the 4th Regiment Waikato militia to accommodate 128 men. The Waikato regiments were disbanded in 1867 and the redoubt then taken over by

Armed Constabulary. In 1872 buildings were removed, and in 1873 the earthworks were levelled for construction of the A.C. magazine (4.51).

Contemporary photograph shows a low earth parapet enclosing four or six buildings on top of the hill, at or near site of the later A.C. magazine.

No recorded remains.

4.54 Kirikiriroa Redoubt

S14/45 (2713850E 6375050N); N65/29; recorded 1968, updates 1986, 2005.

Hamilton East; north bank of Waikato River, between the cemetery and Howell Avenue, at 62 m a.s.l. spot height on S14 map sheet.

1865 survey plan SO 381 shows 'Kirikiriroa Redoubt'. Of common New Zealand rectangular form with defences at all corners each covering one side. An historic plan with the site record has 181 × 165 ft (55 × 50 m) external dimensions (c. 45 × 30 m internally), a barrier outside the entry on the southeast side, and six buildings inside.

Under grass, fenced off from surrounding paddock, redoubt platform visible.

4.55 Pukerimu Redoubt (1)

S15/41 (2723900E 6364050N); N65/73; recorded 1977, update 2000; Heritage New Zealand Category II registration No 6204.

Pukerimu; Kaipaki Road, north of cemetery, on the terrace edge left (south) bank of the Waikato River.

Established and occupied by British troops in March 1864 (Cowan 1983 I: 361). For a time it was General Cameron's HQ, later held by Waikato Militia. Another Pukerimu Redoubt (4.56) was on the opposite (right) bank of river.

Square earthwork with bastions at northwest and southeast corners covering all sides; 1986 excavations showed the distance between the inner edge of east and west defensive ditches to be 46.4 m.

Under pasture, levelled.

4.56 Pukerimu Redoubt (2)

S15/99 (2724100E 6364500N); N65/157; recorded 1981.

Cambridge; south of St Peter's School, on the terrace edge, right (north) bank of the Waikato River.

British military redoubt, established late March 1864 across the Waikato River from the main Pukerimu Redoubt (4.55).

Site ploughed in the 1930s-40s.

Present condition not known.

4.57 Te Tiki-o-te-Ihingarangi

T15/4 (2732700E 6360900N); N66/8; recorded 1967, also Pukekura.

Karapiro; on ridge above the dam and Maungatautari Road, site now occupied by two concrete water towers (4.48).

Ridge-top pā occupied by Ngāti Haua and allies under Wiremu Tamihana Tarapipipi in March 1864.

Large pā with several strong points.

Present condition not known.

TE AWAMUTU AND DISTRICT

4.58 40th Regiment Redoubt

S15/173 (2714300E 6352000N); N74/119; recorded 1977, updates 1991, 2004.

Te Awamutu; Redoubt Street, site now occupied by police station.

The redoubt here was first established on the arrival of troops at Te Awamutu on 21 February 1864, when it was occupied by 156 of the 40th Regiment and 63 militia (4.59–60; War Office 0270 I: 100). In 1870 the Armed Constabulary demolished half the work, repaired the remainder, and built a new side to a smaller fort.

Largely or completely destroyed, now occupied by the Te Awamutu Police Station, which inherited the site from the Armed Constabulary and 40th Regiment; 1991 rescue excavation reported by Ritchie & Gumbley (1992).

4.59 57th Regiment Redoubt

S15/380 (2714300E 6352600N); recorded 1997, update 2005.

Te Awamutu; rose garden between the Mutu Street/ Gorst Street corner and Mangaohoi Stream; Heritage New Zealand sign and heritage walk sign.

British redoubt shown on 1865 survey plan (4.58, 4.60).

In reserve under trees, lawn and garden; no visible evidence. A feature consistent with dimensions of a redoubt trench is said to have been uncovered during road works at the site.

4.60 65th Regiment Redoubt

S15/338 (2714800E 6352200N); recorded 1997.

Te Awamutu; Albert Park in front of pavilion near the bend in Scout Lane.

Redoubt dates from February 1864 arrival of British troops at Te Awamutu, where up to 3000 men were based for much of that year (4.58–59).

On contemporary maps shown as a rectangular work with bastions at two corners covering all sides.

Southeast side and bastion shown on 1973 aerial photo and visible on site as a 50–100 mm depression resulting from continued settling and compaction of the playing fields into the redoubt trench.

4.61 Ford Redoubt

S15/233 (2710000E 6351200N); N74/243; recorded 1979, update 2004.

Te Awamutu; 3 km southwest of town, on hill-top between Frontier Road and Puniu River, 78 m a.s.l. at trig '520'.

Ford Redoubt was established in 1873 by the Armed Constabulary 'Native Contingent', under Sub-Inspector Tregear to overlook two Puniu River fords (AJHR 1873 H-14, p. 3). In 1874 the redoubt was pulled down and replaced by a blockhouse likely to have been similar to other frontier works of the period (e.g. see Orakau Blockhouse; 4.70).

Under pasture; present condition not known.

4.62 Hairini

S15/326 (2717600E 6351600N); recorded 1996, update 2004.

Hairini; 3 km east of Te Awamutu near the Cambridge Road and Puahue Road corner. The site record and map reference is focussed on the pre-European Ngāti Hinetu pā, Tauranga Tahī, but also refers to Māori earthworks of the 22 February 1864 Hairini engagement at the same place, extending north and south of the older hill-top pā.

On 21 February, European troops reached Te Awamutu, going on to attack Rangiaowhia that day. The next day, Māori were reported reinforcing a ditch and bank fence at Hairini between Te Awamutu and Rangiaowhia, where they were attacked by European troops.

A contemporary plan shows a straight c. 1.5 km long ditch and bank (War Office 0270II: opp. p. 195). Mostly under pasture, some lengths of earthwork may have survived.

4.63 Hairini Picket

S15/379 (2716500E 6352700N); recorded 1997.

Hairini, Te Awamutu; north of Cambridge Road. Marked as 'Redt' on map by Colonel Mould, Royal Engineers (Mould 1869: Pl. 2), and 'advanced picket' on 1864 plan (War Office 0270 II: opp. p. 195).

Held in March 1864 by 66 men of 65th Regiment (War Office 0270 I: 100).

Form not known.

Present condition not known, possibly under houses.

4.64 Haurua

S16; no site record, not located.

Otorohanga; short distance south of the town, west of the railway line according to Cowan (1983 I: 408). It is unclear how 'Haurua pā' (S16/4, 2700500E 6327800N), 6 km south of town, 1–1.5 km west of SH3, relates to the 1864 fortification.

One of three works (see also Paratui (4.73), Te Roto-Marama (4.79)) prepared south of Puniu River on Ngāti Maniapoto territory after the March–April 1864 Battle of Orakau, in case of further southward advance by the European army (Cowan 1983 I: 408).

Entrenchments across a ridge on the main track between Otorohanga and Hangatiki, swamps each side.

Present condition not known.

4.65 Kihikihi Redoubt

S15/235 (2715900E 6349150N); N74/246; recorded 1979; update 1984.

Kihikihi; between SH3 and Leslie Street, south of Havelock Street; at 'Rata-tu', the highest part of the Kihikihi ridge (Cowan 1983 I: 361, 364).

Established after troops reached Te Awamutu in February 1864, by 40th and 70th Regiments under Colonel Waddy (War Office 0270 II: 198); garrisoned by regimental troops and militia, and subsequently Armed Constabulary to 1885.

Survey plan SO324 shows c. 40 × 40 m square redoubt, with rounded bastions at northwest and southeast corners covering all sides.

Under grass and buildings; in 1984 surface indication of defensive ditches at southwest corner only.

4.66 Kihikihi Stockade

S15/236 (2716400E 6348900N); N74/247; recorded 1979, updates 2004, 2006.

Kihikihi; in the town block bounded by Whitmore Street (Arapuni Road) and Rolleston, Grey and Hall Streets.

Military stockade; history not known.

Under pasture; Waipa District Council reserve.

4.67 Ohaupo

S15/357 (2713800E 6363500N); recorded 2004.

Ohaupo; on a hill now occupied by school and Ohaupo Redoubt (4.68). Exact pā location not known; may have been in or close to the present school grounds.

Pā located to contest a European advance along the ridge south of Kirikiriroa (Hamilton), which did not happen, Cameron instead advancing south by way of the Waipa River.

Levelled by the military in 1864; no known surface evidence.

4.68 Ohaupo Redoubt

S15/11 (2713800E 6363550N); N65/21; recorded 1965, update 2008; Fig. 41.

Ohaupo; west of SH3 (Ohaupo Road), in historic reserve south of school grounds and above cemetery.

Established after Lieutenant Colonel John M'Neill (for spelling, see Hart 1869: 66) was ambushed on the road between Pukerimu and Te Awamutu on 30 March 1864 (winning a VC for rescuing Private Vosper who was thrown from his horse). The redoubt was built by 40th Regiment troops under Major Blyth near Ohaupo pā (4.67), while von Tempsky's Forest Rangers patrolled the road.

Rectangular redoubt c. 75 × 30 m; defensive projection from the centre of west end. A 1943 aerial photograph (836/47) shows a flanking angle at the east end.

Good condition under grass; east end now destroyed.



Figure 41. Ohaupo Redoubt, from the south, Ohaupo Road (SH3) at right. Photo: K.L. Jones, 2004.

4.69 Orakau

S15/103 (2719900E 6347600N); N74/4; recorded 1964, update 2002; Fig. 42.

Orakau; Arapuni Road, monument and car park 4 km east of SH3 junction at Kihikihi; at a place known as Rangataua (Cowan 1983 I: 371), the pā was named after nearby Orakau kāinga (S15/341).

The siege of Orakau pā, 31 March to 2 April 1864, is one of the best known battles of the New Zealand Wars. The pā was built in two days, and held by c. 310 Māori, including c. 20 women and some children, under Ngāti Maniapoto chief Rewi Maniapoto. When General Cameron arrived at noon on 2 April, c. 1800 British Army and colonial forces were present. Late that afternoon the defenders broke through enemy lines, suffering considerable casualties, but mostly escaping to the south (Cowan 1983 I: 365–407; Swarbrick 1984: 58–69).

Orakau was a c. 30 × 16 m rectangular earthwork of traversed rifle trench with bastions at the northwest and northeast corners only. A parapet behind the trench had tunnels under it for access from rear shelters to firing positions. A c. 50 m long trench from the northwest angle was unfinished when the attack began (Cowan 1983 I: 373). The whole work was enclosed by a post and three-rail fence.

No apparent surface evidence; the Kihikihi–Arapuni Road cuts through the pā at or close to the monument; the house north of the road may be on the north end of the pā site.

4.70 Orakau Blockhouse

S15/346 (2719800E 6347400N); recorded 2003.

Orakau; c. 350 m southwest of Orakau pā (4.69), on a low hill at the edge of a scarp falling to southeast.

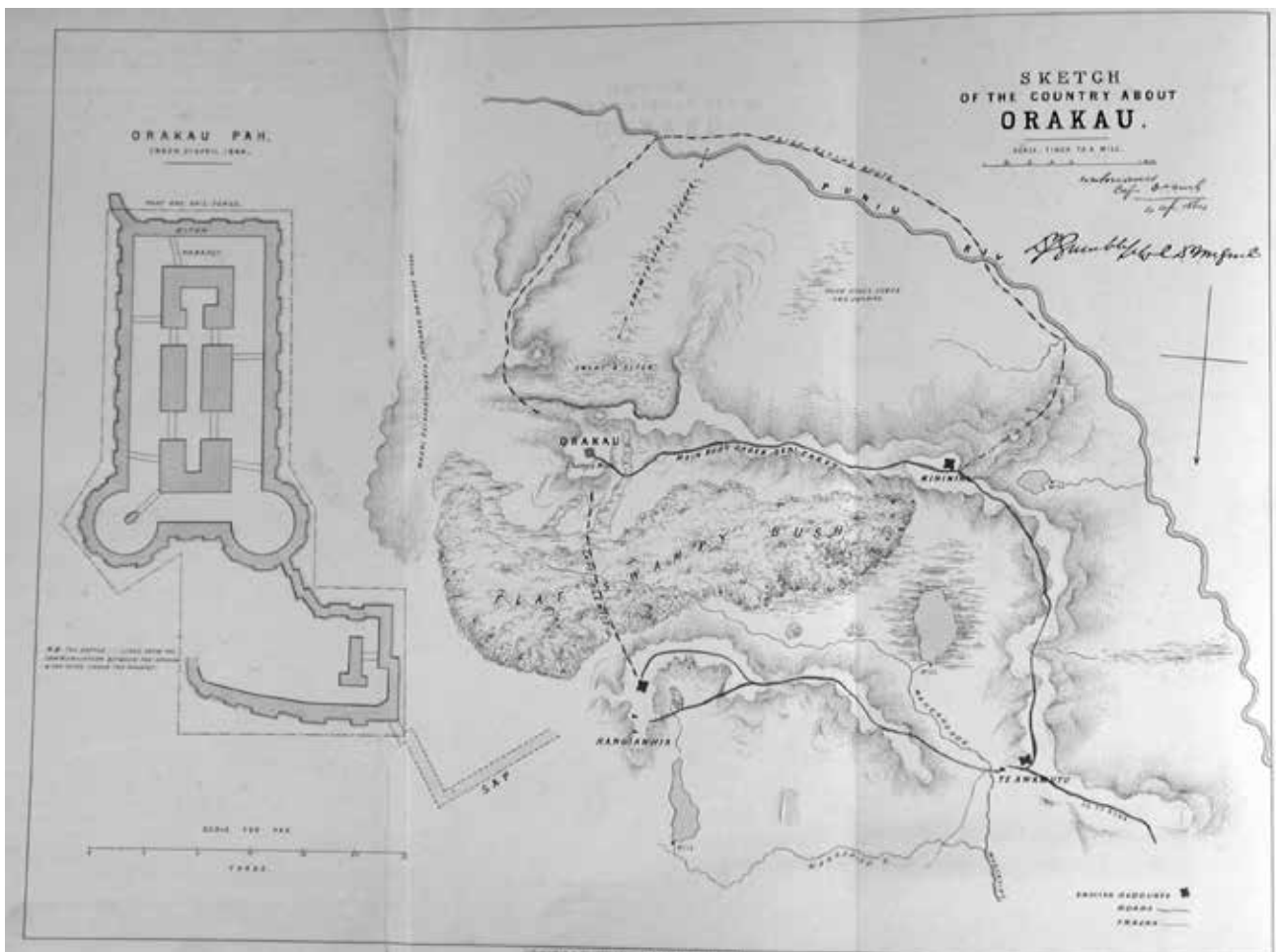


Figure 42. Orakau pā, with unfinished northwest defences. From *War Office 0270 II: opp. p. 219*.

The blockhouse was held by Armed Constabulary 1871–75. Located on a low hill named Karaponia (after ‘California’, Cowan 1983 I: 366), in the cultivations of Orakau kāinga. During the battle the site was occupied by Brigadier Carey’s HQ and two 6-pounder Armstrong guns behind a parapet.

The two-storey blockhouse was made mostly of kahikatea: the 9 ft (3 m) high ground floor was 16 × 20 ft (5 × 6.5 m) in plan; the upper floor was 12 ft (3.5 m) high, extending out from the lower by 3 ft (1 m) all round. The walls were filled with sand for bullet-proofing. A 10–12 ft (3–3.5 m) stockade all around was 6–7 ft (2 m) out from the building; a c. 7 ft (2 m) scarp at the rear gave further protection; the upper storey and stockade were loopholed (description from Cowan 1922: 89; 1983 II: 472).

Under pasture. A large gum tree was planted by Armed Constabulary in the 1870s to mark the location of guns in the battle (Cowan 1983 I: 370).

4.71 *Orakau sap*

S15/347 (2719700E 6347600N); not recorded, not located.

British attacking sap to Orakau pā (4.69); total length including demi-parallels was 124 m.

West of the pā, probably close to the north side of Arapuni Road; under pasture or destroyed by road cutting; nothing visible.

4.72 *Paekuku Blockhouse*

S15/343 (2720900E 6348700N); recorded 2002.

Puahue, east of Kihikihi; Glasson Road, on hill-top c. 200 m southeast of road end (which is not as shown on NZMS 260 map).

Armed Constabulary blockhouse built in 1873 during increased frontier activity after killing of the surveyor Sullivan (see Cowan 1983 II: 468–471). On the A.C. patrol road between Rangiaowhia Redoubt (4.74), Orakau Blockhouse (4.70) and other Pākehā frontier posts.

Rectangular slightly raised platform c. 28 × 15 m, with indication of a 2 m wide surrounding ditch; deteriorating under pasture.

4.73 *Paratui*

S16/226 (2698300E 6322500N); N83/38; recorded 1976; Fig. 43.

Hangatiki, Te Kuiti; the highest point for ‘several miles’ on the north-south ridge between the Mangapu and Mangaokewa Streams, west of SH3 (Kelly 1939).

One of three works (with Haurua (4.64), and Te Roto-Marama (4.79)) prepared south of Puniu River on Ngāti Maniapoto territory after the March–April 1864 Battle of Orakau, in case of further advance by the European army (Kelly 1939; Cowan 1983 I: 408; Phillips 1989: 202–203).

A triangular pā, with east and south sides 50 yards (46 m) long, west side

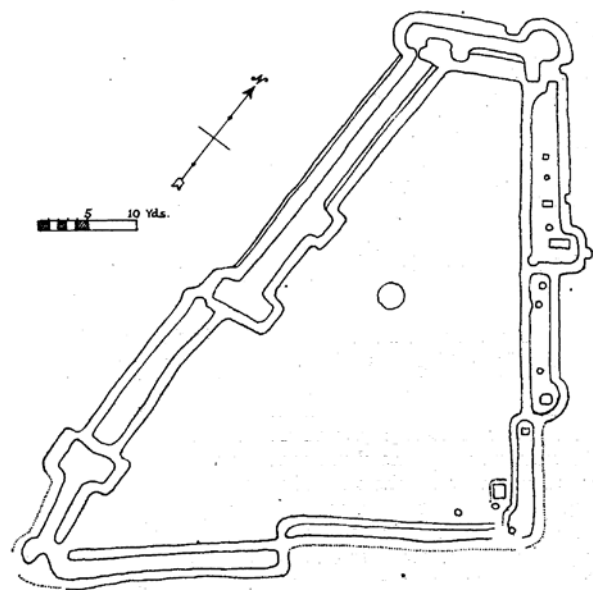


Figure 43. Paratui: a strong earthwork pā south of the Aukati Line, in what was to become known as the King Country. From Kelly 1939: 132.

70 yards (64 m), and the point which faces north to an attack truncated to a 20 yard (18 m) face; an outer firing trench and parallel inner communication trench all round; with c. ten circular and rectangular pits dug into the top of a high parapet between the two ditches on the east side (Kelly 1939). Both sides of the ridge fall steeply to swamps.

Excellent condition when visited by Kelly in 1931, and shows in 1940s aerial photo; bulldozed before 1968, now largely destroyed (Phillips 1989: 202–203).

4.74 Rangiaowhia Redoubt

S15/234 (2718650E 6351250N); N74/244; recorded 1979, update 2004; also Blewitt's Redoubt.

Rangiaowhia, Te Awamutu; Rangiaowhia Domain, behind the hall on a low hill ('Hikurangi' according to Cowan 1983 I: 360).

Established in February 1864 after the 21–22 February engagements at Rangiaowhia and Hairini. The 200-man redoubt was first occupied by ten Royal Artillery and an artillery piece, 56 of the 65th Regiment and 103 Waikato Militia (War Office 0270 I: 100). Captain Charles Blewitt, 65th, was the first officer in charge. In the 1870s Armed Constabulary occupied a blockhouse at the location.

Under grass, in the hall domain; subsurface remains are likely. Faint traces of a rectangular earthwork can be made out, within which is a totara tree, said to be on the site of a former flagpole.

4.75 Rangiatea

S15/355 (2714300E 6355600N); recorded 2004.

Te Rahu, Te Awamutu; cut by Ngaroto Road c. 400 m west of SH3.

Early 1864 pā on the ridge route east from Paterangi (4.33) and Pikopiko (4.36) to Te Awamutu and Rangiaowhia (War Office 0270 II: opp. p. 183).

Strong fortification on the crown of a narrow ridge, with trenches down to swamps on both sides (Cowan 1983 I: 346).

In Cowan's time already destroyed by road and farming.

4.76 Rotoorangi

S15/344 (2725300E 6355300N); recorded 2002; also Roto-o-Rangi (Cowan 1983 II: 469. 471).

Rotoorangi, near Cambridge; at the top of hill 1 km west of the Rotoorangi settlement, at spot height 126 m a.s.l. on NZMS 260 map, north of Cox Road.

It is not clear if this pa on the site later occupied by Rotoorangi Redoubt (4.78) dates from the Waikato War or was older.

Angular trapezoidal earthwork c. 3× the size of later redoubt on site (see McFadgen & Walton 1988).

Earthworks partly destroyed by 1873 redoubt construction; under pasture; on-going stock damage.

4.77 Rotoorangi Blockhouse

S15; no site record, not located.

Rotoorangi, near Cambridge.

Armed Constabulary blockhouse built in 1873 during increased frontier activity after killing of the surveyor Sullivan (see Cowan 1983 II: 468–471).

Present condition not known.

4.78 Rotoorangi Redoubt

S15/54 (2725300E 6355300N); N65/87; recorded 1977, update 2002; Fig. 44.

Rotoorangi; top of hill 1 km west of settlement, at spot height 126 m a.s.l. on NZMS 260 series map, north of Cox Road (4.76).

Armed Constabulary redoubt; commenced 23 May 1873, finished 12 June, held by 28 men. Capable of holding 60–70 men. Relationship to a blockhouse (4.77) in the district is unclear.

Earthwork of star form from angled bastions at all corners covering all sides from both adjacent corners; triangular 'ravelin' outwork protects the entry.

Under pasture; on-going stock damage; archaeological excavations in 1986 (McFadgen & Walton 1988).

4.79 Te Roto-Marama

S16; no site record, not located.

Hangatiki.

One of three works (with Haurua (4.64) and Paratui (4.73)) prepared south of Puniu River on Ngāti Maniapoto territory after the Battle of Orakau (March–April 1864), in case of further advance by the European army (Kelly 1939; Cowan 1983 I: 408; Phillips 1989: 202–203).

'Entrenched hill near ... Hangatiki' (Cowan 1983 I: 408).

Present condition not known.



Figure 44. Rotoorangi Redoubt: unusual 'star' form for 1873 work with 'ravelin' outwork protecting the entry. *Photo: Kees Sprengers, Waikato Museum Te Whare Taonga o Waikato, Ref. No M581-1 (1980).*

WAIKATO WEST COAST

4.80 Kawhia A.C. Camp

R15/498 (2670200E 6347300N); recorded 1998.

Kawhia; north end of township on Hospital Hill, which is also the location of 1850s Ngāti Hikairo gun-fighter pā Te Puru and older Karereatua pā (R15/177).

The last Pākehā fortification put up in the New Zealand Wars or its aftermath; established October 1883 by 114 Armed Constabulary under Major Edmund Tuke, in response to Māori destruction of government beacons in Kawhia Harbour (AJHR 1884 H-1:1; Cowan 1983 II: 474-475); 34 men were still at the post on 31 March 1886, before the Armed Constabulary was incorporated into the civilian police later that year.

Blockhouse and associated camp located on Te Puru pā gunfighter fortifications.

Level area and other earthworks on top of hill site may relate mostly to Te Puru pā; no definite Armed Constabulary archaeological evidence noted in 1998 site record.

4.81 Raglan Redoubt

R14/341 (2674650E 6376350N); recorded 2004.

Raglan; west end of Bow Street, between Nero Street and harbour.

Earthwork fortification put up around the courthouse and prison early in the Waikato War as a refuge for settlers (Cowan 1983 I: 249); garrisoned by the 2nd Waikato Regiment.

Courthouse sheathed in thick timbers and loopholed, with a ditch enclosing c. 1 acre (.4 ha) dug around the government buildings (Cowan 1983 I: 249).

Now built over and occupied by police station.

4.82 Waitetuna Redoubt

R14/133 (2679500E 6376600N); N64/174; recorded 1977, update 2005.

Raglan Harbour/ Whaingaroa; south side of the Narrows, on top of a ridge 400 m from end of Hawea Point.

Dates from Colonel Waddy's end of December 1863 expedition to set up a supply line and line of control between the west coast and Waipa River; occupied by 300 Waikato Militia in early January 1864 (War Office 0270 I: 86). The route inland proved impracticable and was soon abandoned; the redoubt also abandoned, probably before 7 February 1864.

NZ Aerial Mapping photographs 830/7-8 and 831/9-10 and 2675/8 and 9 show a well preserved earthwork c. 44 × 44 m, apparently without bastions.

Under pasture and scattered trees, reported visible on the ground in 2005.

5. Bay of Plenty

British troops landed at Tauranga on 22 January 1864 with the aim of stopping Bay of Plenty iwi from going to the Waikato in support of Tainui and Kingitanga. This prompted local Māori to return to the area and put up a series of pā to challenge the Pākehā presence.

On 29 April 1864, 200 Māori defeated a much larger British force at Pukehinahina (Gate Pā) in one of the best known battles of the New Zealand Wars. On 21 June 1864, local Māori with others from Rotorua and the East Coast were badly beaten in and around an uncompleted earthwork at Te Ranga, inland of Gate Pā. On 25 July, most Tauranga iwi met with British authorities at Te Papa to give up their arms.

Before Gate Pā there was fighting at Lake Rotoiti and near Maketu and on the beach to Matata, where sections of Te Arawa fought eastern Bay of Plenty and East Coast contingents heading for the Waikato in support of Tainui. When Arawa had the better of the fighting some of the eastern force withdrew to island pā in the swamp that took up most of the Rangitaiki Plains at that time, where there was more fighting in 1865.

Other Bay of Plenty fortifications relate to inter-tribal conflict at western approaches to the Te Urewera mountains, and the arrival of Pākehā troops at Opotiki in 1865. Te Kooti's long campaign in the east and central North Island included fighting at Whakatane in 1869 and throughout Te Urewera country of Ngai Tuhoe in 1869–72.

Bay of Plenty fortifications are listed here under:

- Tauranga and district
- Rotorua and district
- Eastern Bay of Plenty
- Te Urewera and its western approaches

TAURANGA AND DISTRICT

5.1 Aongatete Blockhouse

U14/1001 (2770800E 6394300N); recorded 1982.

Aongatete, Katikati; south bank of the Aongatete River, c. 250 m west of Tauranga–Waihi Road (SH2).

Said to have been a camp for soldiers, presumably militia or Armed Constabulary, protecting the Aongatete district in the late 1860s.

Destroyed before 1982 for construction of a piggery.

Prior to 1982, a trench is said to have surrounded the site.

5.2 Durham Redoubt

U14/433 (2789500E 6386250N); N58/234; recorded 1980, updates 1984, 2000, 2004.

Tauranga; in the city block between Cameron Road, and Harington, Durham and Hamilton Streets.

Built in early 1864 on the arrival of British troops (see also Monmouth Redoubt (5.9)); the name is from 68th (Durham) Regiment. Associated barracks were west of Cameron Road (NZAA site record U14/3155). Rebuilt by Armed Constabulary in 1868, and held by 80 men as late as September 1869.

Square earthwork, fully flanked from northeast and southwest angles.

A tender was accepted on 15 December 1877 to level the redoubt, which was subsequently built over. Three trenches excavated in 1984 showed no sign of the redoubt.

5.3 Fort Colville

V14/6 (2814830E 6376480N); N68/23; recorded 1970, updates 1983, 2004; also Pukemaire Redoubt (Cowan 1983 II: 416).

Maketu; School Road, first ridge east of school.

In March 1864, Major Fiennes Colvile (for spelling, see Hart 1869: 304) was ordered to Maketu with 200 of the 43rd Regiment in support of Te Arawa who were opposing eastern Bay of Plenty and Ngāti Porou taua on their way to aid Tainui in the Waikato War. Fighting took place on 7–9 April at Lake Rotoiti, 21 April at Maketu and west of Matata on Kaokaoroa beach 27–28 April (Cowan 1983 II: 414–419).

Fort Colville was put up next to the pre-war Pukemaire pā.

Now mostly under grass except for some of the ditch and bank defences; the main platform and defensive ditch and banks survive.

5.4 Gate Pā Redoubt

U14/192 (2786800E 6382500N); N58/71; recorded 1973, updates 2000, 2004; Fig. 45.

Gate Pā, Tauranga; at the high point of peninsula, at or near St George's Church.

Established by British troops on the site of the main Māori strong point, after the 29 April 1864 Battle of Gate Pā (see Pukehinahina (5.11)).

A field sketch by Lieutenant Horatio Robley (Melvin 1990: 21) shows the redoubt earthwork to cover most of the larger of the two pā strong points (see Fig. 48), being shorter but substantially broader than the Māori work.



Figure 45. Gate Pā Redoubt, on the site of Pukehinahina/ Gate Pā. Photo: Auckland Museum album 91, p. 15.

Largely destroyed under St George's Church and an adjacent memorial. Earthwork traces in the historic reserve may relate to the pā or redoubt or both; the west end may be cut by Cameron Road.

5.5 Judea Redoubt

U14/336 (2787800E 6385000N); N58/228; recorded 1980, update 2002; also India Redoubt.

Judea (Te Huria), Tauranga; east of Judea Road above Waikareao Estuary.

Established by British troops c. June 1864; still occupied at the time of the 1867 so-called Tauranga Bush Campaign (see Cowan 1983 II: 153–160).

Shown in 1864 map as a rectangular work, with open rear to a cliff and bastion defence at the southwest corner covering the west and south sides only (War Office 0270 I: map No 18).

Largely destroyed in several suburban properties; archaeological excavations in 2000.

5.6 *Maketu rifle-pits*

V14/9 (2816400E 6376900N); N68/45; recorded 1977.

Maketu; east side of peninsula, cliff-top above the Waihi Estuary outlet; south of pre-European Herekaki pā.

May relate to an April 1864 episode, when Fort Colville troops exchanged fire with East Coast Māori across the Waihi Estuary outlet.

Said to have been c. six rifle-pits in 1972; in 1977 two pits were visible, 2 × 2 m, 600 mm deep and filled with fern; no later record.

5.7 *Maketu rifle-pits*

V14/19 (2815500E 6376400N); N68/121; recorded 1977.

Maketu; east side of peninsula, 400 m north of road junction to Little Waihi, near 'Maketu F' trig, southeast of house.

Rifle-pits reputedly built by East Coast Māori attacking Fort Colville (Cowan 1983 I: 417).

Present condition not known.

5.8 Moerangi

U15/119 (2779900E 6367000N); N67/48; recorded 1975, update 2003; Fig. 46.

Omanawa, Tauranga; on the terrace 30 m west of McLaren Falls Road, 300 m south of the Peers Road junction, 10 m from steep scarp west into gully.

Established 27 February – 4 March 1867 in the Tauranga Bush Campaign by an Arawa force under Major William Mair, at the site of the former Paengaroa village (Cowan 1983 II: 159; Jones 1983: 68).

Broadly rectangular earthwork, c. 40 × 30 m, with hut floors inside. Traversed rifle-pits behind the forward bank are of Māori fortification style (Jones 1983: 73–75).

Good condition under pasture in 2007 (Google Earth).

5.9 Monmouth Redoubt

U14/174 (2789700E 6386400N); N58/48; recorded 1972, updates 2000, 2004; Fig. 47.

Tauranga; Monmouth Street and Cliff Road corner, in a park at the edge of cliff to harbour.

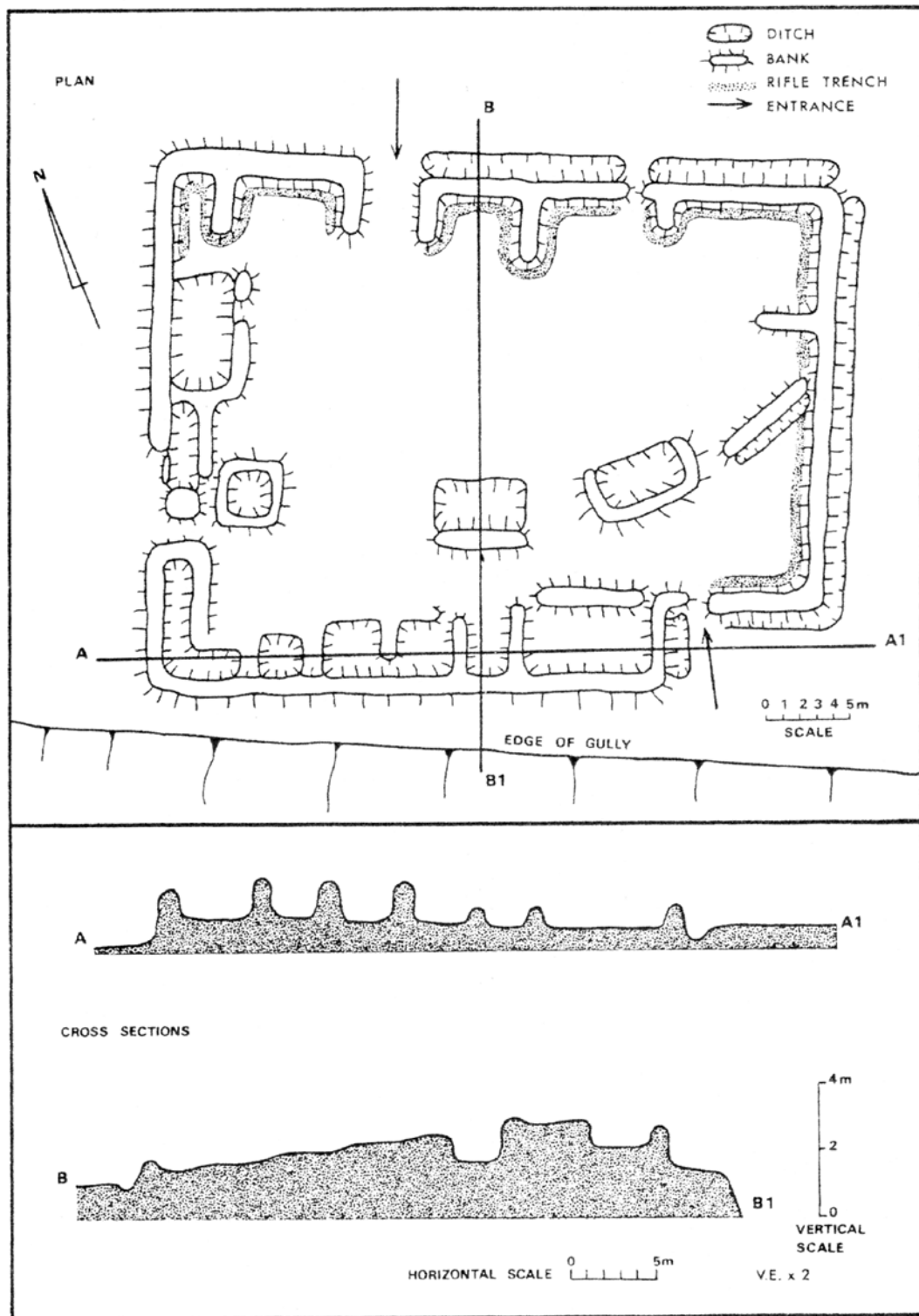


Figure 46. Moerangi, Paengaroa: fortification of Arawa force under Major William Mair, 1867. From Jones 1983: 71.

One of two redoubts put up in early 1864 to defend the British Army camp at Te Papa (see also Durham Redoubt (5.2)). Named after the 43rd (Monmouth) Regiment, led by Colonel Booth who was killed at Gate Pā on 29 April 1864.

Rectangular work fully flanked by bastions at three angles, west and south sides covered from the southwest angle.

Restoration has adversely affected historical integrity of the site; otherwise well maintained in historic reserve.



Figure 47. Monmouth Redoubt: one of two positions (with Durham Redoubt) defending the British camp at Te Papa, Tauranga. Photo: N. Prickett, 2001.

5.10 Omanawa Redoubt

U14/210 (2781000E 6377800N); N58/90; recorded 1974.

Tauriko, Tauranga; east of Wairoa River and Tauranga–Matamata Road (SH29), south of Belk Road intersection.

Redoubt involved in 1867 Tauranga Bush Campaign (see Cowan 1983 II: 154).

Form not known.

Present condition not known.

5.11 Pukehinahina

U14/192 (2786800E 6382500N); N58/71; recorded 1973, updates 2000, 2004; also Gate Pā; Figs 14, 48.

Gate Pā, Tauranga; the earthwork extending across the peninsula, between Kopurererua Stream (west) and Waimapu Estuary, included two strong-points on high ground cut by Cameron Road, at or near St George's Church; partly in historic reserve (see also Gate Pā Redoubt (5.4)).

Construction of Pukehinahina began in early April 1864, directed by Pene Taka Tuaia. The name 'Gate Pa' is from a gate through the mission boundary fence there. On 29 April, c. 200 Ngai Te Rangī and Ngāti Ranginui with some Ngāti Paoa and individuals from other iwi, all under Rawiri Puhirake, turned back an assault by 300 43rd Regiment and Naval Brigade, then abandoned the pā that night, in one of the best-known engagements of the New Zealand Wars.

Contemporary plans show two strong points, c. 90 × 18 m and 26 × 18 m, each a complex of traversed rifle trenches and bunkers with light surrounding fence. A trench between the strong points extended to swamps on low ground east and west.

St George's Church and an adjacent memorial occupy the high point of the defensive line and likely location of the main pā. The rest of the pā was either destroyed by Cameron Road, or is in the historic reserve where surface earthwork traces may relate to Pukehinahina and/or the later redoubt.

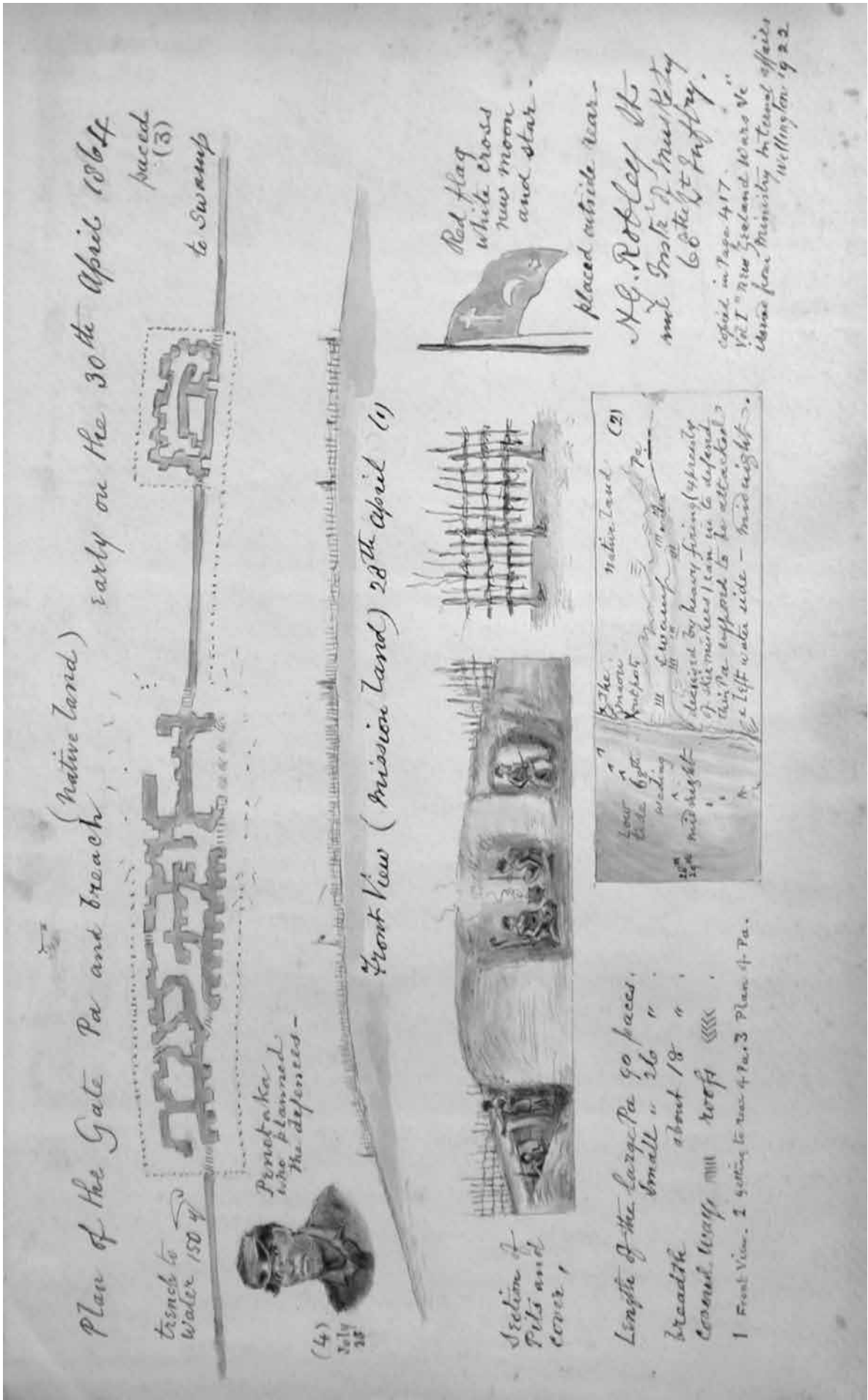


Figure 48. Pukehinahina/ Gate Pa: plan and details of the pa. Lieutenant H.G. Robley, 68th Regiment, Auckland Museum PD 48(50).

5.12 Pye's Pā Redoubt

U14/64 (2785500E 6370900N); N67/100; recorded 1980, update 2003; Fig. 49.

Pyes Pā, Tauranga; 994 Pye's Pā Road, between the road and terrace edge to the west.

Established early 1867 in the Tauranga Bush Campaign (Cowan 1983 II: 155); held by 17 men in December that year; abandoned by 1869.

Off-square four-sided earthwork 108 × 72 ft (33 × 22 m), two pits inside. Described as a blockhouse for 25 men in 10 September 1869 'Return of Blockhouses, Redoubts and Stockades in the North Island' (National Archives AD35/12).

In 2003, the site was in good condition under native trees; well-defined pit, scarps, banks and terraces; the east side possibly cut by the road.

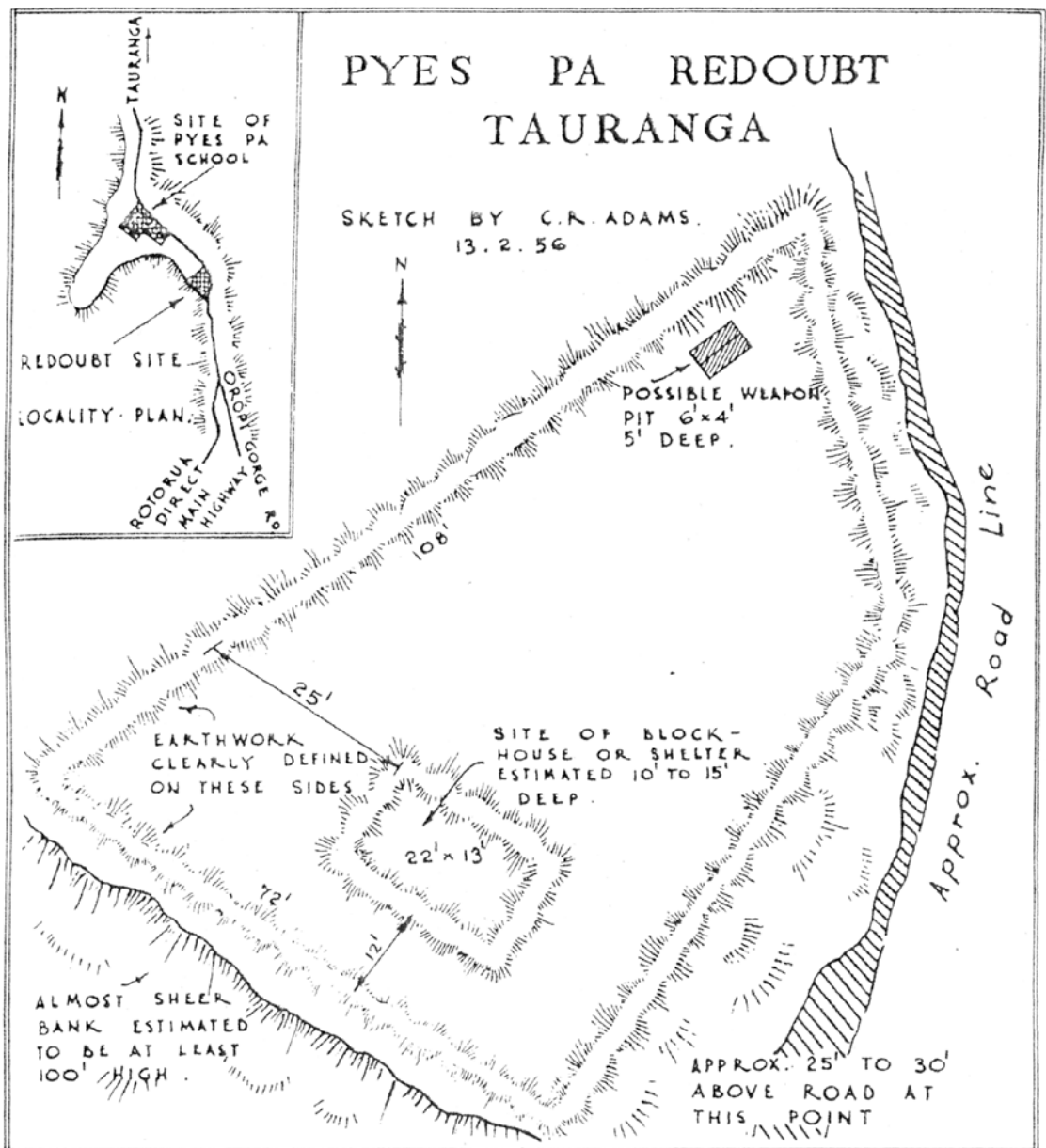


Figure 49. Pye's Pā Redoubt: off-square, four-sided work of 1867 Tauranga Bush Campaign. From *Tauranga Historical Society Journal* 1982: 6.

5.13 Tawhiti Nui

U14/160 (2776500E 6386150N); N58/13; recorded 1968, update 1982; Fig. 50.

Whakamarama; on a prominent hill-top inland of the Barrett Road junction with Old Waihi Highway, west of Whakamarama Road.

Pā prepared by Te Moananui after the arrival of British troops at Tauranga in early 1864 and held by c. 70 Ngai-te-Rangi and 30 Koheriki, but not attacked. The fortified position Waoku (section 5.17), and Kaimai, Poropori and Wairoa, all in or near the inland bush, were also occupied at this time (Cowan 1983 I: 421-422).

Pā 110 × 25-30 m; the 1982 site record plan shows inner traversed ditch and outer, generally straight, ditch around most of perimeter; pits in the pā include bunkers behind firing positions and storage pits. Cowan (1983 I: 422) refers to a double stockade.

Shows clearly on 1943 NZ Aerial Mapping photographs (500/33-34); well-preserved in 1982; present condition not known.

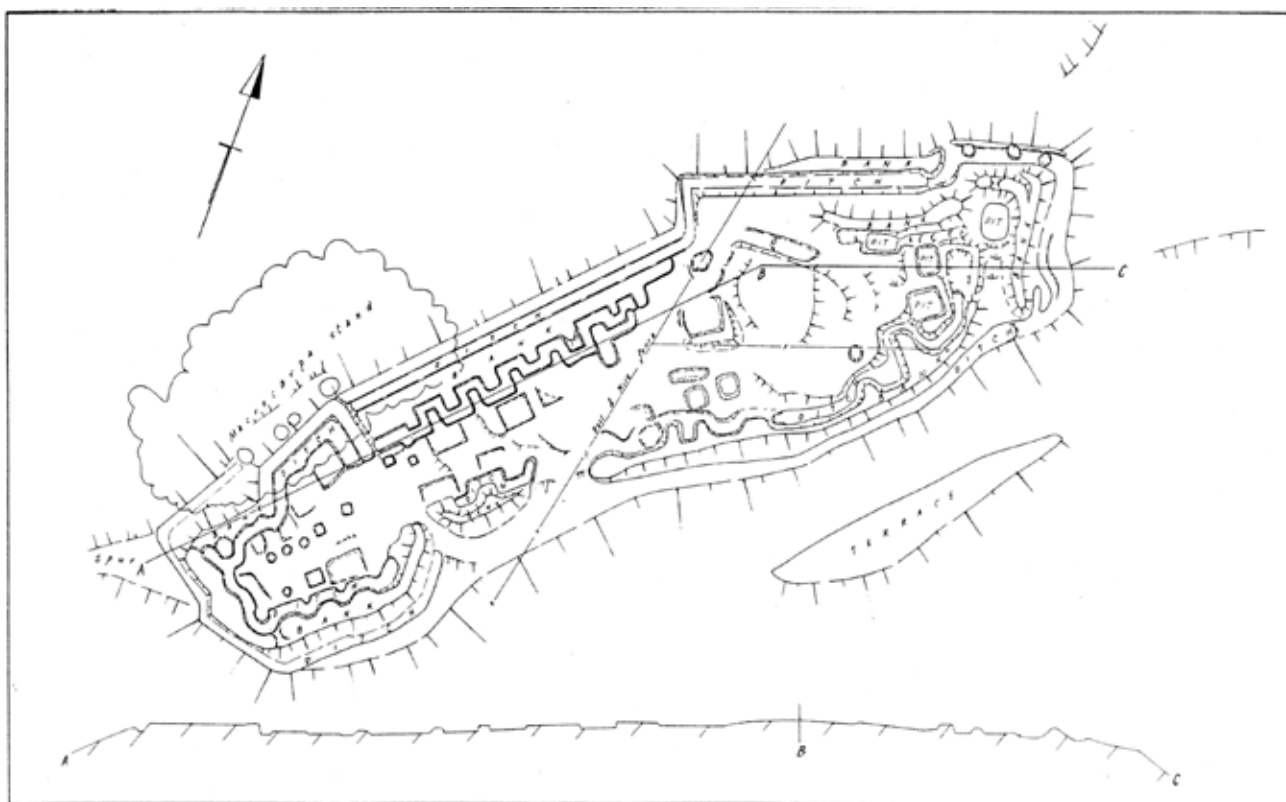


Figure 50. Tawhiti Nui, Whakamarama, near Tauranga: a strongly fortified 1864 pā, 110 x 25-30 m, on a hill-top position. *From N.Z.A.A. site record.*

5.14 Te Irihanga

U14/328 (2776800E 6380600N); N58/218; recorded 1982.

Wairoa, Tauranga; ridge south of Mangakurukuru (Ohourere) Stream; access from Crawford Road.

Identification as a 'pā' is unclear in the site record; Cowan (1983 II: 154-159) refers to Te Irihanga only as a kāinga and scene of fighting in January-February 1867.

In 1982 described as a knoll on a spur between stream tributaries, with double ditch and banks to the south and west and a steep natural scarp east.

Present condition not known.

5.15 Te Papa Camp

U14/3171 (2789500E 6386400N); recorded 1997.

Tauranga; city block between Cameron Road and Willow, Monmouth and McLean Streets, and probably extending west of Cameron Road into the domain and east to the cliff edge.

British Army camp from 1864, and probably also the later Armed Constabulary camp, making use of modified mission farm ditch and bank fence for a defensive work. An 1864 sketch map locates 'rifle pits' and 'deep ditch filled up' (Bilcliffe 1995: 150), and photographs show a substantial earthwork extending east from Monmouth Redoubt or nearby, one picture showing a tent camp behind (Bilcliffe 1995: after p. 160). See also Durham Redoubt, section 5.2 and Monmouth Redoubt, section 5.9.

Archaeological excavations in 1997 at 32 Cameron Road revealed a trench modified for access to an adjacent rifle-pit. The trench extended into 36 Cameron Road and 37 McLean Street.

5.16 Te Ranga

U14/191 (2784900E 6378200N); N58/70; recorded 1973, updates 2000, 2004.

Te Ranga, Tauranga; Pyes Pā Road 2.5 km south of Barkes Corner, 200 m south of Joyce Road; historic reserve east of road with signpost and Heritage New Zealand cairn.

After the 29 April Battle of Gate Pā (5.11), British troops and militia on 21 June 1864 attacked a Māori force of 500–600 Ngai Te Rangī, Ngāti Ranginui, Ngāti Porou, and the Arawa tribes Ngāti Rangiwewehi and Ngāti Pikiao. The fight took place in an unfinished rifle trench dug in one night across a terrace between two gullies. About 130 Māori were killed or died of wounds in one of the bloodiest engagements of the wars, c. 108 were buried in their rifle-pits after the battle.

From a contemporary source, the Māori defences comprised a '... semi-circle of about 250 yards [225 m] and consisted of 43 pits 6 feet by 4 [1.8 × 1.2 m] with traverses of 3 feet [0.9 m]—the whole about 4½ feet [1.35 m] deep' (Gifford & Williams 1976: 242).

The rifle trench is under pasture on both sides of Pyes Pā Road; a geophysical survey has showed a section of trench immediately south of the cairn (McFadgen 1977).

5.17 Waoku

U15/146 (2790100E 6369100N); recorded 1974, updates 1992, 2003.

Oropi, Tauranga; south of McPhail Road, east of Waimapu Stream.

Pā built in early 1864 by Ngai Te Rangī under Rawiri Puhirake; when it was not attacked, Puhirake moved forward to Poteriwhi on Wairoa River where a second pā was made ready, but again not attacked. A third pā was then put up at Pukehinahina/ Gate Pā (5.11; Cowan 1983 I: 421–423). Other Māori positions inland of Tauranga at this time were 'Te Houroa', 'Ngapurako' and 'Kahakaharoa' (GBPP Grey to Cardwell, 9 June 1864).

Waoku is described as '... an ancient earthwork renovated and palisaded' (Cowan 1983 I: 421).

Under high grass and scrub; a line of rifle-pits on top of an 8 m scarp with a stream to the east (1992 record).

ROTORUA AND DISTRICT

5.18 Kaiteriria

U16/3 (2799950E 6324900N); N76/25; recorded 1968, update 1999.

Lake Rotokakahi; on a small peninsula, south side of lake.

A former kāinga or pā was made into a redoubt by Captain Gilbert Mair and Arawa troops in the 1870 campaign against Te Kooti in Rotorua district (Cowan 1983 II: 394-397).

Ditch and bank earthwork at lake edge, c. 30 × 20 m; lack of north end defences may be the result of lake shore erosion, or may not have been required; angled for defence at the landward end (Google Earth).

Under pasture; hut sites identified in 1968 were barely discernible in 1999 and a reported bell-pit not found; glass and clay pipe fragments in erosion at the north end. Google Earth images show the earthworks clearly in 2006, but barely visible in 2009.

5.19 Maharo Redoubt

U16 (2794800E 6336150N); no site record, not located.

Rotorua; Pukeroa (Hospital Hill), east side of hill, at the highest point above Rangiuuru Street.

Defences of an older Maharo pā were modified by Captain Gilbert Mair's force in March 1867, and held by 25 men under Henare Te Pukuatua (Cowan 1983 I: 162; Stafford 1994: 43).

Earthwork redoubt.

Stafford (1994: 43) notes remnants of defensive bank from redoubt or earlier pā.

5.20 Puraku

U15/49 (2786000E 6342000N); N76/79; recorded 1967, update 1989; Fig. 51.

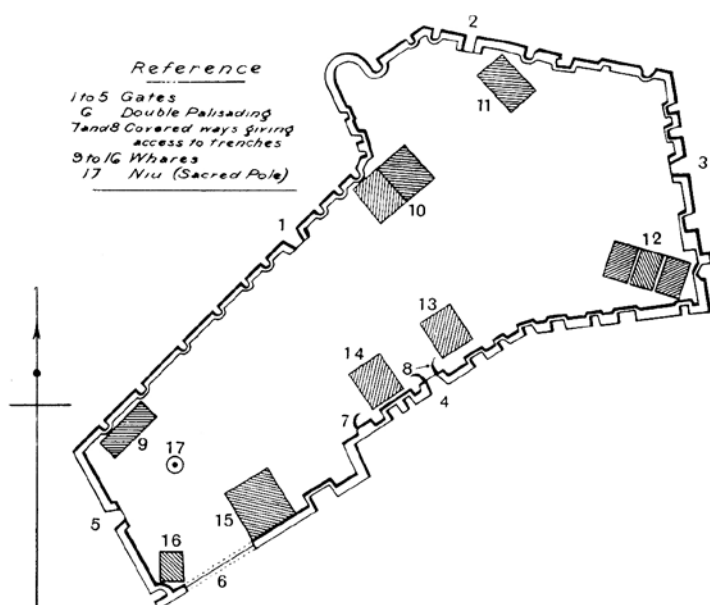


Figure 51. Puraku: an historically important pā in good order as late as the 1950s before destroyed in land development. From Cowan 1983 II: 169.

Tarukenga, Ngongotaha; south of railway, between Te Poti and Manurewa Streams; map reference is from location in Stafford (1994: 190).

First built by Ngāti Tura and some Ngāti Rangiwewehi, before being strengthened in early 1867 by Waikato, Ngāti Haua and others under Kihitu, in a move threatening Rotorua. On 28 March 1867 it was attacked by Te Arawa under Gilbert Mair and militia under Major Thomas McDonnell and was given up without a fight, the garrison withdrawing west to the bush and followed up in a running fight.

An outstanding New Zealand War fortification, 80 paces long and 45 paces at its widest point (c. 80 × 45 m); all round was a traversed rifle trench with one totara stockade line in front and one

behind, but for a short section without a trench and of two stockades only; dug-out huts inside (see Cowan 1983 II: 166–173).

Described as the ‘... best existing example of Māori skill in entrenchment in the wars of the “sixties” ...’ (Cowan 1983 II: 173), which ‘... should be preserved from destruction’; ‘flawless condition’ protected by scenic reserve status to 1950s, but since then ‘totally obliterated’ in land development (Stafford 1994: 100, opp. p. 97); under pasture, ‘levelled’ according to 1989 record.

5.21 **Te Niho-o-te-Kiore**

U17; no site record, not located,
Atiamuri; on the Waikato River.

Site of a redoubt occupied by Captain Gilbert Mair and Arawa in the early 1870s (Stafford 1967: 502; Cowan 1983 II: 393).

EASTERN BAY OF PLENTY

5.22 *Kutarere gun-fighter pā*

W15/170 (2871900E 6342200N); N78/97; recorded 1972, update 1986.

Kutarere, Ohiwa Harbour; knoll east side of the main Hiwarau Ridge, 50 m west of a farm road.
Gunfighter pā; name and history not known; included here from the site record only.

Rectangular platform c. 35 × 10 m enclosed by two banks and rifle trench; external terraces east and northwest.

Good condition in 1986.

5.23 **Oheu**

No site record, not located.

Rangitaiki Swamp island pā; trenched and palisaded pā (Cowan 1983 II: 97, 105).

When eastern Bay of Plenty tribes were driven from Parawai (section 5.30) and Te Matapihi (5.32) in 1865 they withdrew to a group of island pā in the Rangitaki Swamp, including also Omeheu (5.24), Otamauru (5.26), Pa-harakeke (5.28) and Te Teko (5.38).

5.24 **Omeheu**

V15; no site record, not located.

Rangitaiki Swamp island pā; island east of Tarawera River, c. 4 miles (6 km) inland. The last of the Rangitaiki island pā to be abandoned (Cowan 1983 II: 98; see Oheu (5.23)).

5.25 **Opotiki Redoubt**

W15/884 (2886300E 6346500N); recorded 2004, update 2005; Fig. 52.

Opotiki; 128 Church Street and adjacent sections, between Elliott and Kelly Streets.

The missionary Rev. Carl Völkner’s Hiona (Zion) church, built in 1862–64 by its Whakatohea congregation. On 2 March 1865, Völkner was hanged from a nearby willow tree for spying for the

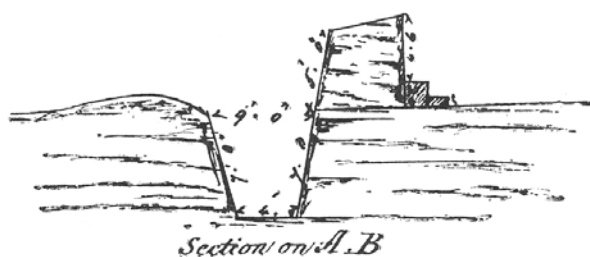
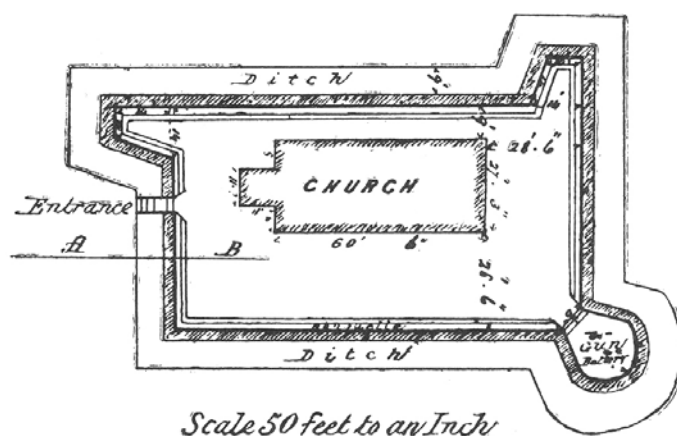


Figure 52. Opotiki Redoubt: the September 1865 earthwork enclosed Hiona, now Church of St Stephen the Martyr. From Cowan 1983 II: 109.

government. This led to a punitive expedition in early September that put up a redoubt around the church as military headquarters in the district. Hiona was later renamed 'St Stephen the Martyr'.

The rectangular redoubt, c. 40 × 20 yards (37 × 19 m), had bastions at three angles covering all four sides, with an artillery piece in the larger southeast bastion.

There are no visible remains of redoubt earthwork; part of the redoubt and external camp is under adjacent properties; the historic church is still in use.

5.26 Otamauru

W15; no site record, not located.

Rangitaiki Swamp island pā; right bank of Orini Stream, 1–2 km south of Whakatane Airport. Large strongly-trenched and palisaded pā; in 1865 surrendered to 100 Ngāti Pikiao (Arawa) under Major William Mair (Cowan 1983 II: 97–98; see Oheu (5.23)).

5.27 Otarā Blockhouse

X16; no site record, not located.

Otarā, Opotiki; near start of Otarā River gorge.

Established to protect Opotiki Pākehā settlement shortly before January 1869 when Ensign J.R. Rushton was reported in command of 25 men, c. half of them Māori (Cowan 1983 II: 282–283).

Present condition not known.

5.28 Pa-harakeke

V15/159 (2843600E 6344500N); N77/30; recorded 1964.

Te Teko; right bank of river, 450 m south of bridge at township.

A support pā located across the river from the main Te Teko pā (5.38) in the 17–20 October 1865 siege by Ngāti Pikiao under William Mair. When Ngāti Pikiao volunteers crossed the river, the leading Pa-harakeke chief, Maraki, who was related to Ngāti Pikiao chiefs, surrendered without a fight (Cowan 1983 II: 102).

Form not known.

Under pasture; 'Poor state, some ramparts still show' in 1964 record.

5.29 Papaka

W15/10 (2861300E 6353300N); N69/10; recorded 1968, update 2004.

Whakatane; west of Hillcrest Road opposite Seaview Road corner, on the steep end of a ridge.

Pā remodelled for Armed Constabulary redoubt.

Earth parapet around off-square platform on top of ridge.

Good condition in reserve 2004.

5.30 Parawai

V15/46 (2838350E 6349500N); N68/66; recorded 1972, update 2007.

Te Teko; 1.4 km east of Johns Road and Braemar Road corner, near left bank of Tarawera River; access by farm track from the end of Johns Road; visible from Braemar Road.

In 1865 William Mair and 400 Arawa at first considered the pā, held by eastern Bay of Plenty tribes, was too strong to take, but later returned to take it (Cowan 1983 II: 96–97).

Ring-ditch pā; associated with outlying rifle trenches (see below).

Terrace and pit features; under pasture, with stock, farm track, fence line and power pole damage; steeper sections eroding badly.

Parawai rifle trenches

Two site records have the same map reference.

1. V15/48 (2838800N 6350000N); N68/68; recorded 1972, update 2007

Te Teko; 2 km east of Johns Road and Braemar Road corner, west of Tarawera River; access by farm track from the end of Johns Road.

Under c. 15 year-old pine plantation, thick scrub undergrowth; not confirmed in 2007, probably in poor condition.

2. V15/50 (2838800E 6350000N); N68/70; recorded 1972, update 2007

Te Teko; 2 km east of Johns Road and Braemar Road corner, west of Tarawera River; access by farm track from the end of Johns Road.

In 2007 under thick scrub, not confirmed.

5.31 Rauporoa

W15/35 (2859700E 6348900N); N69/37; recorded 1967, update 1986; Fig. 53.

Poroporo, Whakatane; left bank of Whakatane River; access is 500 m over paddocks from the house 250 m north of the corner of Rewatu and Titoki Roads.

Ngāti Pukeko pā attacked in March 1869 by Te Kooti's force of 400–500, during raids on the Whakatane district; Te Kooti withdrew on the arrival of government forces (Cowan 1983 II: 314–325). Unusual in the use of attacking trench or sap by a Māori force.

Cowan (1983 II: 318) shows a rectangular work, c. 120 × 57 yards (110 × 52 m), all sides covered by projecting defensive angles.

Under pasture; extensively damaged by bulldozing in 1994.

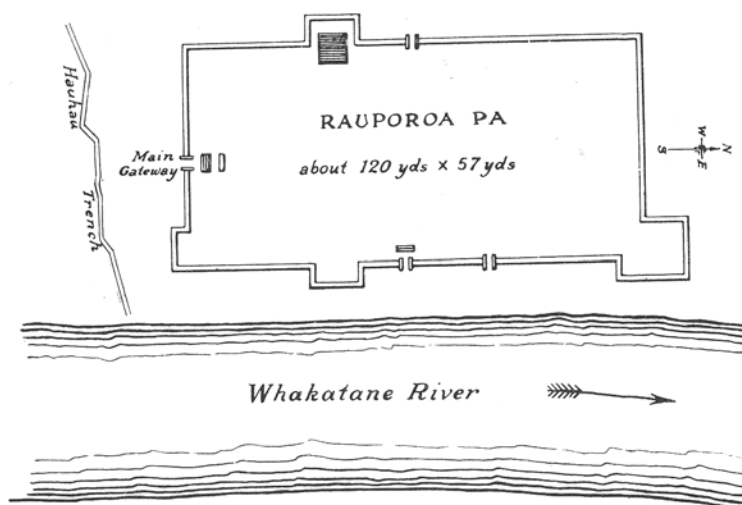


Figure 53. Rauporoa, Whakatane: Ngāti Pukeko pā attacked by Te Kooti, March 1869; c. 110 × 52 m. From Cowan 1983 II: 318.

5.32 Te Matapihi

W15/14 (2842200E 6358700N); N68/26; recorded 1971.

Matata; c. 2.5 km southeast of township, on the Rangitaiki Plain, between Awakaponga Canal and Tarawera River, but closer to the latter.

Pā fortified by Whakatohea, Ngāti Awa, Ngai-te-Rangihouhiri and Tuhoe after their defeat in the Kaokaoroa fight on the beach near Matata in April 1864; taken in spring 1865 by Arawa under Major William Mair (Cowan 1983 II: 96–98, 105).

A 2–3 acre (c. 1 ha) area of high ground in swamp fortified with earthworks and palisades (see Cowan 1983 II: 105).

Present condition unknown.

5.33 Te Paripari

W15/23 (2864650E 6351700N); N69/25; recorded 1966, update 2005; also Marama Tuwhana.

Ohope, Whakatane; on ridge west of marae; Possible associated rifle trenches recorded to the south on farmland above Otarapuhia Stream (W15/25, 2864500E 6351200N).

Said to have been constructed in 1865.

Good condition in Te Paripari Pā Historic Reserve; some stock damage noted in 2005.

5.34 Te Poronu Redoubt

W15/94 (2860400E 6349000N); N69/100; recorded 1971, update 2004.

Whakatane; 4 km south of the town on Taneatua Road (SH2); in paddock c. 100 m west of the road at memorial, on slightly elevated ground.

Small redoubt built in 1868 near a flour mill (W15/94). Defended in March 1869 against a section of Te Kooti's force, while most were attacking nearby Rauporoa pā (5.31); Cowan 1983 II: 315–319).

Fortification particulars not known.

Under pasture; there are likely to be surviving remains of the earthwork.

5.35 Te Poronu rifle-pits

W15/97 (2860500E 6348900N); N69/103; recorded 1972.

Whakatane; 4 km south of Whakatane on Taneatua Road (SH2); near Te Poronu Redoubt (5.34) and Poronu mill site (W15/94).

Trenches are possibly the work of Te Kooti's force in the siege of Te Poronu Redoubt and mill, March 1869; Cowan (1983 II: 317) refers to a row of shallow rifle-pits.

Present condition not known.

5.36 Te Puia

W15; no site record, not located.

Waioeka, Opotiki; described as ¾ mile (1.2 km) from and in full view of Te Tarata pā (5.37); Cowan 1983 II: 111).

In the 4 October 1865 Kiorekino fight (see section 5.37), reinforcements from Te Puia pā were driven off by a troop of Wanganui Yeoman Cavalry in a rare cavalry engagement in the New Zealand Wars. Next day Te Puia was abandoned on the approach of a European force (Cowan 1983 II: 110–114).

Described by Cowan (1983 II: 110) as an entrenchment consisting of 'three redoubts close to each other on knolls or terraces, one in rear of the other', two of them enclosed in palisades.

Present condition not known.

5.37 Te Tarata

W15/155 (2885600E 6340000N); N78/63; recorded 1970.

Waioeka, Opotiki; west of SH2, seaward of Pile Road.

Pā built in early October 1865, attacked 4 October by colonial forces under Major Thomas McDonnell; c. 35 Māori are said to have been killed in Kiorekino engagement (from the name of the district), mostly in an attempt to fight their way out of Te Tarata pā (Cowan 1983 II: 110–114). Reinforcements from nearby Te Puia pā were driven off (5.36).

Pā was '... a hastily-built double stockade, consisting largely of *whanake* (cabbage-tree) trunks set in closely between posts of heavy timber; inside were trenches and rifle-pits, connected with each other and well traversed' (Cowan 1983 II: 111); at the west side was a 20 ft (6 m) scarp to the Waioeka River.

Present condition not known.

5.38 Te Teko

V15/158 (2843550E 6344300N); N77/28; recorded 1964, updates 1986, 2004; Fig. 54.

Te Teko; left bank of Rangitaiki River near Tahuna Road, 450 m south of bridge at township.

The last of 1864–65 Rangitaiki Swamp pā to be taken was held by 170 men plus non-combatants, mostly from eastern Bay of Plenty tribes (see Oheu (5.23)). Over 17–20 October 1865 Te Teko was subject to a three day siege by 400–500 Arawa and some Ngāti Tuwharetoa, all under Major William Mair. Several saps were close enough for an assault when the pā was surrendered (Cowan 1983 II: 98–105); see also Pā-harakeke (5.28).

Cowan (1983 II: 99–100) describes a strong pā with a 10 ft (3 m) split totara stockade, a gateway to the west and a covered way 20 ft (6 m) down to the river at the rear.

Under lucerne in the 2004 site record update visit; general destruction of surface features by ploughing.

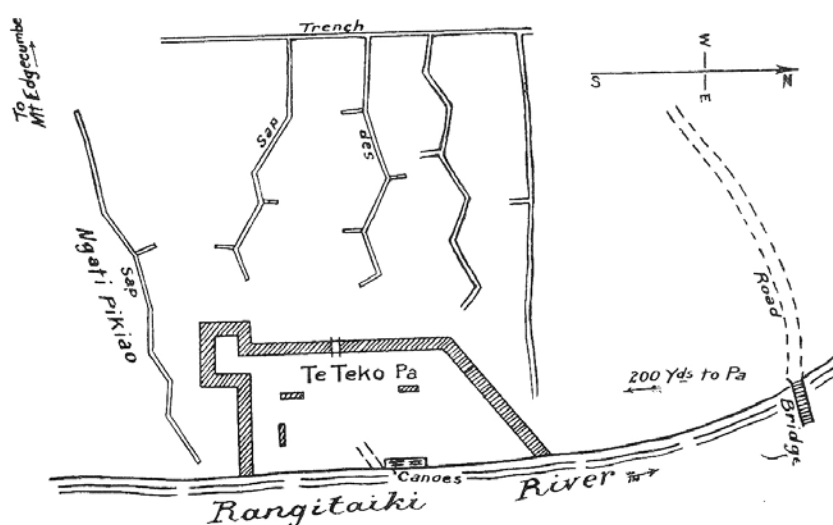


Figure 54. Te Teko: taken by Arawa, October 1865, in a three-day siege in which several saps were dug to the pā, in a rare use of sapping by Māori. From Cowan 1983 II: 519.

5.39 Waioeka Redoubt

W16; no site record, not located.

Waioeka, Opotiki; at the entrance to gorge, near east bank of river (Cowan 1983 II: 114).

Established c. May 1867; in September Māori made an attempt to burn down a blockhouse under construction (Cowan 1983 II: 177).

No description of redoubt or blockhouse.

Cowan (1983 II: 114) tells of 'grass-grown ruins of Waioeka Redoubt', in early 20th century. Present condition not known.

TE UREWERA AND ITS WESTERN APPROACHES

5.40 Fort Alfred

V15/416 (2843500E 6341600N); N77/337; recorded 1982.

Te Teko; Tahuna Road, c. 3 km south of township near the left bank of Rangitaiki River, exact position not known, possibly on a small promontory directly southeast of the Otianai spring, or near junction of Wai-mangeo Stream and Rangitaiki River (Best 1925: 616).

Established in 1869 as a supply depot for Colonel Whitmore's invasion of Te Urewera (Cowan 1983 II: 511). In May it was occupied by 120 Pākehā Armed Constabulary and 418 Māori troops and transport support. Named after the Duke of Edinburgh who visited New Zealand in 1869.

Possibly a small defensive work for stores with an extensive associated camp.

No cultural material or earthworks located in 1982; present condition not known.

5.41 Fort Clarke

V16/265 (2841200E 6331300N); recorded 1982, update 1995.

Matahina; turn left off Matahina Road north of school by old swimming pool, 400 m up a forestry road, then take the left track and walk up spur to the northwest.

Armed Constabulary position, established on 2 May 1869 in Whitmore's invasion of Te Urewera; held by a Māori force under Captain Preece as late as 1871. Named after the expedition's Civil Commissioner H.T. Clarke (Best 1925: 616).

Earthworks defend an area c. 45 × 15 m at the spur end.

Archaeological excavations 1982 and 1983. Under production forest; logging damage.

5.42 Fort Galatea (1)

V17/8 (2835350E 6305600N); N86/7; recorded 1972, update 2004.

Murupara, Fort Galatea Historic Reserve; left bank of Rangitaiki River c. 7 km north by Pokairoa Road from Rotorua–Murupara Road (SH38), near Karamuramu (5.46).

Established and first occupied in Whitmore's Te Urewera campaign by a combined European and Māori force under Major Roberts in April 1869, from where troops entered the bush west of the Rangitaiki River on May 4 (Cowan 1983 II: 338). The name is from HMS Galatea which brought the Duke of Edinburgh to New Zealand in 1869 (see Fort Alfred (5.40)).

Good condition under long grass and weeds (see also Jones & Simpson 1995: 27–28); the barrack building was modified c. 1889 for use as a homestead but was destroyed by arson in 1969; archaeological excavations in 1971 (see Spring-Rice 1983) and again in 1985.

5.43 Fort Galatea (2)

V17/6 (2835250E 6305700N); N86/4; recorded 1970, update 2004; Fig. 55.

Murupara, Fort Galatea Historic Reserve; left bank of Rangitaiki River c. 7 km north by Pokairoa Road from Rotorua–Murupara Road (SH38).

1875 Armed Constabulary redoubt on the terrace near 1869 positions at Karamuramu (5.46) and Fort Galatea (5.42).



Figure 55. Fort Galatea (5.43): the 1875 Armed Constabulary redoubt shown here replaced an 1869 fortification at the locality. *Photo: K.L. Jones 1995.*

Square earthwork c. 60 × 60 ft (18 × 18 m) with bastions at southwest and northeast angles covering all four sides; inside was a barrack building 36 × 16 ft (11 × 5 m), cookhouse and sergeants' quarters.

Good condition; fenced off in long grass and weeds (see Jones & Simpson 1995: 27–28); archaeological excavations 1980–81 (Spring-Rice 1983).

5.44 Hinemoki (1)

V18/12 (2827400E 6279600N); N95/19; recorded 1971, updates 1978, 1981, 1988, 1993, 2001.

Whirinaki, Te Urewera; east of Otutakahiao Stream; access via Te Rake Road. 150 m from the associated second Hinemoki pā (5.45).

Two Hinemoki fortifications were built and held in 1865 by Whakatohea, Tuhoe, Ngāti Whare and Patu-Heuheu under Kereopa. Constructed in response to Ngāti Manawa and Ngāti Rangitihī positions at Te Tapiri (5.55) and Okupu (5.50) across the track to the Rangitaiki Plain, by which Kereopa had planned to go to the Waikato. Fighting took place over several weeks in early winter before Ngāti Manawa withdrew (Best 1925: 582–588; Cowan 1983 II: 84–95).

Pā 19 × 11 m on a 3 m high natural mound, the interior platform within a ditch and external bank was largely taken up by five rifle-pits 1.3–1.6 m deep (see Nevin & Nevin 1980).

The site has been progressively cleared of Douglas fir since 1980 and was under scrub and bracken when last inspected in 2001; some pig damage; under active vegetation management.

5.45 Hinemoki (2)

V18/33 (2827500E 6279700N); N95/56; recorded 1978, updates 1978, 1981, 1988, 1994, 2001.

Whirinaki, Te Urewera; east of Otutakahiao Stream; access via Te Rake Road. 150 m from other associated Hinemoki pā (5.44).

For history, see Hinemoki (1).

Low profile, largely rectangular pā 30 × 10 m with rifle-pits or trench behind a defensive bank; six 1–1.5 m deep pits are outside the main east side defences (see Nevin & Nevin 1980).

Bulldozer damage from 1959 land preparation for exotic planting; in 2001 the site in good condition under Douglas fir; under active vegetation management.

5.46 Karamuramu

V17/7 (2835200E 6305550); N86/5; recorded 1970, update 2004; also Fort Galatea.

Murupara, Fort Galatea Historic Reserve; left bank of Rangitaiki River c. 7 km north by Pokairoa Road from Rotorua–Murupara Road (SH38).

A redoubt built in 1869 by Colonel Whitmore’s Ngāti Manawa scouts at the location of their small Karamuramu kāinga; later the site of the 1875 Fort Galatea (section 5.43) officers’ quarters.

Earthwork redoubt at the edge of a scarp above the river valley; 54 × 75 ft (16.5 × 23 m) with one flanking angle.

Mostly in good condition; archaeological excavations in 1980–81 (Spring-Rice 1983).

5.47 Kohi-a-tau

W17; no site record, not located; spelling from Binney (2009: 202), also Kohitau (Cowan 1983 II: 453); Fig. 56.

Maungapohatu; at Hinau-piwai near Torea-a-tai (Best 1925: 662).

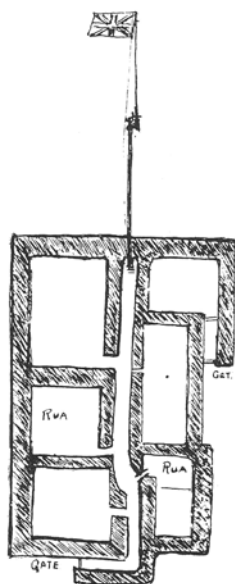


Figure 56. Kohi-a-tau, Maungapohatu: Māori fortification of redoubt form, put up in 1871 by Ngāti Porou in occupying Tuhoe country. From Cowan 1983 II: 453.

Marked out by Rapata Wahawaha in October–November 1871 and held by 30 Ngāti Porou under Ruka Aratapu (Best 1925: 662). Named by Rapata as ‘Gather the Years’ in allusion to the time taken in pursuing Kereopa and Te Kooti (Cowan 1983 II: 453), or referring to ‘... his expected conquest and plunder (‘kohi’) of Tūhoe’ (Binney 2009: 3); abandoned and destroyed within a year.

Small generally rectangular earthwork and stockade (Cowan 1983 II: 453).

Present condition not known.

5.48 Kohimarama

W18; no site record, not located.

Ruatahuna; right bank of Mangaorongo Stream: a little below Orangikawa pā (section 5.51) at Tatahoata (Cowan 1983 II: 454), or at Kiri-tahi (Best 1925: 662).

Redoubt built in November 1871 by Ngāti Porou in pursuit of Te Kooti and Kereopa and their small remaining party. The name, ‘Gather the months’, made a similar reference to Kohi-a-tau (5.47; Cowan 1983 II: 454; Binney 2009: 202).

Described as a redoubt similar to Kohi-a-tau (Cowan 1983 II: 454).

Cowan (1983 II: 353) reports 'ruined earthworks'; present condition not known.

5.49 Koko Tahī

V17/4 (2837100E 6295400N); N86/2; recorded 1969.

Murupara; near Whirinaki Road on the right bank of the Whirinaki River where it leaves the ranges.

Pā built by Ngāti Whare under the chief Matiu c. 1869 (Best 1925: 581).

Under production forest; present condition unknown.

5.50 Okupu

V17/13 (2826800E 6280500N); N95/5; recorded 1969, updates 1978, 1993.

Whirinaki; at Trig 76D, west of Te Taupiri Lookout Road, on escarpment looking west over Whaeo River valley and Rangitaiki Plain; 100 m south of Te Tapiri (5.55).

History as for Te Tapiri.

The two pā covered each other's adjacent sides, Okupu overlooking Te Tapiri. Okupu was c. 40 × 26–10 m, with defences including rifle-pits or trench behind an earth bank (Nevin & Nevin 1980), and palisades (Cowan 1983 II: 87).

Good condition under bracken, flax, grass and scrub: active protection management (Jones & Simpson 1995: 20–24).

5.51 Orangikawa

W18; no site record, not located.

Ruatahuna; above steep right bank of Mangaorongo Stream, near Tatahoata kāinga (Cowan 1983 II: 351).

Paerau's pā was attacked and taken by Lieutenant Colonel St John, May 1869 (Cowan 1983 II: 351–353).

Oblong pā with trench, bank and stockade (Cowan 1983 II: 351).

Present condition not known.

5.52 Tauaroa

V17 (2843000E 6302000E); no site record, not located.

Galatea, Murupara; near mouth of Horomanga Gorge, under the western wall of the Urewera mountains at Tawhiuau hill (all data from Cowan 1983 II: 325).

Pā occupied by Te Kooti's force of 400–500 in the course of his March 1869 withdrawal from Whakatane; an attempt by government troops to surround the pā was unsuccessful and Te Kooti withdrew east into the mountains.

Pā of three stockade lines.

Earthworks and trenches visible to Cowan c. 1920. Present condition not known.

5.53 Te Harema (Salem)

V17/12 (2839700E 6284200N); N95/4; recorded 1969, update 1978.

Te Whaiti; c. 400 m NNE of SH38 junction with Minginui Road, 380 m a.s.l., 500 m SSW of Te Puhī a Kapu (5.54).

Pā of Ngāti Whare supporters of Te Kooti; taken 6 May 1869 by Ngāti Pīkiao under Mair and Te Pōkiha at the head of Whitmore's invasion column (Cowan 1983 II: 340–341; Binney 1995: 164–166).

Pā c. 100 × 75 m, enclosed by an earth bank, with discontinuous rifle trench inside and some burnt stockade posts outside; house floors mark the location of 16 whare inside the pā (see Jones 2004: 118).

Scrub and bush cover burnt off before the 1978 visit, pig-rooting reported; present condition not known.

5.54 Te Puhī a Kapu

V17/11 (2839900N 6284700N); N95/3; recorded 1969, updates 1978, 2003.

Te Whaiti; c. 1 km NNE of SH38 junction with Minginui Road; 424 m a.s.l.; 500 m NNE of Te Harema (5.53).

Built in 1869 as a sacred enclosure (Best 1925: 617–618). One old man and his family were in residence on 6 May 1869 when Ngāti Pīkiao under Mair and Te Pōkiha arrived at the head of Whitmore's invasion column (Cowan 1983 II: 340–341).

Rectangular ditch and bank earthwork with palisade behind the earthworks, c. 31 × 25 m platform on which there was one banked house platform and the bottom of a flagpole in 1978. More than 77 palisade posts lay on the ground (see Jones 2004: 118).

Present condition not known.

5.55 Te Tapiri

V17/33 (2826800E 6280500N); N95/58; recorded 1978, updates 1978, 1993.

Whirinaki; 100 m north of Trig 76D, west of Te Taupiri Lookout Road (different spellings are as given): on the high escarpment looking west over the Wheao River valley and Rangitaiki Plain; 100 m north of Okupu (5.50).

Te Tapiri and Okupu pā were put up and held in 1865 by Ngāti Manawa and Ngāti Rangitīhi (Arawa) on both sides of a track from the Urewera mountains to Rangitaiki Plain, to stop Kereopa's force of Whakatohea, Tuhoe, Ngāti Whare and Patu-Heuheu from going through Ngāti Manawa land to the Waikato (see also the two Hinamoki pā (5.44–45) and Te Tuahu-a-te-Atua (5.56)). Fighting took place over several weeks in early winter before Ngāti Manawa withdrew (Cowan 1983 II: 84–95; see also Best 1925: 582–588).

Pā 64 × 15 m; all of the perimeter was defended by rifle-pits or a trench behind an outer bank; two banked house platforms inside. Cowan (1983 II: 87) refers to palisades.

Vegetation is bracken, flax, grass and scrub; 1988 bulldozing destroyed 30% of the pā area and 20% of the perimeter, since restored but in 1993 again damaged in forestry operations; now under active protection management (Jones & Simpson 1995: 20–24).

5.56 Te Tuahu-a-te-Atua

V17/18 (2827400E 6281900N); Ng5/22; recorded 1976, update 1978.

Whirinaki, Te Urewera; at Trig 76 on escarpment looking west over the Wheao River valley and Rangitaiki Plain; site now occupied by a fire lookout.

A third pā built and held by supporters of Kereopa in the fighting at Te Tapiri in June 1865 (see also 5.44-45). Cowan's Ngāti Manawa informants describe an attack on Te Tuahu-a-te-Atua by a small group of Ngāti Manawa and Ngāti Rangitahi as the most significant single engagement of the fighting (Best 1925: 582-588; Cowan 1983 II: 91-93).

By 1976 the site was completely bulldozed, apparently to prepare the ground for a fire lookout.

6. Central North Island

Fortifications in the Taupo district mostly relate to the Te Kooti Campaign in 1869 and the events that followed. At the south end of Lake Taupo the last significant fighting of the New Zealand Wars took place at Pononga and Te Porere, when Te Kooti's force was pursued by Ngāti Kahungunu, Arawa, Whanganui and Armed Constabulary. In later military activity to 1872, Pākehā forts secured the north end of the lake and the Napier-Taupo Road, to close down the options for Te Kooti's diminished force. Some of these posts were held until the Armed Constabulary was disbanded in 1885. A group of pā near Waiouru dates from a land dispute between Māori groups in 1880 and may be the last to be built in New Zealand.

Central North Island fortifications are listed under:

- Napier-Taupo Road
- South end of Lake Taupo

Note that all seven European forts along the Napier-Taupo Road (now SH5) are included here for convenience, including those at the Hawke's Bay end of the road.

NAPIER-TAUPU ROAD

6.1 Opepe Redoubt

U18/29 (2789600E 6265600N); N103/1; recorded 1966, updates 1999, 2006.

Opepe, Taupo; 15 km from Taupo by the Napier-Taupo Road (SH5), a car park in Opepe Bush gives access by walking track to the site, 100 m south of the road. The Opepe Bush Scenic and Historic Reserve is managed by the Department of Conservation.

In June 1869 a group of 14 Pākehā cavalry volunteers was surprised by Te Kooti's advance party at the junction of several tracks in Opepe Bush, nine being killed. In 1870, the Armed Constabulary put up a 30-man stockade within a redoubt earthwork at Opepe, with barracks, stores and officers' quarters inside. Opepe was the Armed Constabulary district headquarters until 1877 when this was moved to Tapuaeharuru Redoubt (6.4), and Opepe was wound down. From 1871 to 1874 there was a garrison of 44 to 61 men; Opepe was abandoned in January 1885 (Mitchell 1983: 19-23).

The remaining earthwork is c. 20 × 20 m with narrow bastions at east and west angles and an entry on the south side. Hut sites and one surviving building are on the adjacent terrace to the south and a well is in a gully to the east. Nearby are associated remains of a settlement, which included a hotel.

The site is now a scrub and grass clearing in regenerating bush; defensive earthworks are in fair order, and there is one standing hut with pumice block chimney; the site has suffered from fossicking attention (Mitchell 1983: 122).

6.2 Pahautea Stockade

U18/95 (2796900E 6255000N); recorded 1983.

Iwitahi, Rangitaiki; Napier-Taupo Road (SH5) on a spur southeast of the Pahautea Road corner.

Built by Armed Constabulary in 1870, with a 45 ft (13.5 m) well. Abandoned by the end of the year, possibly when the road was completed across the Kaingaroa Plain (Mitchell 1983: 18).

Described as 'substantial stockade' in one 1870 report and 40-man redoubt in another (Mitchell 1983: 18).

Bulldozed, disced, burned over and under pines when recorded in 1983.

6.3 Runanga Stockade

V19/14 (2813700E 6244850N); N104/8; recorded 1975, update 1983; Fig. 57.

Rangitaiki; 1.6 km southwest of the Napier-Taupo Road and Waiarua Stream on a broad ridge, c. 1000 m a.s.l.

One of several Armed Constabulary posts along the Napier-Taupo Road. Established in September 1869, with a flanked stockade and buildings inside completed by May 1870. The stockade was reshaped and enlarged in 1871, although the garrison was only 30 men that year. In 1874 the garrison was 16 men; the post was abandoned in March 1876 (Mitchell 1983: 14-15).

Archaeological excavations in 1983 and 1984, showed a generally rectangular work, c. 30 × 22 m, marked by a 1 m high bank, with triangular bastions at the centre of three sides, except the southeast side where there is a larger square-fronted bastion next to the entrance (Mitchell n.d.: 21-26). Inside were five buildings around a small yard. Cowan (1983 II: 513) tells of a stockade with bastion defence at two opposite corners, built in 'Māori style' of 10-11 ft (c. 3 m) timbers, loopholed at ground level with an internal firing trench. The archaeological excavations found this earlier 25-20 × 18 m stockade under the later work (Mitchell n.d.: 26-28). Nearby, on the south side of the spur is a line of dug-out living huts.

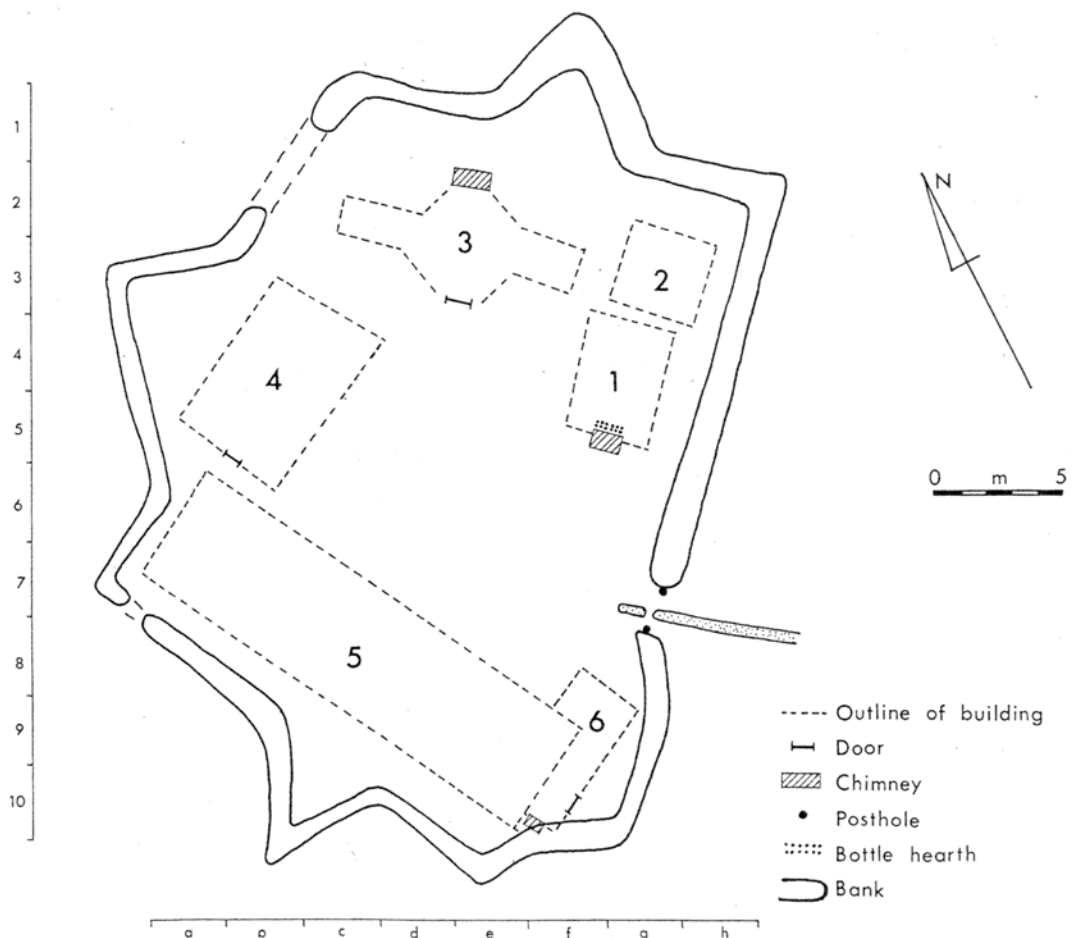


Figure 57. Runanga Stockade, Napier-Taupo Road: a 1 m high bank defines the 1871-76, c. 30 × 22 m stockade. From Mitchell, n.d.: Fig. 14.

The site is in an historic reserve, except the northeast side of the stockade which is outside the reserve boundary. In 1983 it was in good condition under low scrub but for bulldozing of the reserve fence-line and discing outside; some fossicking. Present condition not known.

6.4 Tapuaeharuru Redoubt

U18/2 (2776850E 6275150N); N94/2; recorded 1973, update 2006.

Taupo; Taupo Domain on terrace edge overlooking Waikato River near the lake outlet; access from Story Place; historic reserve.

Established by Armed Constabulary in early 1870 at one end of a line of posts along Napier-Taupo Road; prompted by Te Kooti's activity in Te Urewera and the Lake Taupo district (Adams 1985). The initial redoubt is said to have held 150 men in tents, but in 1871-74 the garrison was 18-24 men; abandoned in January 1885 (Mitchell 1983: 24-25).

Archaeological remains of a 30 × 30 m ditch-and-bank earthwork with a large rounded bastion at the northeast corner; a magazine made of pumice blocks inside the redoubt was largely rebuilt in the 1960s. The historical record of an initial larger work is not confirmed on the ground, but may be located by geophysical work or excavation.

Good order under mown grass, some trees at the west end. Historic reserve; the pumice magazine has Heritage New Zealand Category II registration.

6.5 Tarawera Stockade

V19/26 (2819300E 6234500N); recorded 1983.

Tarawera; on the high terrace above Waipunga River east of the Napier-Taupo Road, 1 km south of Tarawera Hotel, 200 m north of a road works depot.

Armed Constabulary post 1870-1877; diminishing garrison of 39 to 16 men 1871-1874 (Mitchell 1983: 11-14).

Was at first a stockade enclosing 10,000 square ft (930 m²) for 150 men flanked by two 20-man single-storey blockhouses, 16 × 16 ft (c. 5 × 5 m), 'built in the American fashion', with bullet-proof ceilings for protection against fire from surrounding hills (data from Mitchell 1983: 11-14). The stockade was of an unusual triangular plan, with blockhouses at the east and south angles. Rebuilt in 1874 to 125 yards (114 m) circumference, with a 12 ft (3.7 m) palisade and an earth breastwork 6 × 4 ft (1.8 × 1.2 m).

Department of Conservation historic reserve. No trace of breastwork in 1983; some damage reported from 1996 gorse clearing; present condition not known.

6.6 Te Haroto Blockhouse

V19/24 (2822100E 6223700N); recorded 1983.

Te Haroto, Napier-Taupo Road (SH5); access 1 km south of Te Haroto store, then via side-road to the east into the pine forest, to a left fork c. 200 m from SH5; the site is left of the road immediately after the fork in the road.

Armed Constabulary post established in 1869; held by 35 men in 1869, 16 in 1872, and two in 1874; abandoned by 1875 (Mitchell 1983: 9-11).

A two-storey blockhouse for 50 men was built in 1870, with 24 × 24 ft (7 × 7 m) square upper floor extending out from the lower floor all round. A cellar gave access by covered way to a well 20 m east (Mitchell 1983: 10).

In 1983 only the blockhouse cellar was visible on the surface, the site having been largely destroyed by road works and fossickers not long before. Present condition not known.

6.7 Titiokura Stockade

V20/76 (2827900E 6215400N); recorded 1983.

Titiokura; top of saddle, a few metres east of Napier-Taupo Road (SH5); a farm road skirts the site, power pylons are adjacent.

Exposed site with wide views west to Te Haroto; occupied briefly in 1869 for protection of the district and telegraph (Mitchell 1983: 8–9).

Stockade c. 40 × 27 m, with two bastions at diagonally opposite corners.

In 1983 under pasture; three corners including parts of both bastions were identified on the ground. Present condition is not known.

SOUTH END OF LAKE TAUPO

6.8 Auahitotara

T21 (2748750E 6189450N); no site record, not located.

Waiouru; 8 km east of town by Home Valley Road and Moawhango Bridge Road, 400 m south of the road junction where Moawhango Bridge Road turns sharply north, on or near Auahitotara ('No 2C' trig, 1147 m a.s.l.).

Pā built early in 1880 by Ngāti Rangituhia (Whanganui) under Te Keepa Rangihwinui ('Major Kemp'), Te Oti and Winiata, to claim land in the district (Wylie 2006: 123). Opposed by Ngāti Whitikaupeka and Ngāti Tamakopiri of Moawhango, inland Patea district, who were in the two Waiiau pā, 5 km southeast (6.18–19).

Present condition not known.

6.9 Donnelly's Fort

U21/1 (2779200E 6187700N); N123/1; recorded 1965.

Napier-Taihape Road; Northern Mangaohane Block, south of 'F' trig, 1010 m a.s.l., c. 500 m north of road, north of stream.

Gunfighter pā built c. 1881, associated with Mangaohane earthwork (6.10).

Rectangular earthwork with flanking angles.

Present condition not known.

6.10 *Mangaohane earthwork*

U21/2 (2779100E 6187800N); N123/2; recorded 1965.

Napier-Taihape Road; Northern Mangaohane Block, near 'F' trig, 1010 m a.s.l., and c. 600 m north of road; north of stream.

Gunfighter pā built c. 1881, associated with Donnelly's Fort (6.9).

Present condition not known.

6.11 Poutu

T19/167 (2748200N 6233600E); N112/114; recorded 1966, update 1989.

Lake Rotoaira; on scarp north of Poutu Stream mouth; access from McDonnell's Redoubt Road.

Rifle trenches indicate Māori origin.

Probably occupied by Māori who were part of the government force pursuing Te Kooti in spring 1869 (Newman 1988: 82; Walton 1989; see also Poutu Redoubt (6.12)).

Archaeological excavations 1966. Present condition not known.

6.12 Poutu Redoubt

T19/166 (2748050N 6233400E); N112/113; recorded 1966; also McDonnell's Redoubt; Fig. 58.

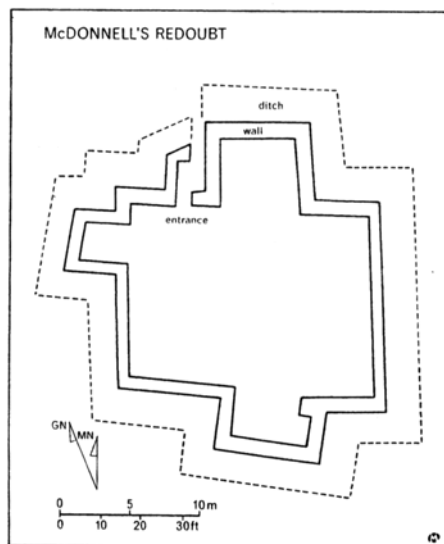


Figure 58. Poutu Redoubt, Lake Rotoaira. From N.Z.A.A. Site Record.

Lake Rotoaira; south of Poutu Stream mouth; access from McDonnell's Redoubt Road.

Dates from the 1869 fighting between government and Te Kooti's forces. Named 'McDonnell's Redoubt' only after European material was recovered in 1966–67 excavations, but Walton (1989: 14) has suggested it was first built by Te Kooti in August 1869, and on 12 September taken over and modified by McDonnell's combined Armed Constabulary and Māori force (see Poutu (6.11)).

Off-square bastioned earthwork with external ditch.

Reconstructed by Ministry of Works in the 1970s, but after erosion of the light pumice soil, walls and ditch were returned to a stable contour in 1977 (Walton 1989).

6.13 Tauranga Taupo

T18/T19; no site record, not located.

Lake Taupo; near lake shore by Tauranga Taupo Stream.

Pā erected in two days in September 1869 by Henare Tomoana and c. 120 Ngāti Kahungunu, who were the first government troops to reach the south end of Lake Taupo in pursuit of Te Kooti. Attacked on 10 September by Te Kooti, who withdrew next day to Te Ponanga (Cowan 1983 II: 373; Binney 1995: 182–184).

A contemporary plan shows a work above the bank to stream, angled for gun defence (Wilson 1961: 35; Binney 1995: 183).

Present condition not known.

6.14 Te Ponanga

T19/61 (2748500N 6240900E); N112/7; recorded 1965, update 2006.

Turangi; on a ridge north side of Mt Pihanga, east of Te Ponanga Saddle Road.

Te Kooti's position ('gunfighter pa' in the site records) on the north side of the Te Ponanga saddle was attacked on 25 September 1869 by Ngāti Kahungunu, Arawa and Taupo Māori, and the defenders driven off with some casualties (Wilson 1961; Cowan 1983 II: 374–376).

A series of rifle trenches, 'walls' or 'embankments' and pits extend for c. 100 m length of a c. 50 m wide ridge.

Gradual deterioration in regenerating bush.

Rifle-pit: (T19/71 (2746500E 6238900N); N112/17; recorded 1978). At the Lake Rotoaira end of the Te Ponanga track. Possibly associated with Te Kooti's Te Ponanga position.

6.15 Te Porere (1)

T19/55 (2733900N 6236500E); N112/1; recorded 1965, update 1993; Heritage New Zealand Category I registration 7652 with Te Porere (2) (6.16); Fig. 59.

Te Porere, c. 10 km west of Lake Rotoaira; upper of two associated earthworks, near the bush edge; access from SH47 to car park then by way of a short walking track; historic reserve (6.16).

Te Kooti's main pā at Te Porere where c. 300 defenders were attacked on 4 October 1869 by 100 Armed Constabulary, 100 Whanganui under Keepa Te Rangihwinui, and 300 Arawa, Taupo and Hawke's Bay Māori, all under Colonel Thomas McDonnell. This was the last major fight of the New Zealand Wars and the last attack on a fortification. Defenders were driven into bush behind the pā, leaving 37 dead who were later buried within the earthwork (Wilson 1961; Cowan 1983 II: 376-380; Binney 1995: 185-190).

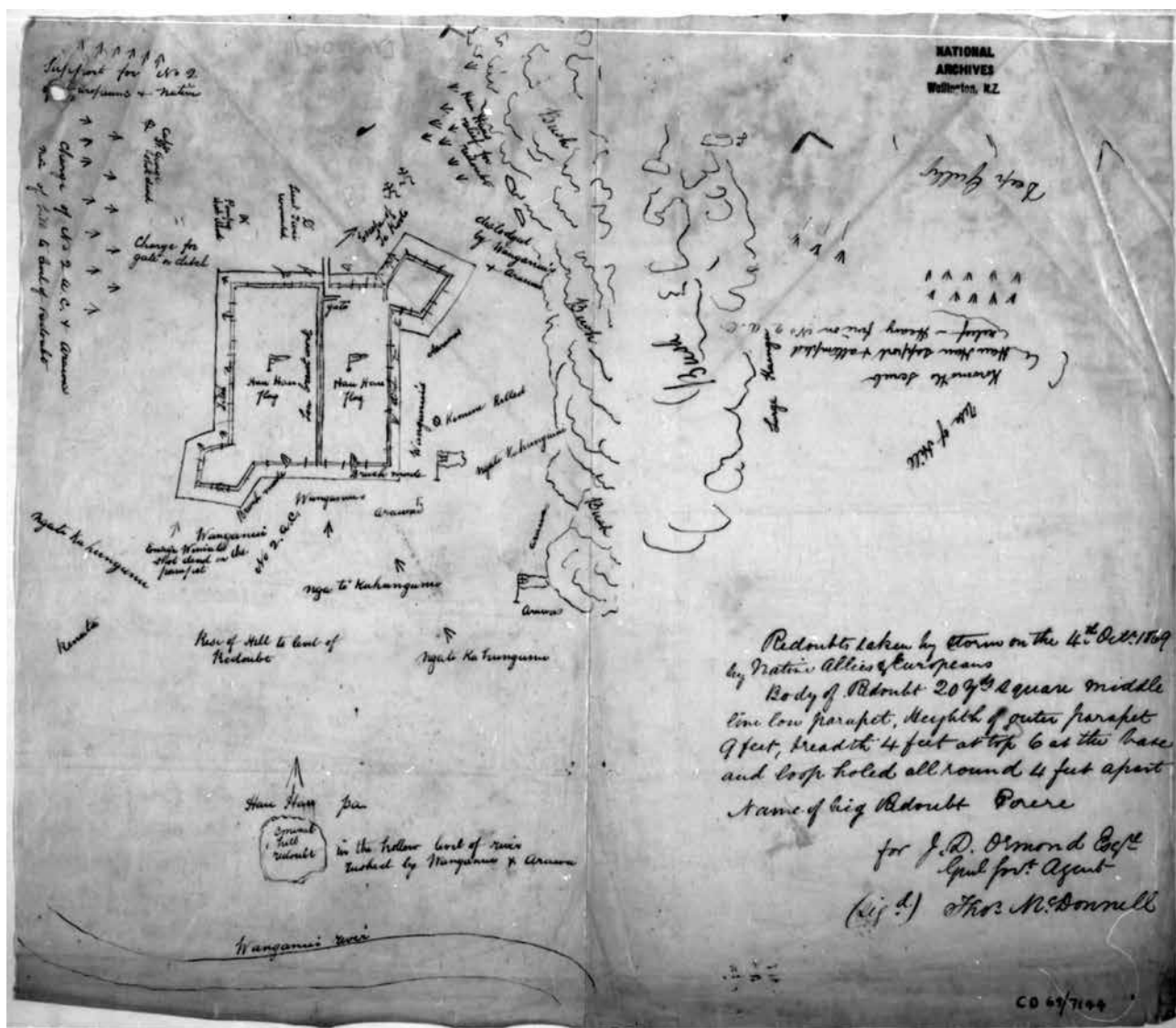


Figure 59. Te Porere: main (upper) pā copies a classic form of European redoubt. Lieutenant Colonel Thomas McDonnell drawing, Archives New Zealand, The Department of Internal Affairs Te Tari Taiwhenua, AD 1 93 1869/144.

A near-square earthwork, interior c. 20 × 20 m, entry defended by interior traverses and divided inside by a low bank. Bastions at two opposite corners cover all sides as in a classic form of Pākehā redoubt (Wilson 1961; App. IV).

Good condition; but reconstructed by NZ Historic Places Trust (now Heritage New Zealand) in 1961; 1993 vegetation cover and site condition described by Jones & Simpson (1995: 89–95).

Rifle-pits: T19/116 (2734600E 6235900N); N112/63; recorded 1966

Te Porere; southeast of sites addressed in 6.15–16; south of SH47, next to 751 m a.s.l. ‘Papakai B’ trig. Possible association with the Te Porere engagement.

Shallow rifle trench with parapet on the east side; two storage(?) pits nearby. Present condition not known.

6.16 Te Porere (2)

T19/56 (2734300N 6236500E); N112/2; recorded 1965, update 1993; also Roipara (Cowan 1983 II: 376); Heritage New Zealand Category I registration 7652 with site in 6.15; Fig. 60.

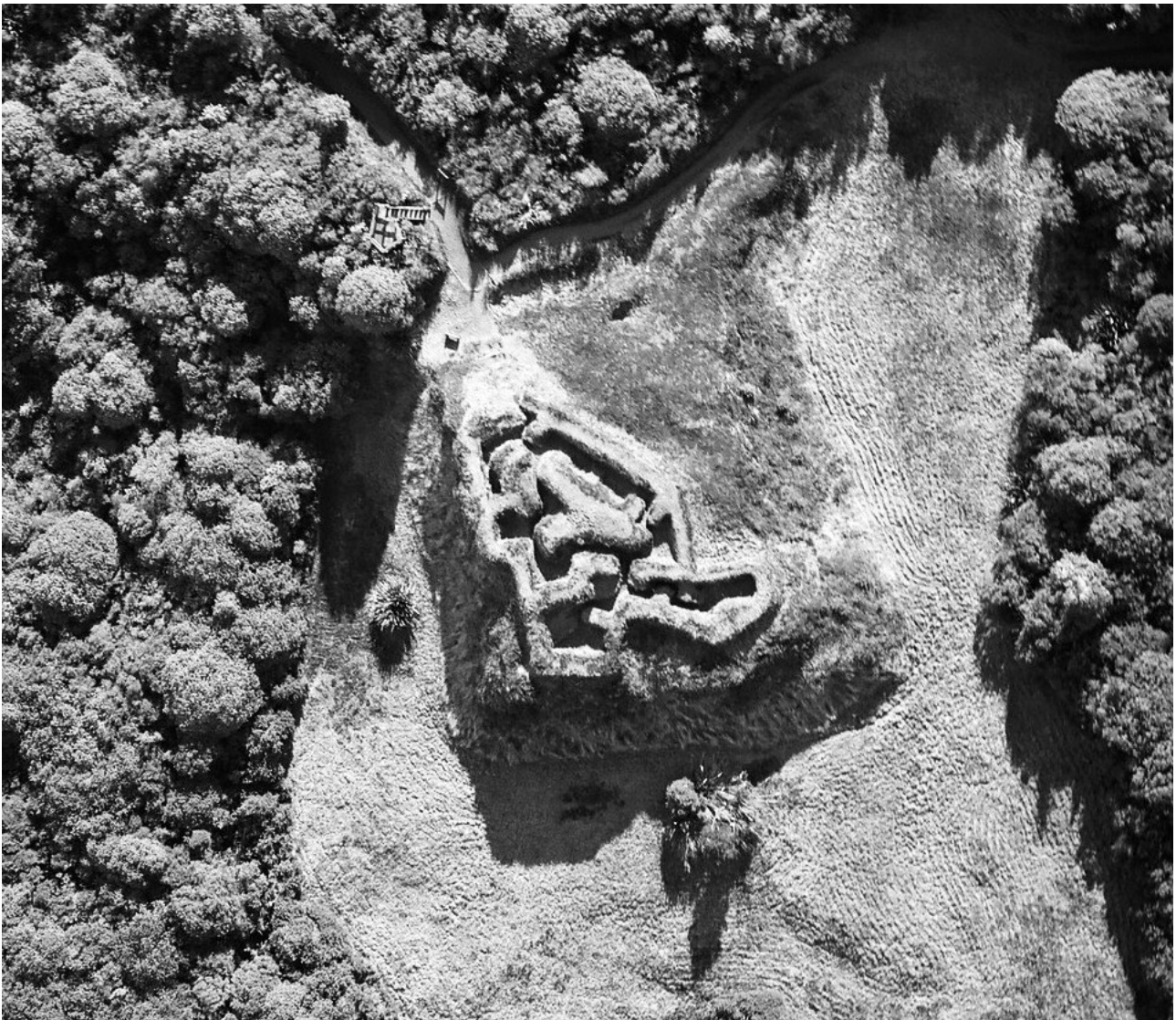


Figure 60. Roipara, Te Porere: the lower pā has the complex interior characteristic of Māori fortifications. *Photo: K.L. Jones, 2005.*

Te Porere, near Lake Rotoaira; lower Te Porere earthwork; access to historic reserve from SH47.

For history see Te Porere (6.15).

Irregular compact rifle trench earthwork on small knoll above west bank of a headwater stream of the Whanganui River (C. Smart in Wilson 1961; App. IV).

Good condition; but reconstructed by NZ Historic Places Trust (now Heritage New Zealand) in 1961; vegetation cover and site condition in 1993 described by Jones & Simpson (1995: 89-95).

6.17 Te Wehengaiti

T19/41 (2736400E 6242300N); N102/45; recorded 1966, update 1993; Fig. 61.

Lake Rotoaira; on a terrace edge c. 500 m west of Otamangakau Dam.

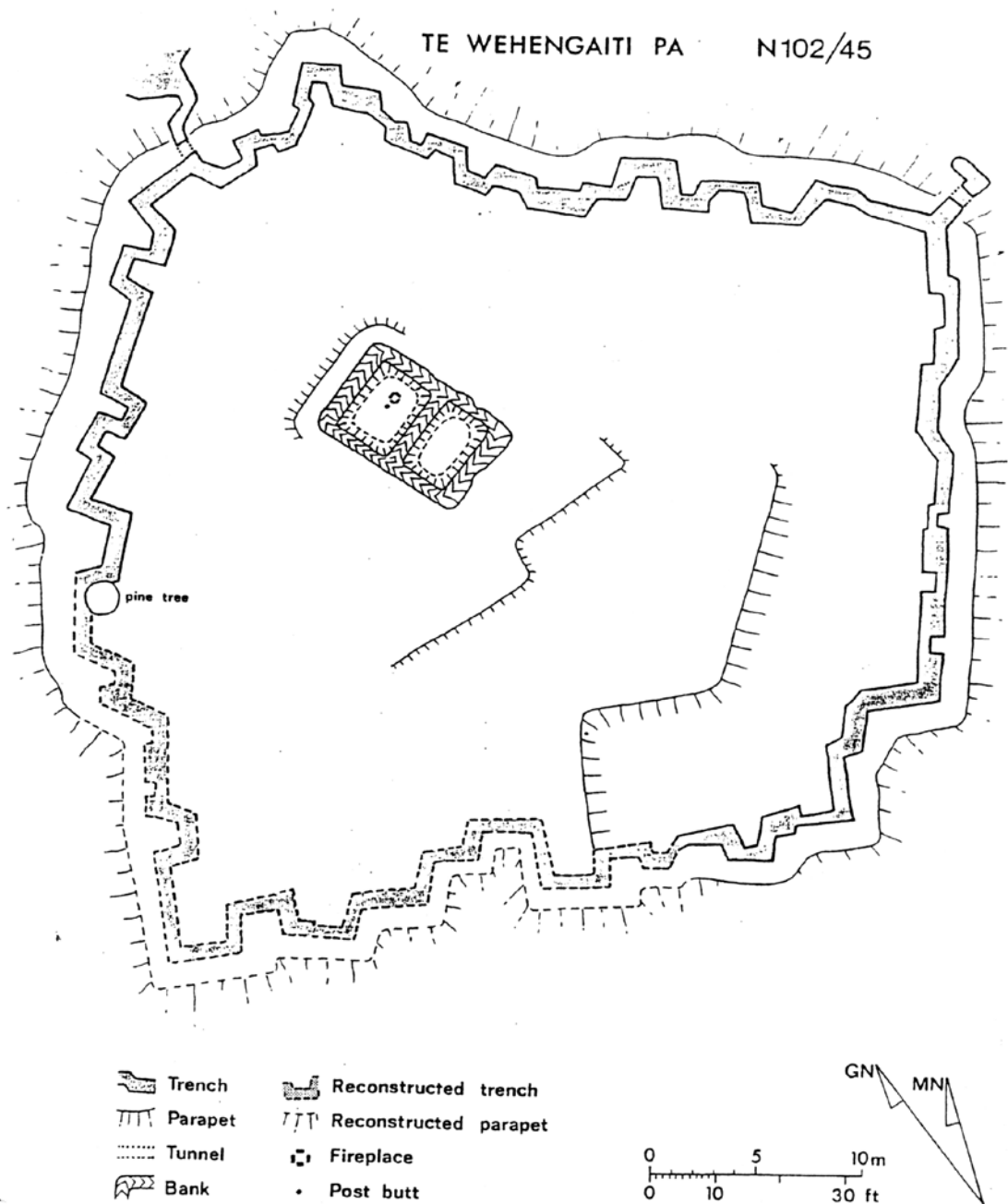


Figure 61. Te Wehengaiti, Lake Rotoaira: an 1860s pā probably dating from the 1869 fighting in the district. From N.Z.A.A. Site Record.

Earthwork fortification, dated to 1869 Te Kooti campaign from its form, but not known if built by Te Kooti, or by Ngāti Tuwharetoa who were divided in their support and opposition. The name is from early survey maps of the locality, but is not confirmed as that of the recorded earthwork (see Newman 1988: 124).

An angled and traversed rifle trench and external parapet encloses a rough square of c. 40 × 40 m. Tunnels connect outlying rifle-pits at two corners.

Damaged by logging in the 1930s. Under scrub in 1966 when much of the western perimeter was restored. In 1993 under grass and bracken surrounded by pine forest (Jones & Simpson 1995: 95–96).

6.18 Waiu (1)

T21/1 (2750480N 6185610N); N132/1; recorded 1959, updates 1971, 1993, 2004; Fig. 62.

Waiouru; within the Army Training Area, 10 km east of Waiouru, north of Hautapu Stream; 250 m NNW of site in **6.19**.

One of two pā built and briefly occupied in early 1880 by Ngāti Whitikaupeka and Ngāti Tamakopiri of Moawhango, Inland Patea district, in response to land claim by Te Keepa Rangihiwini and Ngāti Rangituhia of Whanganui (Wylie 2006). Occupied on 22 February 1880 by 45 men and 12 women (Wylie 2006: 124).

Gunfighter pā, L-shaped, c. 33 × 21–14 m, with traversed firing trench all round and outlying rifle-pits at the southwest and northeast corners.

Tussock cover; good condition under army protection. Vegetation cover and site condition described in Jones & Simpson (1995: 96–100).

6.19 Waiu (2)

T21/2 (2750570N 6185390E) N132/2; recorded 1960, updates 1993, 2004.

Waiouru; 10 km east of Waiouru, north of Hautapu Stream, within the Army Training Area; 250 m SSE of site in **6.18**.

For history, see **6.18**.

Gunfighter pā, c. 30 × 20 m, L-shaped with traversed firing trench all round.

Tussock cover; poor earthwork definition. Vegetation cover and site condition described in Jones & Simpson (1995: 96–100).

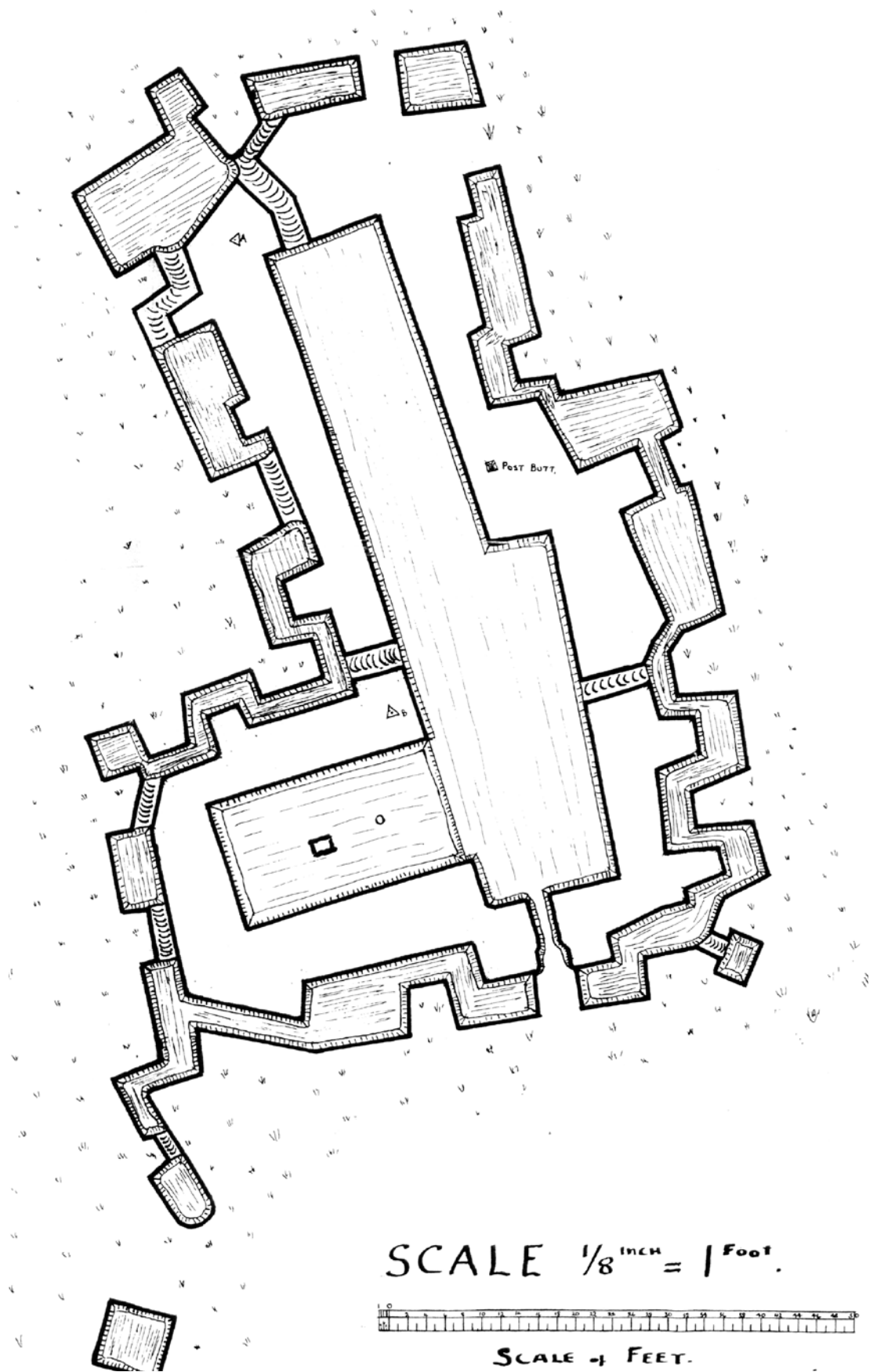


Figure 62. Waiu (1), Waiouru: one of two Waiu pā east of Waiouru dating from inter-tribal conflict in early 1880. From N.Z.A.A. Site Record.

7. Poverty Bay and East Coast

The first fighting in the Poverty Bay and East Coast regions took place in 1865 at Tokomaru Bay, Waiapu and Hicks Bay, mostly between sections of the Ngāti Porou tribe (Cowan 1983 II: 117–123; Soutar 2000). On one side were Pai Marire ('Hau Hau') or 'Kingite' forces and on the other 'Queenite' Māori forces and allied Pākehā. There followed a six-day siege of the Pai Marire pā Waerenga-a-Hika in Poverty Bay in November 1865, resulting in surrender of the pā and the deaths of 11 men on the government side and more than 100 Pai Marire (Cowan 1983 II: 124–128).

On 10 July 1868, Te Kooti Arikirangi and 300 followers landed at Whareongaonga, south of Poverty Bay, having escaped from imprisonment on the Chatham Islands. This led to fighting in the next four years over much of the central and eastern North Island, with fortifications involved at Ngatapa (7.5), inland of Poverty Bay in December 1868 and January 1869, at Whakatane in March 1869 (5.31, 5.34), Mohaka in April 1869 (8.1, 8.6), and in October 1869 at Te Porere (6.15–16), south of Lake Taupo (Cowan 1983: II ; Binney 1995: 87–208).

Fortifications in this section are listed under:

- Poverty Bay
- East Coast

POVERTY BAY

7.1 Crow's Nest

X17/32 (2908600E 6288600N); recorded 1991, update 1999.

Ngatapa; 800 m east of Ngatapa Trig, on the crest of prominent ridge forming the right flank of the approach to Ngatapa pā (7.5).

Initial position used to mortar Ngatapa in December 1868 and January 1869 (Cowan 1983 II: 275, 277; Binney 1995: 135–147).

Curved c. 7 m long trench across ridge.

Under pasture in 1999; 1 m from top of bank to bottom of ditch.

7.2 Fort Richmond

X17/34 (2910300E 628700N); recorded 1991, update 1999.

Ngatapa; on the main east–west ridge north of Wharekopae River; 500 m east of high point of ridge marked '497 m' on the NZMS 260 map.

A lightly defended post used on the second approach to Ngatapa (7.5) at the end of December 1868 and in January 1869 (Cowan 1983 II: 270–284; Binney 1995: 131–147).

Scarped platform c. 14 × 10 m with two indistinct depressions.

Under pasture; in 1991 said by landowner to have been more distinct before being disced c. 30 years before; in 1999 the platform was defined by a slight ditch or scarp.

7.3 *Gisborne trench*

Y18/426 (2947200E 6269600N); recorded 1998.

Gisborne; from Police Station at the corner of Childers Road and Peel Street to PSIS building at the Gladstone Road and Lowe Street corner.

Military trench dug 19 April 1869 by volunteers from Poverty Bay Militia and Poverty Bay Mounted Rifles.

Archaeological excavations recorded a ditch 1.15 m deep at Childers Rd, and 600 mm wide, 800 mm deep at the PSIS corner.

All of the trench is now beneath roads, buildings and covered yards.

7.4 *Makaretu rifle-pits*

X17/33 (2912300E 6285300N); recorded 1991, update 1999.

Rere/ Makaretu; ridge c. 800 m southeast of Rere Falls and road junction, along 500 m of ridge above the Wharekopae Road.

Defensive positions on high ground commanding approach to Te Kooti's Te Karetu pā (7.7) near the river at Makaretu, November–December 1868. On 3 December Ngāti Kahungunu from Wairoa and Ngāti Porou drove Te Kooti's men from the Makaretu positions back to Te Karetu pā, which was also quickly abandoned. Te Kooti lost c. 60 men in the fight and withdrew to Ngatapa (7.5) c. 4 km northwest (Cowan 1983 II: 270–273; Binney 1995: 131–135).

Rifle-pits and trenches are in three or four groups over c. 500 m of curving ridgeline on the approach to Te Karetu.

Under pasture; some stock damage, erosion and bulldozing, the 1999 survey noted that features were further eroded since 1991.

7.5 *Ngatapa*

X17/1 (2907800E 6288800N); N97/6; recorded 1968, update 1990; Fig. 63.

Ngatapa; access from Patutahi via Wharekopae Road, visible to the north from Rere Falls as the central of three similar hills; Ngatapa Trig 703 m a.s.l.

Work began on re-fortifying the pre-European hill-top Ngatapa pā prior to the 3 December 1868 defeat at Te Karetu (7.7), after which Te Kooti moved all his force of c. 300 fighters plus women and children to Ngatapa. On 5 December, Ngatapa was attacked by Ngāti Porou and Ngāti Kahungunu from Wairoa following up from the Te Karetu fight, but the attack was called off after a day and a night. On 31 December a larger Armed Constabulary and Ngāti Porou force began an attack with occupation of the Crow's Nest (7.1) c. 800 m to the east. They soon took the two outer defensive lines on the Ngatapa hill-top, cutting off the water supply. Te Kooti withdrew on the night of 4 January 1869, but was followed up and 120 men were captured and shot by Ngāti Porou (Cowan 1983 II: 270–284; Binney 1995: 131–147).

Ngatapa pā took up a triangular hill-top plateau, c. 150 × 80 m, rising and narrowing to the west. At first, three trenches of the pre-European pā across the narrow upper part of the hill-top were strengthened. After the first attack of early December 1868, two outer defensive lines were added across the lower and broader part of the plateau.

In 1990 the site was mostly in good condition with grass and scrub covering the defensive lines, short sections of attacking trench and other features including what is said to be a church platform.

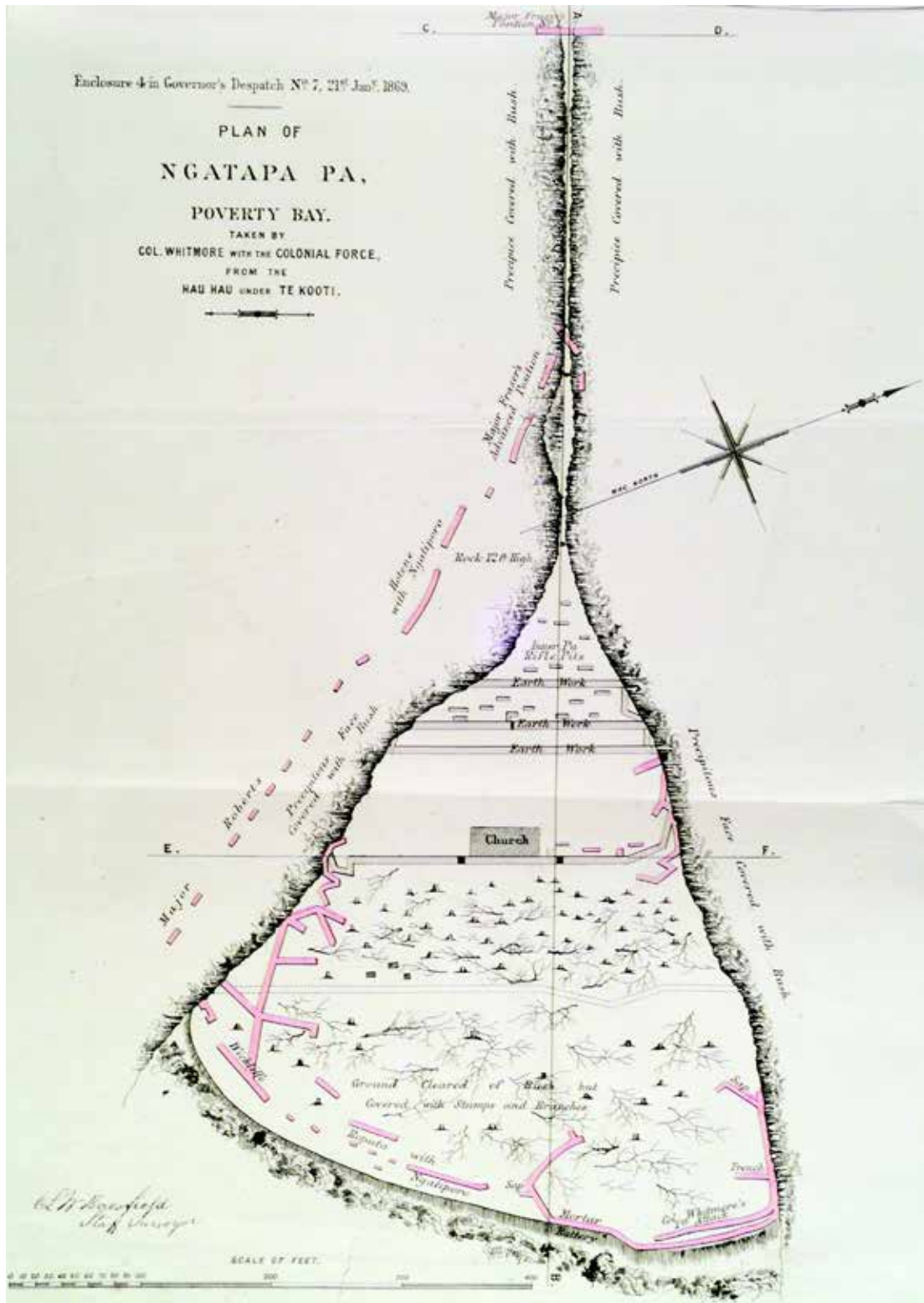


Figure 63. Ngatapa: a series of defensive lines cross the narrowing upper end of Te Kooti's hill-top pā. The plan also shows the disposition of troops in early January 1869 and trenches used by the attacking forces to get close to the defences. From *GBPP 1868-69* xlv (307) p. 346.

7.6 Pukeamionga

Y18/135 (2935500E 6273750N); recorded 1985, update 1999.

Patutahi; 1 km south of the township on top of the largest of three hills; 500 m south of the intersection of Wharekopae and Kaimai Roads.

Pā built and occupied by Pai Marire supporters in spring 1865, at same time as Waerenga-a-Hika (Cowan 1983 II: 125).

Off-square pā, c. 60 × 40 m, with bank and interior ditch. Large terrace 20 m to the northeast and scattered depressions on the broad ridge 200–300 m to the west.

Poor condition under pasture; ditch and bank damaged by cultivation, especially at the west end of the earthwork which is largely destroyed.

7.7 Te Karetu

X17 (2912100E 6286250N); no site record, not located.

Rere/ Makaretu; from Wharekopae Road at Rere Falls, 500 m up Rere Farm Settlement Road, on a low hill on the left bank of Makaretu Stream.

This was Te Kooti's main camp in November–December 1868 (7.4). Attacked by Ngāti Kahungunu from Wairoa and Ngāti Porou on 3 December with some loss of life, Te Kooti then withdrawing to Ngatapa (7.5).

Described as a 'Canvas town' enclosed by large ditch and parapet (Binney 1995: 132).

Under pasture and trees; condition not known.

7.8 Waerenga-a-Hika

Y18/163 (2938750E 6277950N); recorded 1985, update 1999; Fig. 64.

Waerengaahika, Gisborne; SH2, from behind St Luke's Church to the scarp of an old Waipaoa River channel.

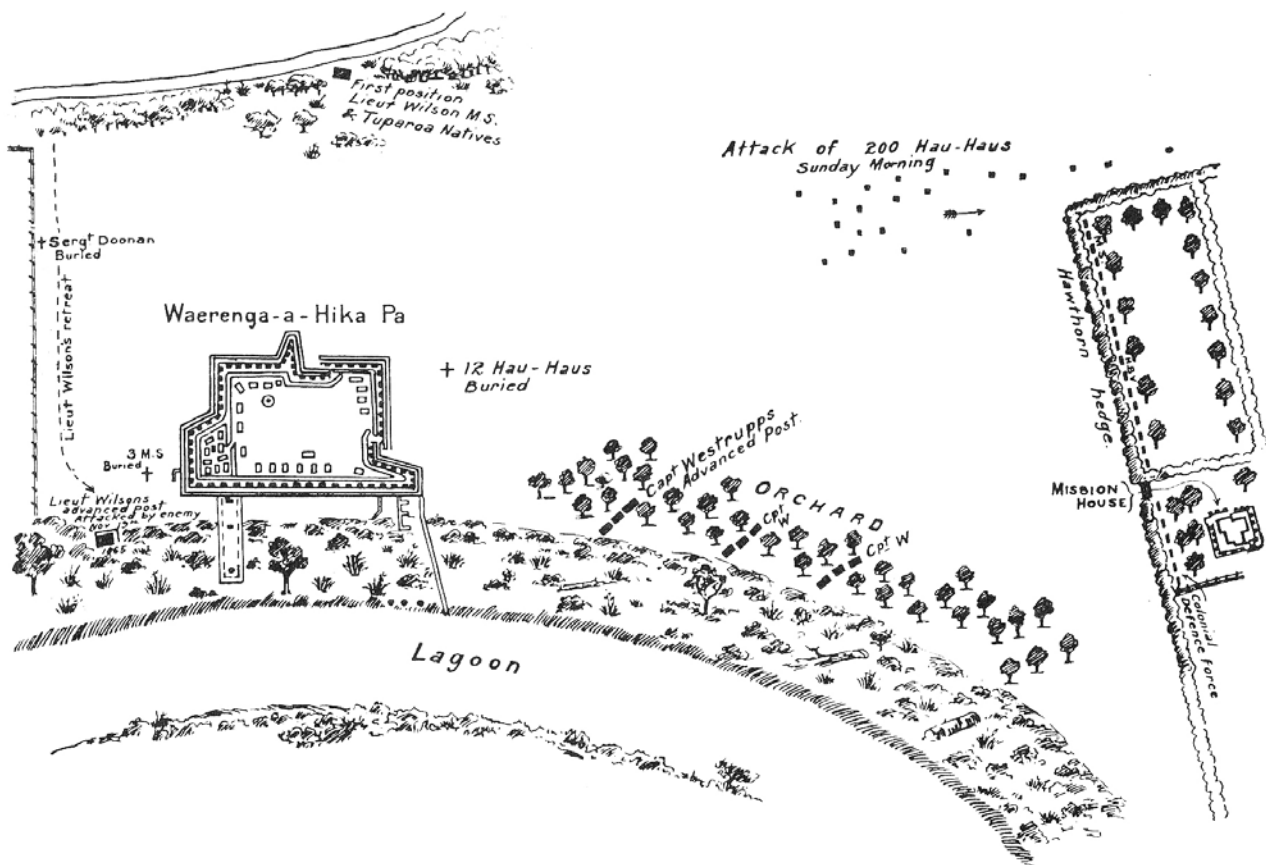


Figure 64. Waerenga-a-Hika. From Cowan 1983 II: 124

Pai Marire supporters fortified Waerenga-a-Hika pā at the terrace edge above an old channel of the river, 300 m from a mission house. A seven-day siege in November 1865 resulted in more than 100 defenders killed and 11 deaths among the attackers (Cowan 1983 II: 124–128).

A rectangular earthwork c. 120 × 50–60 m is clearly visible in a 1948 aerial photograph (Jones 1994: 151); some pā remains and the nearby two-storey mission house are shown in a photograph from shortly after the battle (see Prickett 2002: 129).

No remains visible in 1999 in the area behind the church; not visible on Google Earth (2010 image).

EAST COAST

7.9 Hungahungatoroa

Z14/91(2976400E 6380600N); N62/317; recorded 1979.

Te Araroa; north side of Karakatuwheroa River valley, c. 150 m a.s.l. on spur.

Pai Marire pā occupied after Pukemaire (7.15) was abandoned. On 11 October 1865, a combined Māori and Pākehā force under Rapata Wahawaha and Lieutenant Biggs occupied higher ground near the pā in the bush surrounded by cliffs and demanded its surrender. Ngāti Porou numbering 200 men and 300 women and children came out by hapu, c. 60 men of other tribes were not offered a chance to surrender and escaped into the bush (Cowan 1983 II: 121–122; Soutar 2000: 288–293).

7.10 Kotare

Z14; no site record, not located.

Kawakawa (Hicks Bay); occupied by Pai Marire, taken August 1865 by Kohere and others (Soutar 2000: 276–277).

7.11 Makeronia

Z14/96 (2978200E 6390050N); N63/4; recorded 1978.

Hicks Bay; above the wharf at Wharekahika.

Makeronia (Macedonia) is said to have been an older pā modified for gun fighting, attacked by Pai Marire in August 1865 (Soutar 2000: 275).

7.12 Manawahikitia

Z14/102 (2979500E 6390000N); N63/10; recorded 1978; Fig. 65.

Hicks Bay; on terrace above 20 m sea cliff, 1.2 km east of the old Hicks Bay wharf.

One of two pā, with Makeronia (7.11) a few hundred metres west, of the chief Houkamau, attacked by Pai Marire in August 1865 (Soutar 2000: 275).

Perimeter bank defence, now 1–1.5 m high and 1.5 m wide at the base, except at the cliff edge, encloses a roughly pentagonal area of c. 1.2 ha. A rectangular banked enclosure c. 50 × 20 m at the inland (north) angle may have been a strong point. Outside the north and northwest sides is a line of 10–12 irregular rifle-pits.

Under gorse and pasture; ploughed interior but defensive banks in fair condition.



Fig. 65. Manawahikitia, Hicks Bay: earthwork bank encloses area c. 1.2 ha, 1865. *Photo: K.L. Jones, 1992.*

7.13 Pakairomiromi

Z15; no site record, not located.

East of Rangitukia, Waiapu (Soutar 2000: 267).

On 2 August 1865 the Pai Marire pā, Pakairomiromi, was attacked and taken by a largely European force under Major James Fraser, who came from Te Hatepe (7.19) south of Waiapu River, after which the pā was destroyed and the attackers returned to Hatepe (Cowan 1983 II: 119; Soutar 2000: 273–275).

The pā was in the form of a large square with flanking bastions at two opposite corners; a 10 ft (3 m) high stockade was loopholed near the ground with a firing trench inside.

7.14 Pukeamaru

Z14; no site record, not located.

Kawakawa (Hicks Bay); an old pā surrounded by cliffs, re-used by Pai Marire in August 1865, attacked and taken by Kohere and others (Soutar 2000: 276).

7.15 Pukemaire

Z15; no site record, not located.

Waiapu; pā made up of two large fortified areas joined by a covered walkway, held by 400–500 Pai Marire, unsuccessfully attacked by Major Fraser and Rapata Wahawaha in bitter weather on 3 October 1865. A second attack on 8 or 9 October found the pā abandoned (Cowan 1983 II: 121; Soutar 2000: 284–288).

7.16 Pukepapa

Z16/112 (2973700E 6328400N); N81/73; recorded 1983, update 1996; Fig. 66.

Tokomaru Bay; now marked by a communication mast on top of a prominent hill, c. 2 km inland of the SH35 road bridge at Tokomaru Bay.

Pai Marire pā, abandoned in the face of an attack by Henare Potae and Rapata Wahawaha on 19 August 1865 (Cowan 1983 II: 119–120; Soutar 2000: 277, 279–280).

Fortification defined by a trench enclosing c. 60 × 30 m rectangle, without flanking defence, at top of hill.

Under pasture; the trenches were already largely infilled in 1983; one surviving terrace on the east side.

7.17 Tahutahupo

Z16; no site record, not located.

Hikuwai, inland southwest of Tokomaru Bay; Pai Marire pā attacked on 21 August 1865 (Soutar 2000: 280–281).

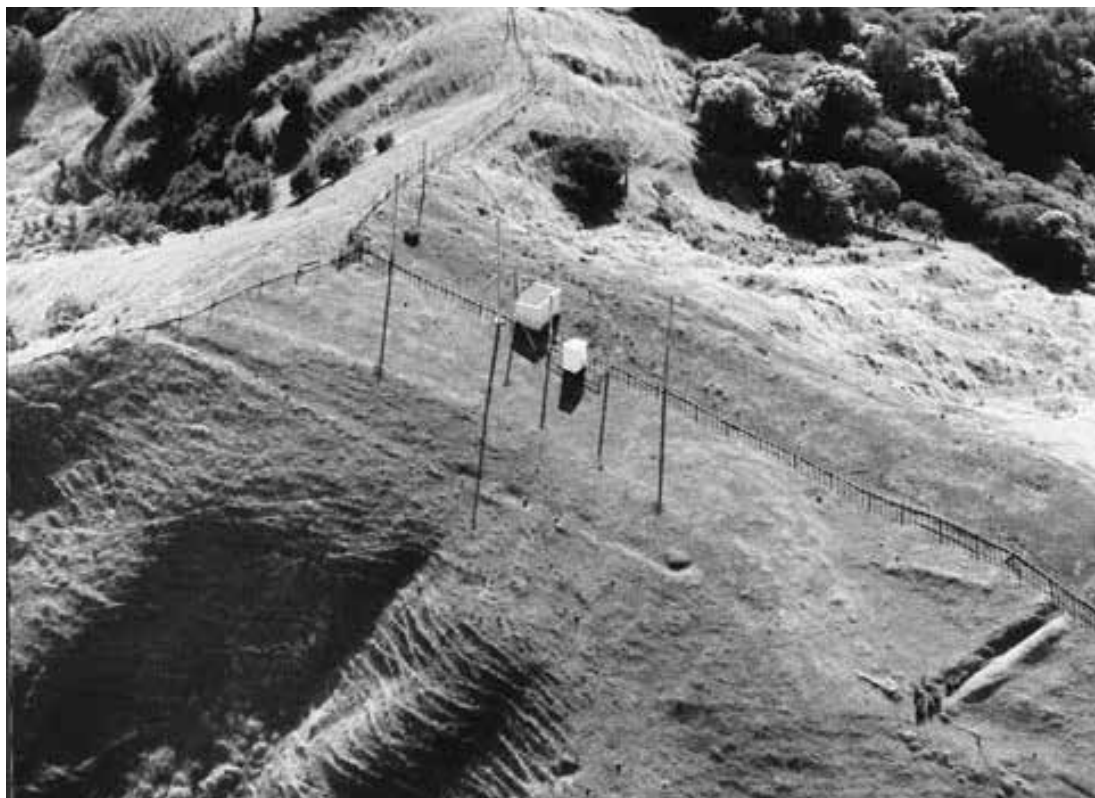


Figure 66. Pukepapa, Tokomaru Bay: 1865 rectangular earthwork c. 60 × 30 m. Photo: K.L. Jones, 1992.

7.18 Tautini

Z16; no site record, not located.

Tokomaru Bay, on the ridge leading up to Pukepapa (7.16) from the bay; Pai Marire pā attacked and taken in August 1865 by Henare Potae and Rapata Wahawaha (Cowan 1983 II: 119–120; Soutar 2000: 279).

7.19 Te Hatepe

Z15; no site record, not located.

Lower Waiapu valley, near the sea, north of the river; pā of Mokena Kohere and ‘Queenite’ Ngāti Porou, in July 1865 reinforced by 100 militia under Major James Fraser (Cowan 1983 II: 118–119). Te Hatepe was at the centre of fighting in the district until the nearby Pai Marire pā, Pakairomiromi (7.13), was taken in early August 1865 (Soutar 2000: 268–270).

7.20 Te Mawhai

Z16; no site record, not located.

Tokomaru Bay; in late winter 1865 under Henare Potae c. 200 ‘Queenite’ men, women and children, plus some Pākehā whalers from the nearby shore station, fortified an old pā on Te Mawhai Point at the south end of the bay. On 27 September 1865 the pā was unsuccessfully attacked by Pai Marire, despite most of the men being away (Cowan 1983 II: 119–120; Soutar 2000: 282–284).

7.21 Tikapa

Z15; no site record, not located.

Waiapu, south side of river; taken by Pai Marire then retaken by Rapata Wahawaha, 30–31 July 1865.

7.22 Tikitiki

Z15; no site record, not located.

Waiapu; Pai Marire pā found abandoned on 10 June 1865 and occupied by Mokena Kohere and his people from Te Hatepe (7.19; Soutar 2000: 250, 252). On 27 June, recaptured by Pai Marire from Pukemaire (7.15) when most of Kohere’s force was away (Soutar 2000: 266).

8. Hawke's Bay and Wairarapa

Fighting in 1857 between Māori factions in Hawke's Bay led to the arrival of the first British troops, from the 65th Regiment, at Napier on 7 February 1858, with barracks soon built in an earthwork on what is now Hospital Hill. British troops soon established posts at Waipukurau and Waipawamate in the Ruataniwha district. In the 1860s, blockhouses and other works were established in several districts by local residents and militia. On 12 October 1866, a Pai Marire taua (war party), mostly Ngāti Hineuru, was attacked by local Pākehā forces and Ngāti Kahungunu at Omarunui—a kāinga made up of several palisaded enclosures on the right bank of the Tutaekuri River above Taradale.

In northern Hawke's Bay, British troops of the 12th Regiment were stationed at Wairoa by early 1867 (Woodhouse 1970: 17). War came on 9 July 1868 when Te Kooti and his supporters, who had escaped from the Chatham Islands, landed on the coast at Whareongaonga, north of Mahia Peninsula. Most fortifications in Wairoa and its outlying districts date from the military activity that followed. In April 1869 Te Kooti attacked Mohaka, where local Māori withdrew into two pā.

Hawke's Bay and Wairarapa fortifications are listed here under:

- Northern Hawke's Bay
- Central and southern Hawke's Bay
- Wairarapa

Forts on the Napier-Taupo Road are included under 'Central North Island' (6).

NORTHERN HAWKE'S BAY

8.1 Hiruharama

W19/176 (2872600E 6223400N); recorded 1989.

Mohaka; behind Waipapa-a-Iwi marae, the site now occupied by an urupā (burial ground).

One of two pā, with Te Huke (8.6), held by Ngāti Pahauwera against Te Kooti in April 1869. Te Huke was captured, but Hiruharama held out until help arrived and Te Kooti withdrew (Cowan 1983 II: 326-335).

Stockade and earthwork pā.

Location since used as an urupā. No earthworks or other pā remains visible in 1989.

8.2 Marumaru Stockade

X19/270 (2895050E 6246100N); recorded 1988.

Marumaru, Wairoa; between SH36 and the Wairoa River, c. 1 km south of hotel.

Early 1870s Armed Constabulary stockade.

Survey plan SO853/A/5 marks 'Constabulary Camp'; now under homestead, gardens and pasture; no visible evidence in 1988.

8.3 Mohaka Blockhouse

W19/200 (2872200E 6222600N); recorded 1989.

Mohaka; south bank of Mohaka River near river mouth; access via West Beach Road.

Built after the Te Kooti raid on Mohaka in April 1869.

Military blockhouse.

Surface indications of building foundations noted in the 1989 record.

8.4 Onepoto Redoubt

W18/2 (2867300E 6258700N); N105/7; recorded 1980; also Goring's Redoubt after a commanding officer; Fig. 67.

Onepoto, Lake Waikaremoana; a five minute walk from car park at end of track around the lake.

An Armed Constabulary post established in the early 1870s that included a small redoubt, external buildings, parade-ground and stock and horse paddocks. Maintained as part of the military pressure on Te Kooti and his Tuhoe allies.

Irregular four-sided redoubt, 20–12 × 15–12 m, unusually of earth and stone walls, with a partial stockade at the east end facing nearby high ground; interior filled with buildings.

Redoubt walls damaged by foot traffic; some scrub and tree regeneration.



Figure 67. Onepoto Redoubt, Lake Waikaremoana: buildings fill the interior of a small redoubt of earth and stone walls. *Photographer not known, Ref: 1/2-020463-F, Alexander Turnbull Library, Wellington.*

8.5 Te Ariki Redoubt

W19/107 (2879100E 6244200N); recorded 1987.

Ardkeen, Wairoa; 400 m southwest of Waiau and Waikaretaheke River junction, on eastern edge of the river terrace, 30 m north of house and 20 m south of a double concrete power pole.

Built during Colonel Herrick's 1869 advance to Lake Waikaremoana as part of the co-ordinated invasion of Te Urewera (Cowan 1983 II: 360).

Earthwork redoubt; interior 12 × 9 m, enclosed by 1 m wide, 500 mm high bank, with bastions at two opposite corners and ditch outside; no defensive bank on the east side above a natural scarp.

In good condition under pasture in 1987.

8.6 Te Huke

W19/177 (2871900E 6223500N); recorded 1989.

Mohaka; west of Hiruharama (8.1), between urupā and cliff to the Mohaka River.

One of two pā, with Hiruharama, held by Ngāti Pahauwera against Te Kooti in April 1869. Te Huke was entered by subterfuge and most inhabitants killed; Hiruharama held out (Cowan 1983 II: 326–335).

Defensive ditch encloses a rectangular area c. 30 × 40 m to the cliff-top, also rectangular pit depressions.

In 1989 the pā defences were greatly damaged by further development of the urupā.

8.7 Tokitoki

X19/57 (2901600E 6230100N) and X19/58 (2901700E 6230000N); recorded 1987; Fig. 68.

Whakaki, Wairoa; on flat top of the furthest inland of three hills west of Whakaki Lagoon.

Two associated earthworks 120 m apart date from the Pai Marire conflict which culminated at Waerenga-a-Hika (7.8) in November 1865 (Whaanga 2004: 130, 183).

1. **X19/57 is a classic Pākehā redoubt form**, here adopted by Māori, with two bastions at opposite angles; small 7 × 5 m interior, surrounded by an internal drain, 1 m wide and 200 mm deep, a bank 1 m high and 1.5 m wide, and outside ditch 1 m wide and 300 mm deep.

2. **X19/58 is a 40 × 20 m rectangular earthwork** on a flat-topped hill, surrounded by an earth bank with 1–1.2 m scarp to the exterior; two depressions inside.

In 1987 under pasture; good condition, some stock rubbing and tracking.

8.8 Wairoa Redoubt

X19/287 (2892820E 6231620N); recorded 1988.

Wairoa: Queen Street, site of council chambers.

Built by militia as a refuge for Europeans after Te Kooti's 1868 return from the Chatham Islands.

Earthwork 100 feet square (30 × 30 m), with 'flanking bastions at either corner', at one time holding as many as 300 people (Lambert 1925: 587).

Under buildings; some ditches are likely to have survived for archaeological investigation.



Figure 68. Tokitoki, Whakaki: two associated 1865 earthworks are a 40 × 20 m rectangular work and a classic redoubt form of two bastions at opposite angles with small 7 × 5 m interior. *Photo: K.L Jones, 1997.*

CENTRAL AND SOUTHERN HAWKE'S BAY

8.9 Napier Barracks

V21 (c. 2845150E 6183250N); no site record, not located; also Gore Browne Barracks.

Hospital Hill, Napier; on high point of the hill.

Levelling of the top of hill near the initial 65th Regiment camp in Onepoto Valley began in April 1858, the barracks probably being ready by the end of the year. Served as military headquarters in Hawke's Bay throughout the occupation by British troops to 18 April 1867 (Woodhouse 1970: 3, 18).

Extensive angled earthwork on the hill-top with several large buildings inside.

Largely or completely destroyed by the now abandoned Napier hospital.

8.10 Patoka Hill Stockade

V20; no site record, not located.

Patoka, Puketiritiri (Bell n.d.: 6).

Occupied by local forces for two years until accidentally burned down (Parsons 1997: 70).

Present condition not known.

8.11 *Porangahau pā*

V24/80 (2820700E 6094300N); recorded 1998.

Porangahau; north side of Beach Road, c. 300 m east of the Porangahau River bridge.

History not known, but may relate to the 1866 Pai Marire advance into Hawke's Bay that ended in the 12 October fight at Omarunui. Porangahau Māori were reportedly expecting an attack at the time (Battersby 2000: 114–115).

Rectangular earthwork c. 40 × 15 m, with one visible rounded corner. Inside, a raised bank marks a 13 × 7 m house (Jones & Tanner 2002: 26–27).

Good condition under pasture in 1998; south side may have been damaged by Beach Road (Jones & Tanner 2002: 26).

8.12 Takapau Blockhouse

U23; no site record, not located.

Established in 1864 in response to renewed fighting in Taranaki (Bell n.d.: 1).

Opposite the cemetery (Bell n.d.: 1).

Present condition not known.

8.13 Tikokino Blockhouse

U22; no site record, not located; also Hampden Blockhouse; Fig. 69.

Established in 1863 in response to renewed fighting in Taranaki, but only fully completed in 1865 (Wilson 1939: 272).

Unusual two-storey, octagonal plan blockhouse.

Any archaeological remains are not known.

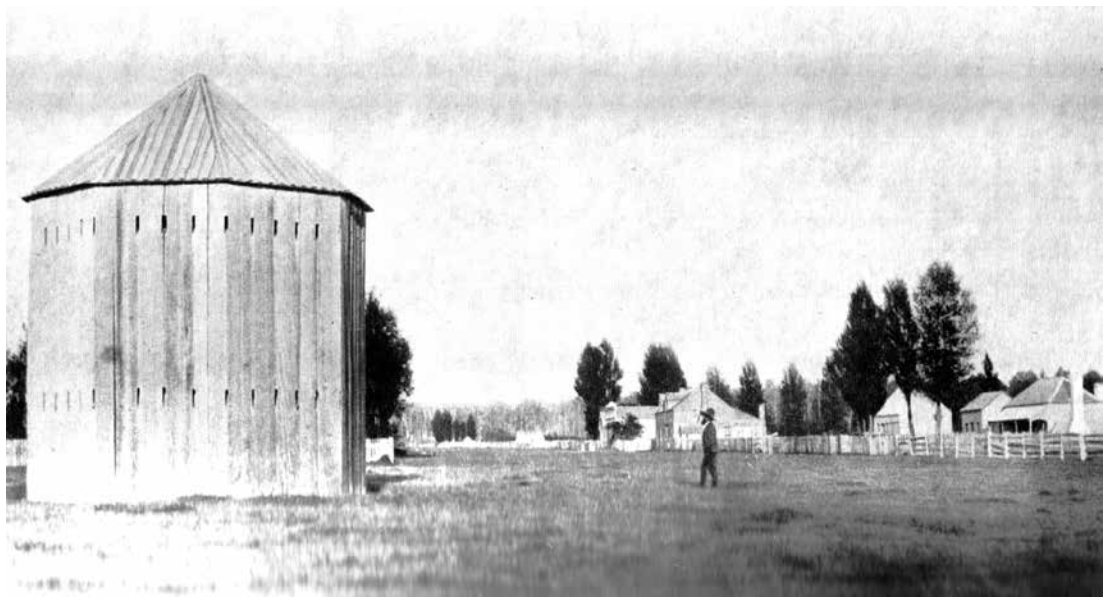


Figure 69. Tikokino, Waipukurau: a unique two-storey, octagonal plan blockhouse. From Wilson 1939: opp. p. 275.

8.14 Waipawamate Stockade

V22/588 (2810400E 6136300N); recorded 2004.

Ruataniwha, Waipawa; north of Stockade Road, c. 1 km from the Swamp Road intersection; general location only.

Established in 1860 (Bell n.d.: 1) after the 1858 arrival of British troops in Napier (Wilson 1939: 273). First held by 65th Regiment, then the 14th, including Captain Richard Vivian's company from May to October 1864, and by 14th and 12th Regiment as late as October 1866; also local troops (Woodhouse 1970: 12).

Probably under pasture; condition not known.

8.15 Waipukurau Stockade

V23 (2813150E 6128250N); no site record.

Waipukurau; Hunter Memorial Park, Kitchener Street, Pukekaihau hill; 170 m a.s.l. spot height on V23 map sheet.

Established in 1858, after the arrival of British troops in Napier; held by the 65th Regiment from 1859–1862, then the 14th Regiment and local forces including Armed Constabulary after British troops left Hawke's Bay in 1867 (Wilson 1939: 273, 279–280, 443; Woodhouse 1970: 12).

Present condition not known.

WAIRARAPA

8.16 Masterton Stockade

T26/8 (2734300E 6025150N); recorded 2004.

Masterton; Queen Elizabeth Park; between rose garden and toilet block.

Built from December 1868 after settler alarm at the fighting successes of Titokowaru and Te Kooti. A local initiative, publicly funded. The stockade fell down twice soon after construction; buildings later used as immigration barracks; sold and demolished in 1882 (Bagnall 1954: 37–39).

Square stockade with roofed and loopholed 24 × 12 ft (7.3 × 3.7 m) bastions at two opposite corners and a ditch outside. A 600 mm gap between two 3 m split totara walls was filled with gravel to protect against incoming fire; loopholes were in the bastions and 2 m apart along the walls.

Now under lawn and garden beds.

9. North Taranaki

This section deals with fortifications in north Taranaki between Parininihi (White Cliffs) and Opunake. Fortifications in South Taranaki are listed below in Section 10.

The first Taranaki fighting included here is 1850s Puketapu Feud fought between Māori tribes (Sinclair 1961: 110–135; Cowan 1983 I: 148–149; Keenan 2009: 160–174). The underlying issue of the Puketapu Feud was land sales to Pākehā. Hence, the episode is part of the New Zealand Wars, just as later fighting among Māori on the East Coast and in the central North Island has always been included. Pā of the episode are listed (9.20) from an historical source; most sites have no archaeological record. British troops first came to New Plymouth in 1855 to ensure the safety of Pākehā settlers in the Puketapu Feud.

On 17 March 1860, the first shots of the Taranaki wars between Pākehā and Māori were fired in an attack on Te Kohia pā (9.59), near Waitara. The First Taranaki War, lasting 12 months, was largely fought around fixed positions, each side putting up more than 30 fortified works. Throughout the wars Māori depended on pā to give a tactical advantage that was otherwise lacking with few of the modern rifles with which British soldiers were now equipped, and no artillery. Most Pākehā works were strategic in purpose, that is, they were concerned with taking and holding land. Fighting near Waitara early in 1861 saw the outstanding tactical use of fieldworks by the British Army in New Zealand (9.44–51).

In winter 1860, a continuous earthwork and palisade was put up around New Plymouth, with a ring of blockhouses outside (Fig. 70). From west to east these were: Fort Murray (9.7), No.2 Blockhouse (9.17), No 3 Blockhouse (section 9.18), Carrington Road Blockhouse (9.2), Fort Herbert (9.6), Fort Cameron (9.5), Fort Niger (9.8), Henui Blockhouse (9.10) and Fort Stapp (9.9).

Fighting resumed in autumn 1863, leading to the development of a fortified frontier for the security of military settlers taking Māori land. In 1869 a Māori attack on Pukearuhe (9.66) prompted further military activity throughout the region, with a network of new forts put up north of Waitara to secure the northern frontier of Pākehā Taranaki.

In the 1880–81 Parihaka Campaign, Pākehā forces in north and south Taranaki at last met to extend colonial authority to the only part of the province still under Māori control. Again, Pākehā used forts for strategic purposes to protect the advance and secure the land. There were no Māori works.

Fortifications in north Taranaki are presented as follows:

- New Plymouth and Bell Block
- Waitara and district
- North of Waitara
- Omata and Oakura districts (New Plymouth to Timaru River)
- Tataraimaka and Okato districts (Timaru River to Hangatahua/ Stoney River)
- South of Hangatahua (Stoney River)

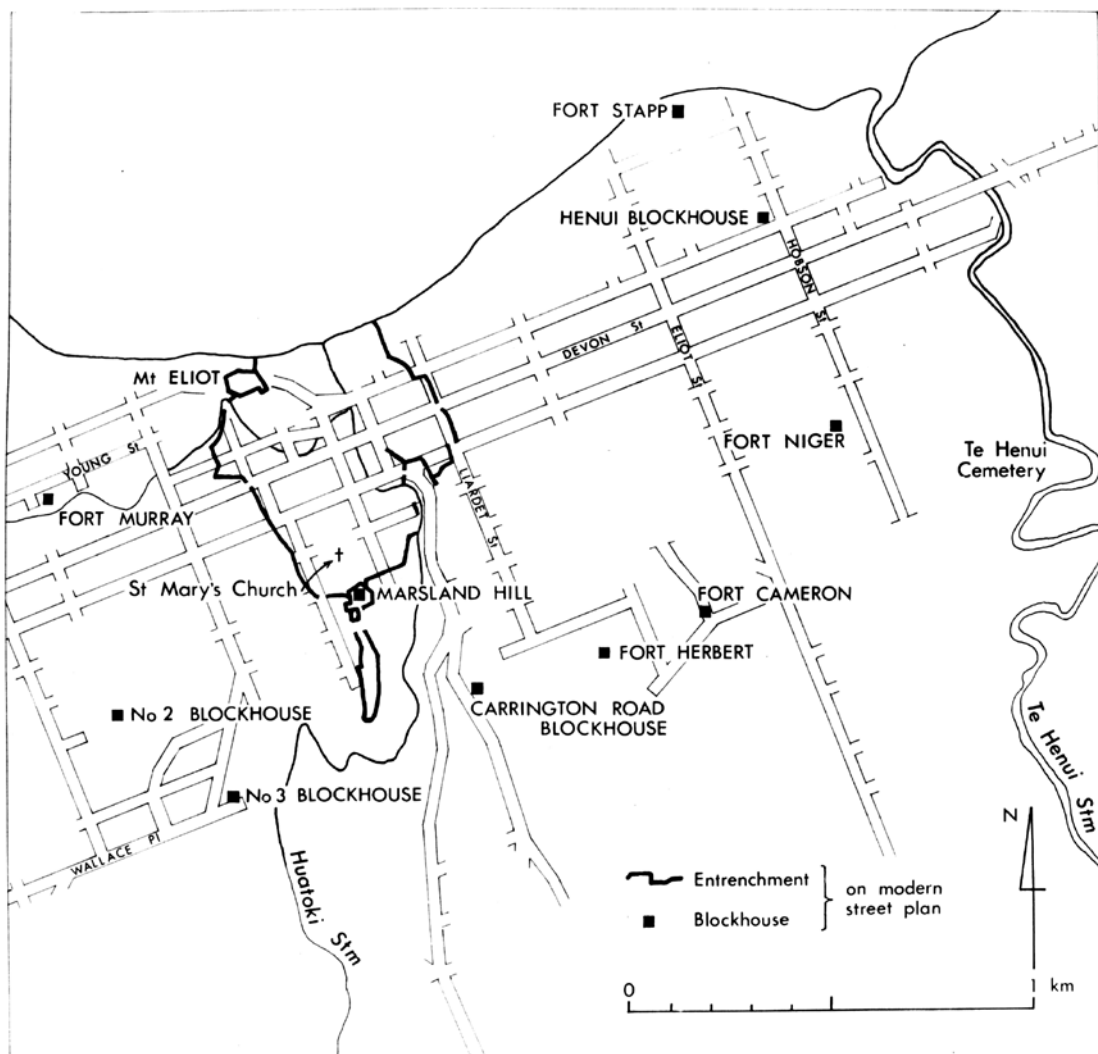


Figure 70. New Plymouth, showing blockhouse locations and the inner fortified defensive line, winter 1860. Drawing by K.M. Peters.

NEW PLYMOUTH AND BELL BLOCK

9.1 Bell Block Stockade

P19/159 (2608700E 6240400N); N109/107; recorded 1975; also Bell Blockhouse, Hua Blockhouse; Fig. 71.

Bell Block; Maida Vale Retirement Village, 917 Devon Road, on a low hill near the Bell Block shops.

The blockhouse was built in early 1860 by local militia (see also Omata Stockade (9.83)); a stockade was added when British troops joined the garrison later that year. This was the main post on Devon Road to Waitara in the 1860–61 war and only Pākehā post north of New Plymouth from the May 1863 withdrawal from Waitara until April 1864. The post was abandoned in winter 1865 after the European advance beyond Bell Block (Prickett 1994a: 10–13).

The blockhouse measured 19 × 6.7 m in plan with towers at two opposite corners and an external ditch; the attached stockade also had an external ditch; outside the defences huts were dug into the hill slope below.

This was an historically important and intact archaeological site until c. 1969 when it was mostly or completely destroyed for a hotel development, which is now a retirement home.



Figure 71. 'Bell Block Stockade'. View from the northeast, at left is the blockhouse with two bastion towers and to the right is the added stockade. Francis Hamar Arden, pencil and wash, collection of Puke Ariki, New Plymouth, A75.453.

9.2 Carrington Road Blockhouse

P19/175 (2603300E 6237200N); N109/145; recorded 1977; also Fort Carrington; Fig. 72.

New Plymouth; Pukekura Park, next to Victoria Road, formerly Carrington Road.

One of nine blockhouses put up around New Plymouth in winter 1860 in the First Taranaki War (Fig. 70); Carrington Road Blockhouse was maintained until 1869 (Prickett 1994a: 40). See also: Fort Murray (9.7), No 2 Blockhouse (9.17), No 3 Blockhouse (9.18), Fort Herbert (9.6), Fort Cameron (9.5), Fort Niger (9.8), Henui Blockhouse (9.10) and Fort Stapp (9.9).

An L-shaped, loopholed blockhouse with accommodation for 50 men, enclosed by an earth parapet around a platform on a prominent ridge end site.

A scatter of earthenware and bottle glass recorded north of the Pukekura Park house in 1977.

9.3 Dingle's Blockhouse

P19/155 (2601700E 6233700N); N108/52; recorded 1975, update 2005.

Frankley Road, New Plymouth; 100 m south of the Patterson Road corner, on a knoll east of the road.

Built in 1864 to give security for Pākehā returning to their farms in the district, which were abandoned in 1860 (Prickett 1996: 28–29). See also Puketotara Blockhouse (9.22) and Ratanui Blockhouse (9.23).

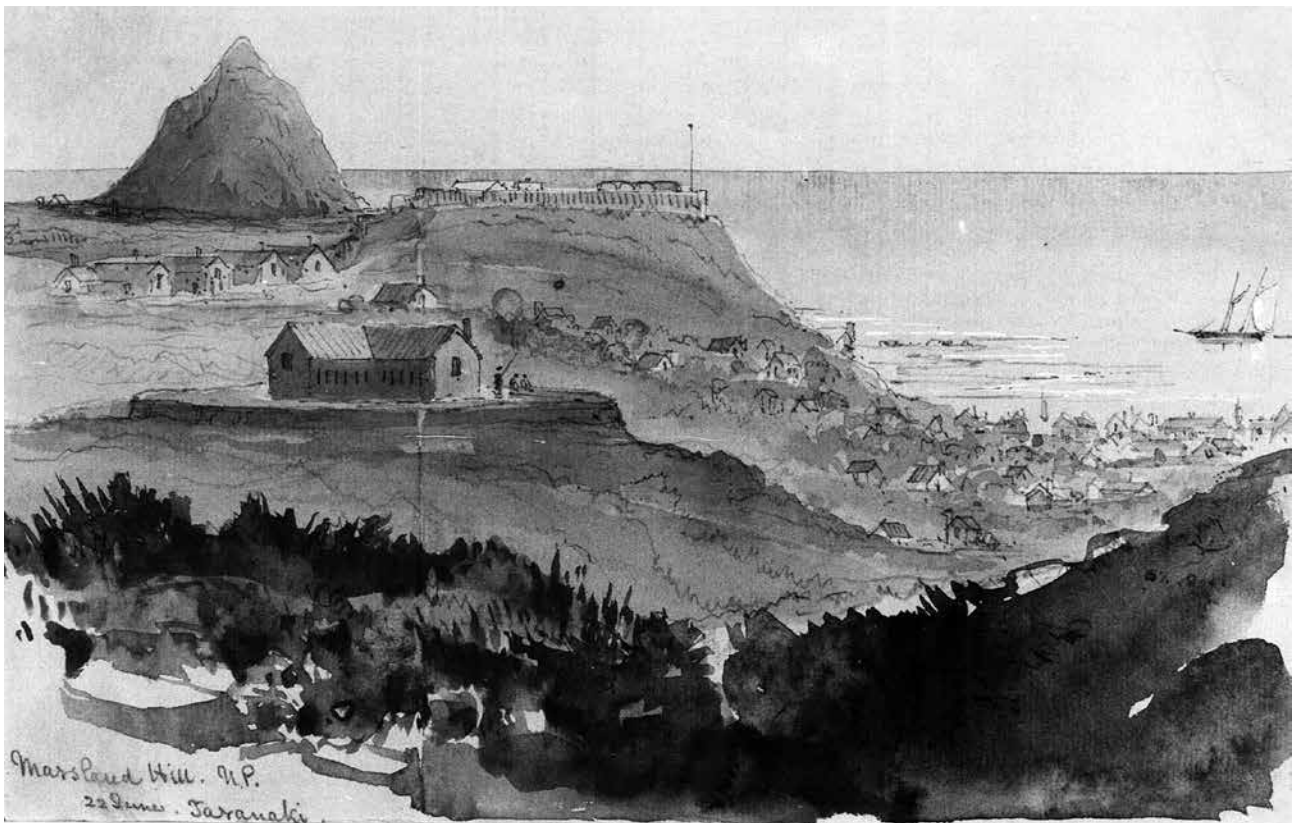


Figure 72. 'Marsland Hill. N.P. 22 June [1864]. Taranaki.' The loopholed Carrington Road Blockhouse sits on a platform behind a low earth wall, beyond is Marsland Hill with stockade and iron barracks at right. Lieutenant Colonel E.A. Williams, Royal Artillery, watercolour and pencil on paper, Hocken Collections, *Uare Taoka o Hākena*, University of Otago, acc 75/131.

Two-storey blockhouse on c. 17 × 20 m platform.

Under pasture in 2005; probably intact but for widening of Frankley Road which has removed the external ditch and west side of the knoll.

9.4 Egmont Village Blockhouse

P19 (c. 2609000E 6228000N); no site record, not located.

Egmont Village; probably within the school grounds, east of Egmont Road, c. 100 m south of the Junction Road corner.

Built after Titokowaru's 1868 defeat of colonial forces at Te Ngutu o te Manu (10.23) and Moturoa (11.26), at the south side of the same bush which extended north to Egmont Village (Prickett 1999: 38).

Single-storey blockhouse; destroyed early 20th century.

9.5 Fort Cameron

P19 (2603800E 6237550N); no site record, not located.

New Plymouth; top of Ridge Lane, at or near the Rogan Street corner.

One of nine blockhouses put up around New Plymouth in winter 1860 in the First Taranaki War (Fig. 70). Named later after General Cameron, commanding military forces in New Zealand from March 1861 (Prickett 1994a: 39).

Probably a single-storey blockhouse within a stockade, as were other winter 1860 New Plymouth blockhouses (see Fig. 72).

Under houses, gardens and adjacent roads; possible subsurface remains.

9.6 Fort Herbert

P19/174 (2603500E 6237400N); N109/144; recorded 1977, update 2005.

New Plymouth, Pukekura Park; under bush, near seaward end of ridge above east side of the cricket ground.

One of nine blockhouses put up around New Plymouth in winter 1860 in the First Taranaki War (Fig. 70). Named after Major Charles Herbert, in command of the Taranaki Militia and Volunteers to February 1862; burnt down in July 1860 soon after it was first built; rebuilt and held by local Māori from August 1860 (Prickett 1994a: 39).

Probably a single-storey blockhouse within a stockade, as other winter 1860 New Plymouth blockhouses.

Under regenerating bush; the exact position is not certain, but the ridge appears to be largely intact and probably the site also.

9.7 Fort Murray

P19 (2602150E 6237850N); no site record.

New Plymouth; 1-3 Duke Place off Young Street, left bank of the Mangaotuku Stream; site of pre-European Rungapiko pā.

One of nine blockhouses put up around New Plymouth in winter 1860 in the First Taranaki War (Fig. 70). Named after Lieutenant Colonel G.F. Murray, 65th Regiment, who was in command at New Plymouth from 1856 until the arrival of Colonel Gold in March 1860. Occupied by British Army and local forces, including the Military Train, which made use of the associated stables; sold October 1867 (Prickett 1994a: 41).

Blockhouse for 50 men, on a platform with defensive ditch around.

Platform demolished; subsurface remains may survive.

9.8 Fort Niger

P19/152 (2604200E 6237900N); N109/17; recorded 1977.

New Plymouth District Council recreation reserve and historic site, access from Pendarves or Hobson Street; site of pre-European Wharepapa pā.

One of nine blockhouses put up around New Plymouth in winter 1860 in the First Taranaki War (Fig. 70). Established by the Naval Brigade from HMS *Niger* at a key corner location of the New Plymouth defended perimeter (Prickett 1994a: 39).

T-shaped building within earth breastwork.

Now under grass on 75 × 35 m hill-top platform fringed by trees.

9.9 Fort Stapp

P19 (2603800E 6238800N); no site record, not located.

New Plymouth; top of low sea cliff in Mt Bryan Domain, off Octavius Place.

One of nine blockhouses put up around New Plymouth in winter 1860 in the First Taranaki War (Fig. 70). Named after Captain Charles Stapp, adjutant to militia and volunteers in the First Taranaki War, and later commanding officer of various corps in Taranaki to the 1880s. Sited to command the beach approach to New Plymouth from the north (Prickett 1994a: 38).

Probably a single-storey building within an earthwork.

No known surface evidence.

9.10 Henui Blockhouse

P19 (2604000E 6238500N); no site record.

New Plymouth; on high ground northwest of the Gill and Hobson Street corner.

One of nine blockhouses put up around New Plymouth in winter 1860 in the First Taranaki War (Fig. 70). Sited to command the lower Henui Stream valley (Prickett 1994a: 38).

Probably a single-storey building within an earthwork.

Elevated blockhouse site cut away c. early 1980s for current commercial building.

9.11 Katere

P19/242 (2607000E 6239500N); recorded 1992.

Bell Block; on a terrace inland of Devon Road at Waiwakaiho Hill.

Listed among Puketapu Feud pā (9.20); destroyed by troops from Bell Block Stockade in 1860 early in the First Taranaki War, when the palisades were pulled down and ditches filled.

Earthwork and stockade pā.

Largely or wholly destroyed.

9.12 Mahoetahi

Q19/114 (2613500E 6242000N); N109/56; recorded 1963, update 2002; Heritage New Zealand Category II registration No 6038.

Devon Road (SH3), seaward of the Mountain Road (SH3A) junction.

Pā possibly built or refurbished for the 1850s Puketapu Feud (9.20; Chambers 1982: 232). In the First Taranaki War it was reoccupied and under reconstruction by 80 Ngāti Haua and c. 60 men from other Waikato tribes, just arrived in Taranaki under Wetini Taiporutu, when it was attacked and taken by European troops on 6 November 1860. Three hundred Pākehā troops then entrenched the position as a temporary camp while they built Mahoetahi Stockade (9.13) near Ngapuketurua, to the southwest across Devon Road. Mahoetahi pā was abandoned and levelled on 28 November 1860 (Prickett 1994a: 53–55).

Historic reserve in good order under grass; memorial over the grave of 29 defenders (Prickett 2005: 97–106). Stock and cultivation damage to part of the site on private land outside the reserve.

9.13 Mahoetahi Stockade

Q19/118 (2614050E 6241950N); N109/61; recorded 1963.

Mahoetahi, Waitara; two lahar mounds and adjacent lower ground, 140–200 m south of Devon Road, between Mountain Road (SH3A) and the Waiongana River.

After the 6 November 1860 Battle of Mahoetahi, British troops erected a stockade on a lahar (small hill of volcanic debris) near the Waiongana River. The post was abandoned in May 1863 when Governor George Grey gave up Waitara, but then occupied by a section of Te Atiawa under the chief Mahau. Pākehā forces returned in February 1864 and an earthwork c. 24 × 17 m was put up near to the older stockade (Prickett 1994a: 54–57), on the site of the historically significant pre-European Ngapuketurua pā (Smith 1910: 120, 359).

The small November 1860 stockade had two buildings inside; the February 1864 earthwork was 90 m north on a lower lahar with an extensive camp on adjacent lower ground.

Now under pasture; the archaeology of stockade and earthwork is mostly intact on the two uncultivated lahar mounds.

9.14 Marsland Hill Stockade

P19/9 (2602900E 6237550N); N108/10; recorded 1962, update 2001; Fig. 72.

New Plymouth District Council historic reserve, above St Mary's Church, Vivian Street; access from Vivian, Robe and Brougham Streets.

Stockade and barracks erected in 1855 on a platform prepared by cutting down the pre-European Pukaka pā by 40 ft (12 m). Headquarters of British Army and colonial forces in north Taranaki until c. 1870.

The stockade was situated on the elevated north end of Marsland Hill, with an associated parade ground to the south; married quarters, garrison offices and stores were on lower flanks of the hill. Marsland Hill was the major strong point of a continuous earthwork and stockade defence around New Plymouth in the First Taranaki War (Fig. 70; 9.16). St Mary's Church below on Vivian Street has military graves from the 1860–61 war and the grave of six Māori from the Battle of Mahoetahi (9.12) at the Robe and Vivian Street corner. Hatchments of British regiments and corps serving in the district (Alington 1988; Prickett 1994a: 8–10) were moved in 2013 from the church nave to the transept and vestry.

Considerable archaeology will survive on the hill-top and below.

9.15 Mount Eliot

P19 (2602750E 6238100N); no site record.

New Plymouth; on a former spur and site of Puke Ariki pā above the beach on the left bank of the Huatoki Stream mouth, at or near the site of Puke Ariki museum and visitor centre.

In August 1855, 250 troops of 58th Regiment under Major Charles Nugent were sent to New Plymouth for settler security during fighting among Māori in the Puketapu Feud. The old pa, Puketapu or 'Mount Eliot', was already the site of local colonial government and a signal station for the landing place on the beach below. The first European fortification in Taranaki made use of earthworks from the pā. Later in 1855 Mount Eliot was replaced as Taranaki military headquarters by Marsland Hill (9.14), but maintained as a military post, especially in the 1860–61 war when it was a key fortification at one end of the stockade and earthwork around the town (Fig. 70; 9.16).

Puke Ariki pā earthworks were modified for a platform enclosed by an earth parapet and stockade.

Puke Ariki/ Mount Eliot was cut away in the late 19th century to provide landfill for the adjacent railway reclamation.

9.16 New Plymouth entrenchment and palisade

P19; no site record; Fig. 70.

New Plymouth; around the 1860 town.

As a result of the 27 June 1860 defeat of British troops at Puketakauere and Māori control of districts outside New Plymouth, Pākehā military authorities decided in early July to enclose the

town within a fortified line. When General Pratt arrived from Melbourne on 3 August the work was rapidly pushed ahead. Outside the entrenchment and palisade, a line of nine blockhouses made up a second defensive line

A continuous work of trenches with earth breastwork or palisades extended from Mt Eliot (9.15) along Queen and Robe Streets to Marsland Hill (9.14), across Huatoki Stream to the Liardet-Courtenay Street corner and down Liardet Street to the beach. There were six gates through the defences. Earthworks also enclosed the Marsland Hill ridge south of the stockade and barracks.

It is unlikely there are any surviving remains.

9.17 No 2 Blockhouse

P19 (2602300E 6237300N); no site record, not located.

New Plymouth; under Barrett Street hospital building.

One of nine blockhouses put up around New Plymouth in winter 1860, in the First Taranaki War (Fig. 70). There was still accommodation for 20 men at the blockhouse in 1869 (Prickett 1994a: 41).

Probably a single-storey building within an earthwork.

Doubtful if anything survives.

9.18 No 3 Blockhouse

P19/121 (2602600E 6237000N); N108/155; recorded 1977.

New Plymouth, 3 Wallace Place, other sections and adjacent road.

One of nine blockhouses put up around New Plymouth in the winter of 1860, during the First Taranaki War (Fig. 70; Prickett 1994a: 40-41).

Probably a single-storey building in an earthwork.

Destroyed except for possible subsurface remains; artefact finds include military buttons.

9.19 Northcroft Stockade

Q19; no site record, not located.

Bell Block; Paraite Road.

In early May 1860, a 40th Regiment company put up a stockade for signal communication with Waitara, in a ploughed field on Pākehā land beyond Bell Block Stockade, named after the landowner. After a few days the troops left and the stockade was destroyed (Prickett 1994a: 25).

Stockade described as being ‘... after the Māori fashion’ (Prickett 1994a: 25).

No known archaeological evidence.

9.20 Puketapu Feud pā

Nineteen pā of the 1850s Puketapu Feud are named by the Rev. John Whiteley in his 1856 ‘New Plymouth Native Circuit Report’ (Chambers 1982: 232). Pā are from New Plymouth northward to the Bell Block and Waitara districts. Katere (9.11), Te Oropuriri (9.25) and Huirangi (9.27) have NZAA site records and are given separate entries in this report. ‘Mahoetohi’ may be Mahoetahi (9.12), although its location on the Waitara River does not match. So that they are not counted twice, these four pā are omitted from the 9.20 total in Appendix 1. Te Tima has a NZAA

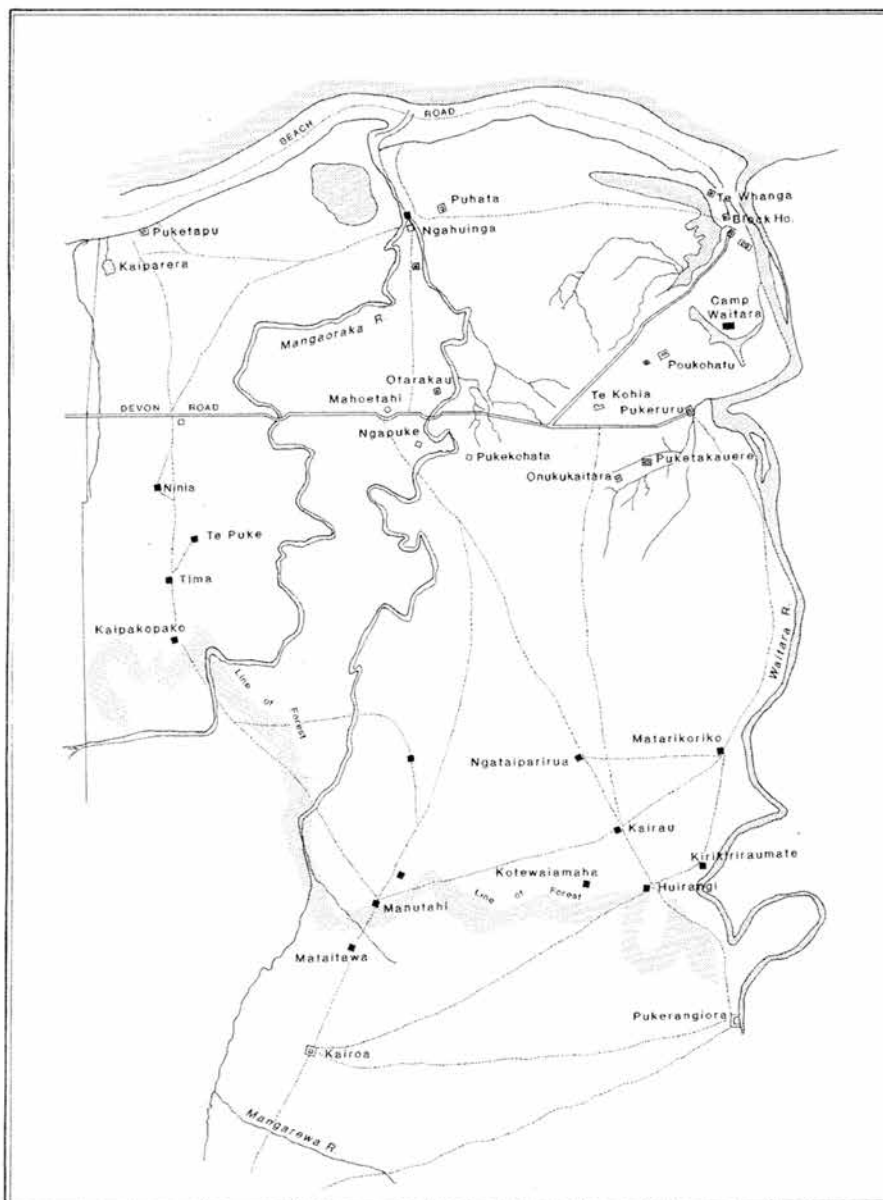


Figure 73. Waitara, Huirangi and part of the Bell Block district. Solid squares show fortified pā in spring 1860. Also shown are other Māori settlements and abandoned pā, the bush edge and cart roads and tracks. *Redrawn from GBPP 1861[2798] opp. p. 144.*

site record (Q19/244) but not a separate entry in this catalogue. Fig. 73 locates some of the pā on Whiteley's list, as follows.

- *Te Kawau* a pa in the town of New Plymouth...
- *Moturoa* a small village about two miles further...
- *Te Raeomiti* the pa of Hone Ropiha, 1 mile distant.
- *Katere* another mile further on. [section 9.11]
- *Upokotauaki* is inland from the above one mile.
- *Te Horopuriri* another mile further along the Devon Line. [section 9.25]
- *Te Paraiti* inland 1 mile.
- *Hawho Taone* on the Devon Line 1½ miles.
- *Te Ninia* the pa of Arama Karaka ½ a mile further. [see Fig. 73]
- *Te Tima* is inland half a mile. [Q19/244 (2612200E 6240100N); recorded 1992; Fig. 73]
- *Kaipakopako* the pa of Katatore half a mile further inland. [see Fig. 73]

- *Te Ikamoana* a new pa near the Ninia on the Devon Line.
- *Mahoetohi* is 1½ miles further inland on the River Waitara. [see section 9.12]
- *Huirangi* is 3 miles inland on the River Waitara. [see section 9.27]
- *Te Korihi* 2 miles nearer the coast on the same river.
- *Te Karumowhiti* another mile distant inland.
- *Te Mamaku* 2 miles lower down the Waitara River.
- *Te Taniwha* 3 miles from Waitara along the Coast.
- *Turangi* 2 miles further along the Coast.'

9.21 Puketotara

P19/183 (2606100E 6235900N); N109/167; recorded 1975; Fig. 74.

New Plymouth; behind 357 Mangorei Road, opposite Karina Road, on the terrace edge above Waiwhakaiho River.

Occupied by south Taranaki Māori or Waikato Māori or both, before being abandoned, then destroyed by European troops on 1 September 1860; reported capable of holding 100 men (Prickett 1994a: 44-45).

Pā was 52 m across the front, 6-32 m deep, with the rear open to an 80-100 ft (24-30 m) cliff to the river. Defences had the usual traversed firing trench, 4 ft 6 inches (1.35 m) deep, behind a double line of 10 ft (3 m) high palisades with loopholes at the bottom covered in timber and earth; interior covered in huts.

Now under pasture; possibly in better order than is apparent from surface evidence.

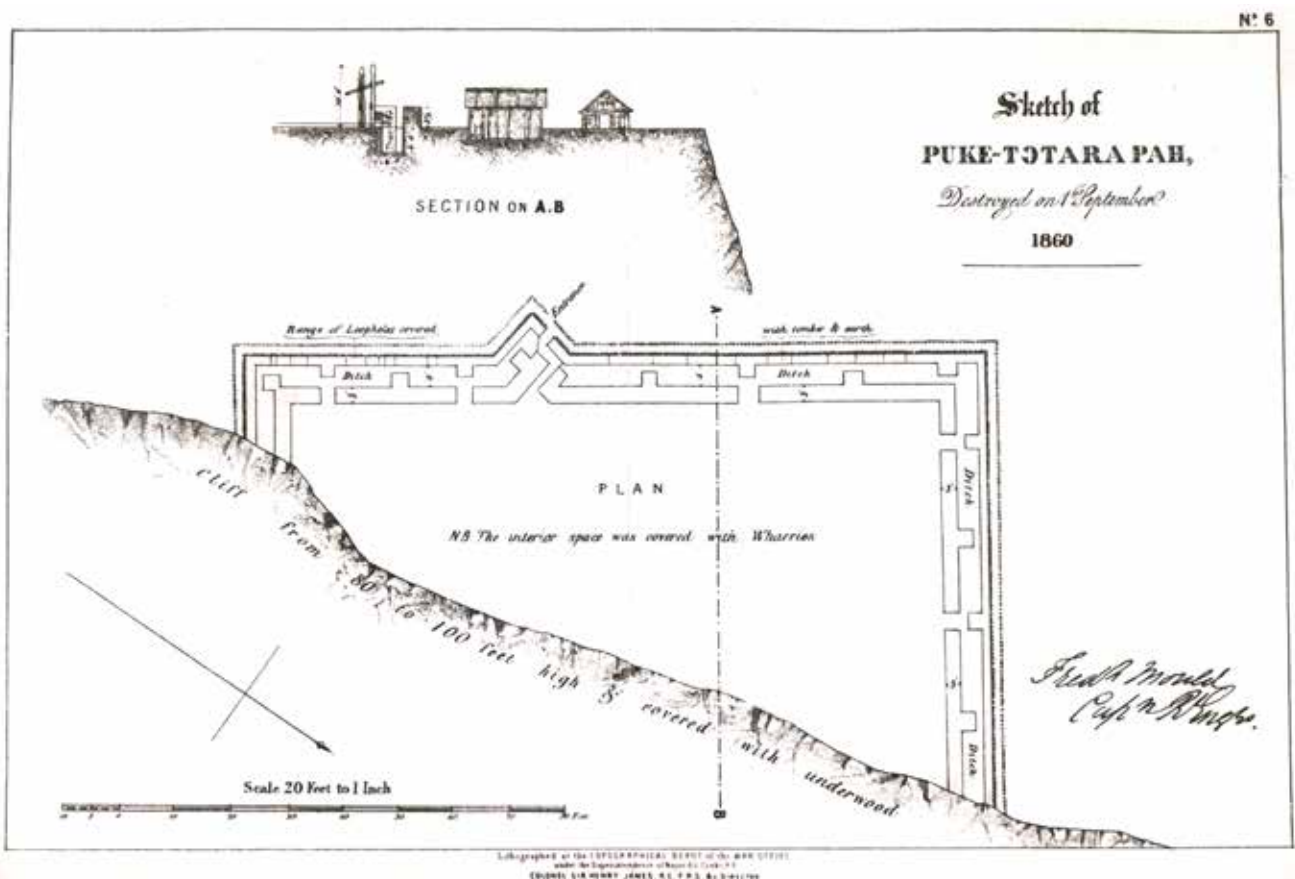


Figure 74. 'Sketch of Puke-Totara Pah, Destroyed on 1 September 1860'. Captain Frederick Mould, Royal Engineers, from War Office 0270 II: 29.

9.22 Puketotara Blockhouse

P19/160 (2606100E 6235800N); N109/108; recorded 1975; Fig. 9.

New Plymouth, 309 Mangorei Road, opposite Karina Road, on terrace edge above Waiwhakaiho River; possible ditch in the 1950 NZ Aerial Mapping photograph 1786/10.

Built in 1864 to give security to Pākehā returning to farms abandoned in 1860 (Prickett 1996: 31–32). See also Dingle's Blockhouse (9.3) and Ratanui Blockhouse (9.23).

Two-storey blockhouse.

No surface evidence, any remains probably under house.

9.23 Ratanui Blockhouse

P19/161 (2604150E 6233450N); N109/109; recorded 1975, update 2005.

New Plymouth, 489 Carrington Road: 100 m east of the road, overlooking Te Henui Stream.

Built in 1864 to give security to Pākehā returning to farms abandoned in 1860 (Prickett 1996: 29–31). See also Dingle's Blockhouse (9.3) and Puketotara Blockhouse (9.22).

Two-storey blockhouse, as Puketotara Blockhouse (see Fig. 9), in c. 20 × 20 m earthwork.

Under pasture; good condition in 2005; the well is covered by a concrete platform and stock trough; later buildings on the site.

9.24 Sentry Hill Redoubt

Q19/119 (2613700E 6239900N); N109/106; recorded 1975, update 2002; Fig. 75.

Sentry Hill; west of Mountain Road (SH3A), north of railway; previously 'Te Morere' pā. The English name is from Māori lookouts (sentries) on the hill in the 1860–61 war.

Put up in February 1864 in preparation for further Pākehā military advance in the district. On 30 April 1864, the redoubt was subject to one of only three attacks on Pākehā fortifications in the New Zealand Wars (see also No. 3 Redoubt (9.46) and Turuturumokai, section 10.25).

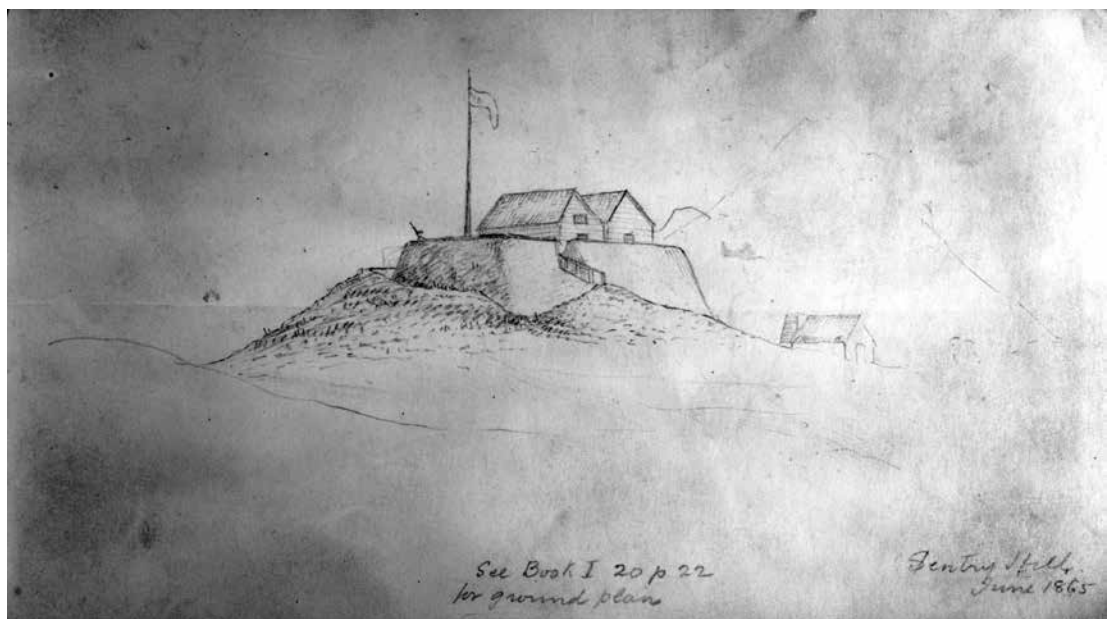


Figure 75. 'Sentry Hill Redoubt'. S. Percy Smith, *Field Book W1*, *Land Information New Zealand*, held at Archives New Zealand, Wellington, ABWN 24473/9.

Strategically located near the intersection of Devon Road from New Plymouth to Waitara and the road inland to Manutahi and Mataitawa and the inland route south. The last garrison was struck off pay in November 1869 (Prickett 1996: 18–21).

The hill has been quarried away and site completely destroyed.

9.25 Te Oropuriri

P19/262 (2608650E 6240300N); also Te Horopuriri.

Bell Block; south of Devon Road, now cut by the Bell Block bypass.

One of c. 20 kāinga (unfortified settlements) north of New Plymouth, fortified in the course of the Puketapu Feud (9.20). Reverted to a kāinga after the fighting of the 1860s.

Excavations by Auckland UniServices Limited in 2002 and 2004, showed changing defensive arrangements from single stockade lines to double stockades backed by a traversed rifle trench and rear stockade, with bastions at the corners for enfilading fire along the front under attack (Holdaway & Gibb 2006: 185, 266–267, 273). Māori fortifications of the Puketapu Feud were good experience for the greater conflict soon to come.

Now largely destroyed by Bell Block bypass, but for the south part of the site, including an elevated platform area.

WAITARA AND DISTRICT

9.26 Camp Waitara

Q19/90 (26166000E 6244100N); N109/30; recorded 1962; also Gore-Browne Redoubt; Fig. 76.

Waitara; high ground at the south end of Pukekohe Domain (formerly Camp Reserve); tennis courts and bowling green on the site.

Established in March 1860, when British troops occupied the Pekapeka (Waitara) Block and so began the First Taranaki War; on the site of pre-European Pukekohe pā. The redoubt for several hundred men was headquarters of the British Army in New Zealand during fighting in the district

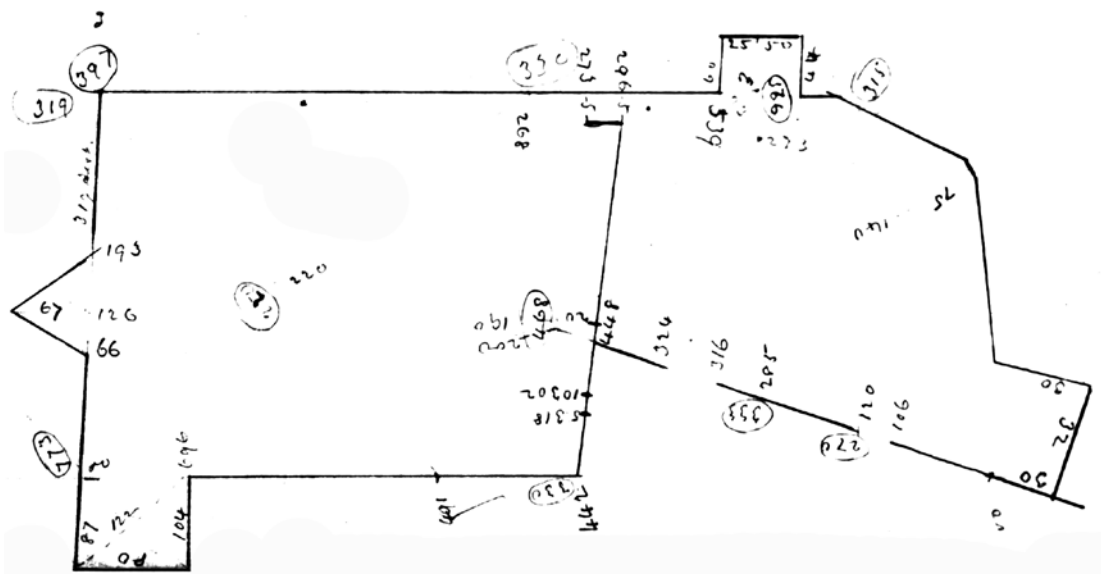


Figure 76. Camp Waitara plan, with measurements in links. At left is the original redoubt, with the part added in winter 1860 to the right. S. Percy Smith, *Field Book H&W6, Land Information New Zealand, held at Archives New Zealand, Wellington, ABWN 24473/3*.

in early 1861. It was abandoned in March 1861, after the war, leaving Waitara Blockhouse (9.61) the only Pākehā post on the disputed land (Prickett 1994a: 19–21).

The initial irregular earthwork redoubt was enlarged in winter 1860 to c. 8500 m² (2.1 acres) internal area (Prickett 1994a: 21), and so was one of the largest New Zealand earthwork redoubts, alongside Queen's Redoubt (3.26) at Pokeno, South Auckland.

Completely destroyed, some small finds in disturbed ground.

9.27 Huirangi

Q19 (c. 2617900E 6238450N); no site record, not located; Fig. 73.

Huirangi, Waitara; corner of Te Arei and Bertrand Roads with rifle trenches extending east and west.

There are three stages in the history and development of Māori fortifications at Huirangi in the New Zealand Wars:

1. Pā built or refurbished for the 1850s Puketapu Feud (9.20).
2. Pā destroyed by General Pratt's troops on 11 September 1860, along with nearby Kairau (9.30), Kotewaiamaha (9.32) and Ngataiparirua (9.43).
3. In early 1861 Huirangi pā was the strong point in a line of rifle-pits that extended along c. 1.5 km of bush edge to the east near the present Bertrand Road, and west of Te Arei Road at the terrace edge above Mangaonaia Stream (Prickett 1994a: 64, 68–71). This barrier fortification (the 'Huirangi Line') was the objective of General Pratt's first sap (9.53). The sap reached the Māori works on 2 February, when No 6 Redoubt (9.49) was established at the centre of the defensive line where Huirangi pā had been. Māori forces then withdrew to Te Arei (9.56).

No known archaeological evidence; rifle-pits are likely to survive in places on the terrace edge above Mangaonaia Stream.

9.28 Huirangi Blockhouse

Q19; no site record, not located.

Huirangi, Waitara; at the corner of Waitara and Bertrand Roads.

Blockhouse built in November 1865 within or near the earlier No 6 (Huirangi) Redoubt (9.49) site, at the military settlers' town site on confiscated land (Prickett 1996: 38). The remaining garrison was withdrawn in September 1866, but the blockhouse was maintained and last occupied for a few weeks in response to the February 1869 Māori raid on Pukearuhe (9.66).

An 1869 report describes the blockhouse with an officer's room and accommodation for 25 men, in good order (Prickett 1996: 38).

9.29 Hurirapa

Q19/88 (2616400E 6245100N); N109/28; recorded 1962, update 2005; Figs 10, 77.

Waitara; on elevated ground immediately south of Mangaiti Stream, at 2 Norman Street and 112 Centennial Avenue and the adjacent riverbank reserve.

Teira and Ihaia's pā was the only Māori settlement to survive the arrival of British troops at Waitara in March 1860. Kuikui, Wherohia (Q19/89) and Te Whanga were occupied by supporters of Wiremu Kingi Te Rangitake and were destroyed (see Cowan 1983 I: 156; Prickett 1994a: 17).

Different sources refer to kāinga or pā; fortifications were probably strengthened early in the war; a September 1860 drawing shows a traversed rifle trench behind a timber stockade (Fig. 10).

Largely or wholly destroyed by stop-bank construction, housing development, roading, etc.



Figure 77. 'Pah at the mouth of the Waitara River N.Z. 1861.' Huirapa from the north. *Lieutenant J. Phelps, 14th Regiment, watercolour, Auckland Museum PD 82(2).*

9.30 Kairau

Q19/151 (2616850E 6239800N); N109/90; recorded 1963; not located; Fig. 73.

Huirangi, Waitara; on or near Waitara Road, halfway between Matarikoriko and Te Arei Roads.

Hapurona's pā, abandoned, and then destroyed by General Pratt's troops on 11 September 1860 (see Prickett 1994a: 46–47), along with Huirangi (9.27), Ngataiparirua (9.43) and Kotewaiamaha (9.32). No 1 Redoubt (9.44) was established on the site of Kairau pā on 29 December 1860.

Strong pā enclosed in a stockade and rifle trench with covered passages (Prickett 1994a: 47).

No known archaeological evidence.

9.31 Kirikiriraumate

Q19; no site record, not located; Fig. 73.

Huirangi, Waitara; on the edge of the terrace scarp near Bertrand Road.

Described as a small pā near the bush edge.

No known archaeological evidence.

9.32 Kotewaiamaha

Q19; no site record, not located; Fig. 73.

Huirangi, Waitara; west of Huirangi pā towards Mangaonaia Stream.

Te Atiawa pā, abandoned before being destroyed by General Pratt's troops on 11 September 1860 (see Prickett 1994a: 46–47), along with Kairau (9.30), Huirangi (9.27) and Ngataiparirua (9.43).

Stockade pā.

No known archaeological evidence.

9.33 Manganui Blockhouse

Q19 (c. 2621000E 6236000N); no site record, not located.

Huirangi; northeast of end of Manganui Road, on the left bank of the confluence of Waitara and Manganui Rivers.

Built in March–June 1866 at the Taranaki Military Settlers' surveyed Manganui town site, which was never occupied. The blockhouse was abandoned in early 1867, and shifted for use as Te Arei Blockhouse (9.57) after the attack on Pukearuhe Redoubt (9.66) in February 1869 (Prickett 1999: 39).

No known archaeological evidence.

9.34 Manutahi

Q19 (2614700E 6237300N); no site record, not located; Figs 73, 78.

Lepperton; from northwest of the Richmond Road and Old Road corner west to the Waiongana River (see survey map Township of Lepperton 1906, Paritutu Survey District).

Pā situated on the east (right) bank of Waiongana River in the 1860–61 war, and subsequently until Colonel Warre's advance in the area in October 1864 in the second war (Cowan 1983 II: 523–527).

Two plans and descriptions of the pā date from 1861 and 1864. In 1861 the pā is shown extending into bush each side at the rear of a clearing, 100–120 ft (30–37 m) across, with a 12–14 ft (3.5–4 m) high stockade at the front, then ditch 10 ft (3 m) across and 8 ft (2.5 m) deep, then a second stockade backed by rifle trenches with covered escape passages to the rear. The pā was fully enclosed but the sides and rear had an inner palisade only and no firing trench (Cowan 1983 II: 523–527). The November 1864 plan (Fig. 78), shows the pā to be 210 paces (c. 200 m) in length from the Waiongana River bank at the left flank. A strong point at the right flank had a double stockade outside a traversed rifle trench and a bank behind.

No known archaeological evidence.

9.35 Manutahi Blockhouse

Q19 (2614700E 6237300N); no site record, not located.

Lepperton; town section 117, at corner west of Richmond Road and north of Old Road (see survey map Township of Lepperton 1906, Paritutu Survey District).

Early in 1865 a blockhouse was built c. 100 m south of Manutahi Redoubt (9.36), at the location of the earlier Manutahi pā (9.34), to be a military post at Manutahi town site (now Lepperton after Colonel Maxwell Lepper, commander of local forces in Taranaki). The muster station for military settlers was occupied for the last time after the attack on Pukearuhe, February 1869 (Prickett 1999: 37).

Probably a blockhouse within stockade.

No known archaeological evidence.

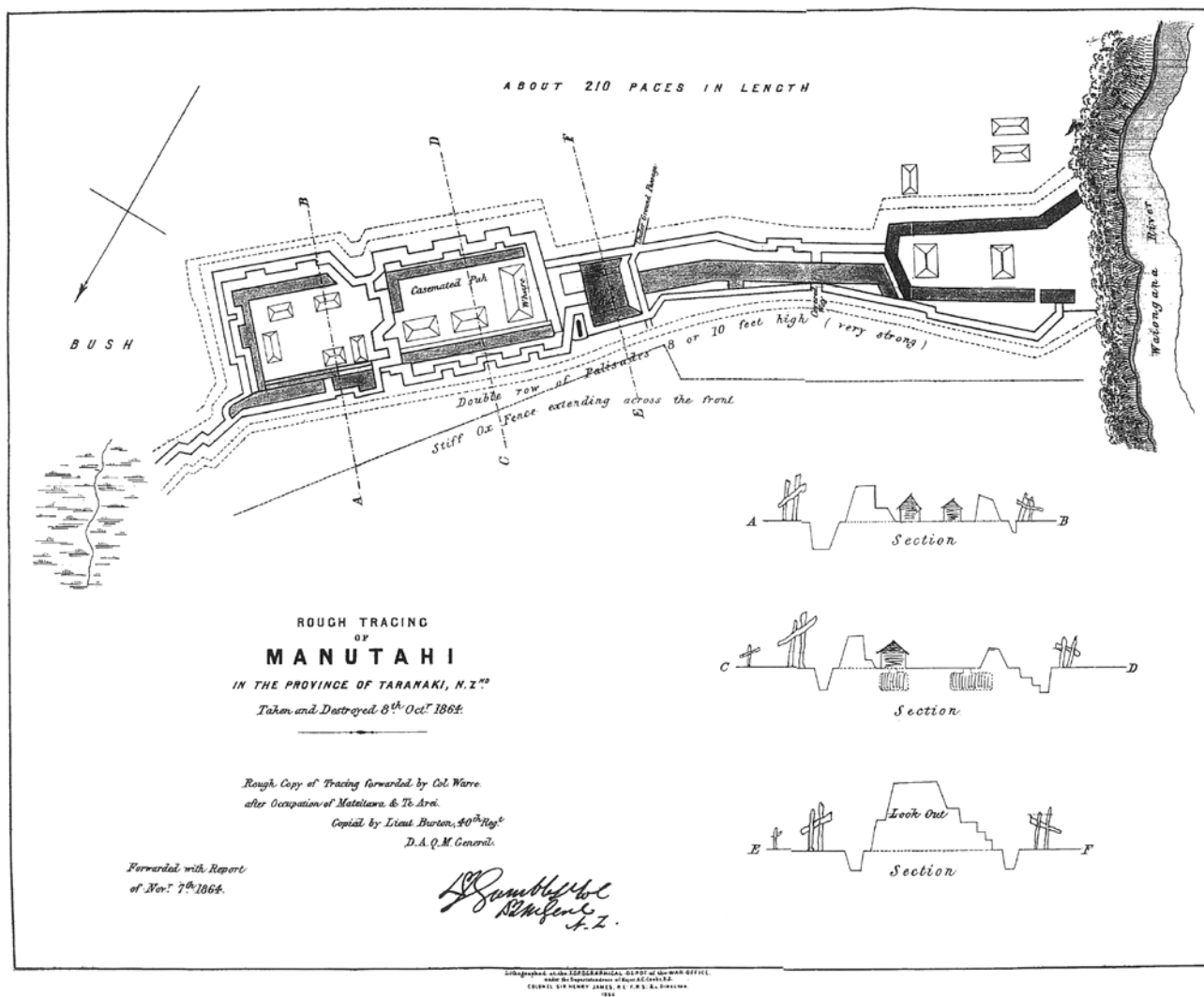


Figure 78. Manutahi, 1864. Colonel H.J. Warre, from War Office 0270 I: opp. p. 135.

9.36 Manutahi Redoubt

Q19 (2614750E 6237450N); no site record, not located.

Lepperton; town section 95, west of Richmond Road south of Whitcombe Street (see survey map Township of Lepperton 1906, Paritutu Survey District).

Established 17 October 1864, along with Matakara Redoubt (9.40) and Mataitawa Redoubt (9.39), as part of a European advance to control the bush edge in the district and close off the north end of Whakaahurangi Track from the south. Built and held by two companies of Taranaki Military Settlers. In early 1865, Manutahi Blockhouse (9.35) c. 100 m south of the redoubt took over as the local military post (Prickett 1996: 39, 41).

No known archaeological evidence.

9.37 Mataitawa

Q19 (2615450E 6235400N); no site record; Figs 73, 79.

Lepperton; Elsham Road, on commanding spur right (west) of road at top of hill.

Bush pā for Bell Block and Waitara Māori during the 1860–61 war and later until Colonel Warre's October 1864 advance in the area; at the exit of Whakaahurangi Track from the bush.

Terraced earthworks of pā on spur c. 100 m north of Mataitawa Redoubt (section 9.39).

Under pasture, Elsham Road and the later Mataitawa Redoubt; significant remains on spur north of the road.

9.38 Mataitawa Blockhouse

Q19/155 (2616200E 6235500N); N109/94; recorded 1963, update 2003.

Lepperton; 30 m east of Richmond Road, on top of a hill c. 250 m south of the Cross Road corner.

Built in early 1865 at the Military Settlers' town site, across gully c. 600 m east of Mataitawa Redoubt (9.39). Site of former Wharuanga kāinga. Garrisoned until December 1869 as Military Settlers took land in the district (Prickett 1996: 41–43).

Two buildings with a narrow yard between were within a 15.5 × 14.9 m rectangular stockade; two 2 × 3 m bastions at two opposite corners covered all four sides (Prickett 1996: 43).

A low mound in paddock until destroyed by the present house some time between 1975 and 2003.

9.39 Mataitawa Redoubt

Q19/162 (2615550E 6235350N); N109/102; recorded 1975, update 2003; Fig. 79.

Lepperton; Elsham Road, in paddock at top of the hill east of the road.

Established on 17 October 1864, with Manutahi Redoubt (9.36) and Matakara Redoubt (9.40), in the European advance to close off the north end of the Whakaahurangi Track from the south; at the location of Mataitawa pā (9.37). Built by 200 men of the 70th Regiment, who were replaced in early 1865 by 150 Military Settlers. In early 1866 the redoubt was occupied by a detachment of the 68th Regiment in support of General Chute's march north by the inland track; probably abandoned in September 1866.



Figure 79. Mataitawa Redoubt, of common New Zealand form with bastion defences at all angles, each covering one side; at right are the terraces of earlier Mataitawa pā. Photo: N. Prickett, 1975.

Square redoubt 43 × 43 m with 6 × 6 m bastions at all corners; dug-out soldiers' huts on the slope below Elsham Road.

Ploughed out; under pasture in fair order (2010).

9.40 Matakara Redoubt

Q19/161 (2615300E 6236200N); N109/101; recorded 1975, update 2003.

Lepperton; 1 km south of Lepperton, 100 m west of Richmond Road, 200 m north of the Elsham Road corner.

Established on 17 October 1864, with Manutahi Redoubt (9.36) and Mataitawa Redoubt (9.39), in the European advance to close off the north end of the Whakaahurangi Track from the south; located to secure the route forward to Mataitawa Redoubt, and as a base for bush-felling parties. Initially held by 120 Bushrangers under Major Atkinson, who were replaced in January 1865 by Military Settlers. Orders to abandon the post were given on 15 July 1865 (Prickett 1996: 41).

At first an earthwork redoubt; in December 1864 a stockade for 30 men was ordered. A shallow ditch shows an irregular five-sided work, c. 35 × 35 m; small stockade bastions are at the acute north and south angles; entrance on the southwest side; c. five soldiers' huts are dug into the hillside below (Prickett 1996: 40–42).

Under pasture; fair order despite cultivation.

9.41 Matarikoriko

Q19/122 (2617600E 6240500N); N109/65; recorded 1963.

Huirangi, Waitara; pā strong point at top of Matarikoriko Road, with associated rifle-pits and trenches on forward north and west slopes, and to the rear above the scarp to Waitara River valley.

The pā, built in November–December 1860 at the centre of a complex of rifle trenches and pits, was General Pratt's first objective in the 29 December 1860 advance from Waitara on Māori positions in Huirangi district. Abandoned in the night of 30 December and taken over the next day by British troops (Prickett 1994a: 60–61).

Rifle trenches 32, 74, 104, 73 and 178 paces long (Alexander 1863a: 236–237) in successive lines (Carey 1863: 155) are forward of the hill-top strong point, as at Onukukaitara (9.52).

The pā has been much altered by a later European stockade on the site (9.42), and by the present urupā; rifle-pits may be visible in NZ Aerial Mapping photograph 1784/13 (1950).

9.42 Matarikoriko Stockade

Q19/122 (2617600E 6240500N); N109/65; recorded 1963; Fig. 80.

Huirangi, Waitara; adjacent to Matarikoriko Road at top of hill; most of the stockade platform is now urupā.

After Māori abandoned Matarikoriko pā (9.41), British troops took over the position on 31 December 1860 and by mid-January had completed a stockade to house a signal station for communication with Waitara during the fighting of early 1861. In May 1861, the stockade was given over to the Te Atiawa chief Hapurona, who was still there two years later at the start of the second Taranaki war (Prickett 1994a: 60–63).

A small square stockade for 60 men with blockhouses at two angles. At the other corners small sentry boxes or lookouts were elevated above the stockade wall.

The blockhouse platform and ditch have been greatly damaged since the 1963 site record.

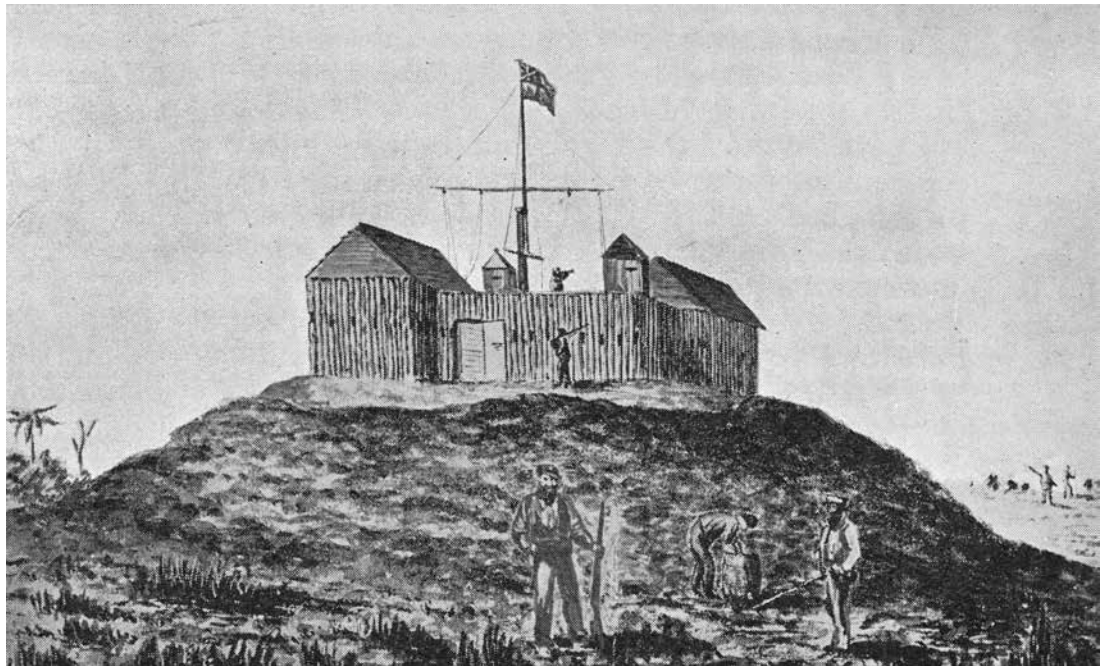


Figure 80. Matarikoriko Stockade, showing loopholed stockade with flanking defence at two angles and sentry boxes over the other two, and signal mast. After a sketch by Lieutenant H.S. Bates, 65th Regiment, from Cowan 1983 I: 203.

9.43 Ngataiparirua

Q19; no site record, not located; Fig. 73.

Huirangi, Waitara; west of Waitara Road near Kairau Road.

Te Atiawa pā abandoned then destroyed by General Pratt's troops on 11 September 1860 (see Prickett 1994a: 46–47), along with Kairau (9.30), Huirangi (9.27) and Kotewaiamaha (9.32).

Stockade pā.

No known field evidence.

9.44 No 1 (Kairau) Redoubt

Q19/142 (2616850E 6239800N); N109/81; recorded 1963, update 2003; Figs 81, 82.

Huirangi, Waitara; Waitara Road cuts through the redoubt halfway between Matarikoriko and Te Arei Roads.

Built under fire on 29 December 1860 and occupied by 480 men that night; it then housed a large garrison throughout the advance on Huirangi and Te Arei, until the ceasefire on 19 March 1861; abandoned 11 April 1861 (Prickett 1994a: 57–60).

Large work for a large garrison; irregular plan, near square, c. 85 × 80 yards (77 × 73 m); unusual angled bastions, two with gaps in the parapet for artillery, transverse bank inside entry (Fig. 82).

Under pasture and road; the earthworks are largely destroyed but the line of defensive ditch is visible north of the road; significant subsurface remains are likely for an important site.

9.45 No 2 Redoubt

Q19/143 (2617100E 6239300N); N109/82; recorded 1963; Fig. 81.

Huirangi, Waitara; c. 100 m east of Waitara Road, 100 m south of the Te Arei Road intersection, marked by a visible dip in the fence line.

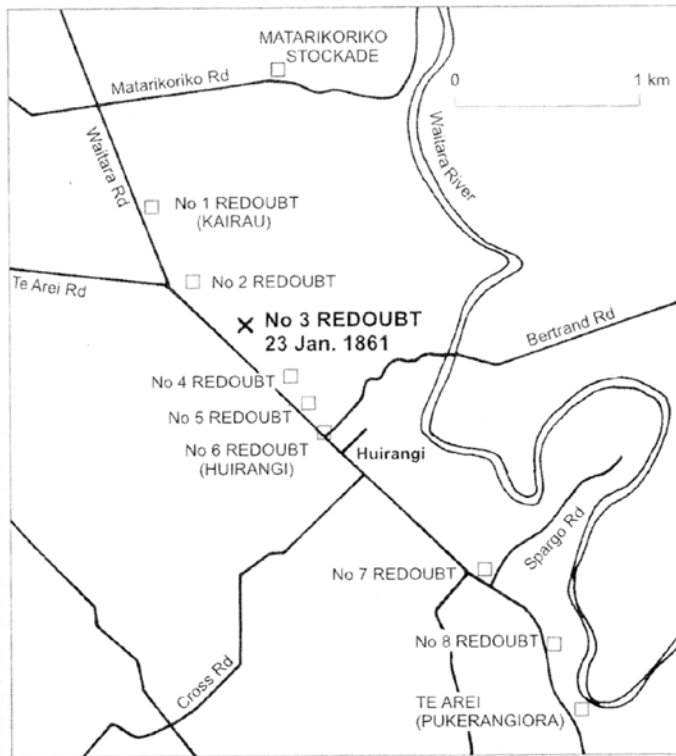


Figure 81. Fortifications of British Army advance on Huirangi and Te Arei barrier pā, Waitara, early 1861. From Prickett 2002: 67.

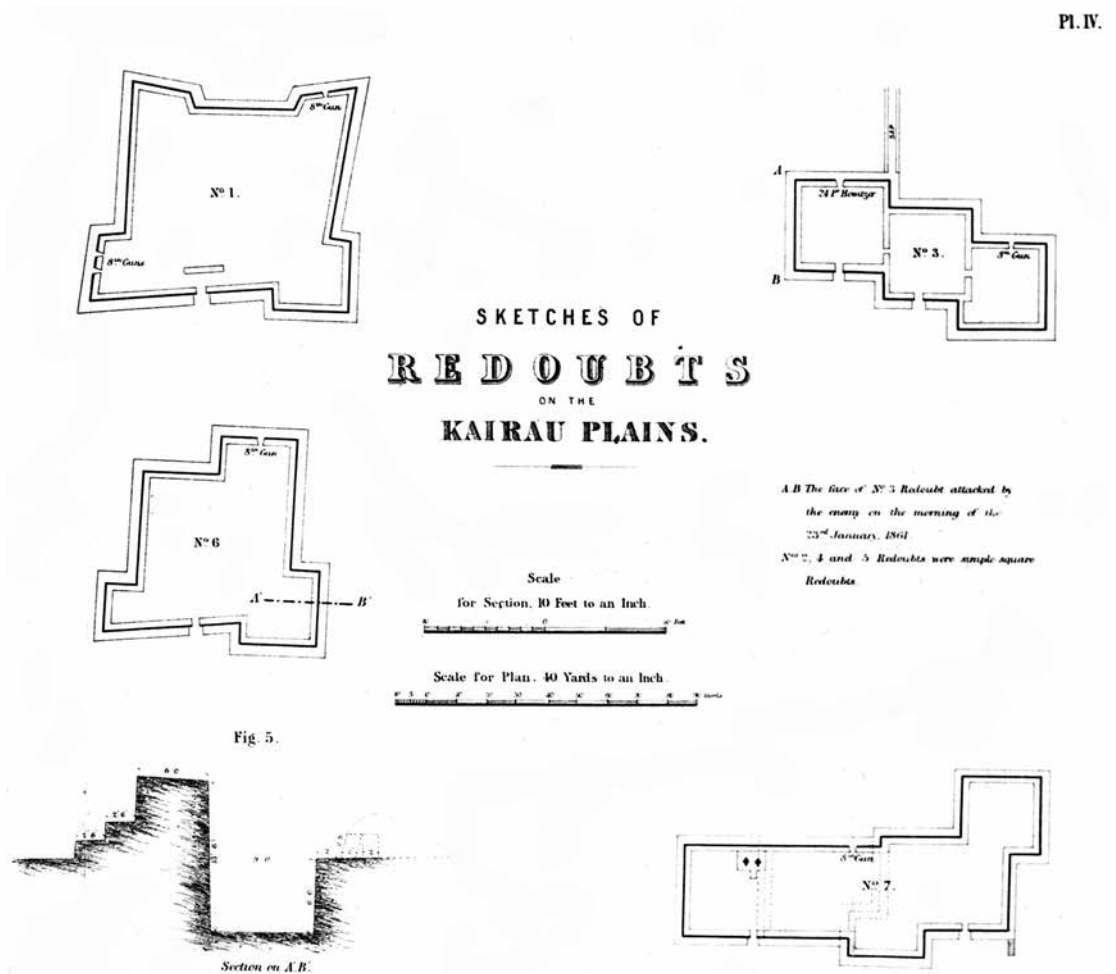


Figure 82. 'Sketches of redoubts on the Kairau Plains', showing plans of Numbers 1, 3, 6 and 7 Redoubts near Waitara, early 1861. From Mould 1863.

Established 14 January 1861, 570 yards (520 m) in advance of No 1 Redoubt; held by c. 150 men including eight Royal Artillery with a 9-pounder gun. Closed up and abandoned on 30 January; destroyed 11 February (Prickett 1994a: 62–64).

Simple 26 × 26 m square work.

Under pasture; earthworks levelled, subsurface remains likely.

9.46 No 3 Redoubt

Q19/144 (2617550E 6239050N); N109/83; recorded 1963; Figs 81, 82.

Huirangi, Waitara; c. 100 m east of Waitara Road, halfway between the Te Arei and Bertrand Road corners.

Built progressively over 18–22 January 1861, 400 yards (365 m) in advance of No 2 Redoubt. General Pratt's sap (9.53) to the centre of the Huirangi defensive line (9.27) started from No 3 Redoubt on 22 January. At dawn on 23 January the redoubt was attacked by a Māori force which was driven off with c. 50 killed (Prickett 2005: 109–115) in one of three assaults on European redoubts in the New Zealand Wars. Abandoned and thrown down on 11 February (Prickett 1994a: 64–67)

Three c. 25 × 25 m earthwork squares en echelon (Fig. 82)—i.e. in a line at an angle to the line of the front being attacked.

Under pasture and trees; earthworks destroyed, significant subsurface remains likely.

9.47 No 4 Redoubt

Q19/145 (2617750E 6238850N); N109/84; recorded 1963; Fig. 81.

Huirangi, Waitara; 100 m east of Waitara Road.

Built 27–28 January 1861 on the line of sap 310 yards (283 m) forward of No 3 Redoubt; held by a small garrison of 50 men; abandoned on 10 February and thrown down the next day (Prickett 1994a: 71).

Small redoubt 13½ × 13½ yards (12.3 × 12.3 m) square inside.

Under pasture; not visible, subsurface remains likely.

9.48 No 5 Redoubt

Q19/146 (2617800E 6238700N); N109/85; recorded 1963; Fig. 81.

Huirangi, Waitara; 50 m east of Waitara Road, near the north fence of the paddock at the Bertrand Road corner.

Constructed 30–31 January 1861, c. 530 yards (485 m) in advance of No 3 Redoubt and 260 yards (238 m) from the Māori defensive line at Huirangi (9.27); garrison of 100 men and a 24-pounder howitzer. Abandoned on 10 February and thrown down the next day (Prickett 1994a: 71–72).

Located at the left side of the sap; 24 yards (22 m) square inside.

Under pasture; marked by slight change in sap direction, which is visible in suitable conditions; subsurface remains likely.

9.49 No 6 (Huirangi) Redoubt

Q19/147 (2617900E 6238500N); N109/86; recorded 1963, update 2003; Figs 81, 82.

Huirangi, Waitara; both sides of Bertrand Road at the Waitara Road corner.

Constructed 2–5 February 1861, in front of Māori rifle trenches (9.27) at the bush edge. On 10 February, when troops advanced to put up No 7 Redoubt, Nos 1, 6 and 7 were the only occupied redoubts, all with strong garrisons, No 6 with 432 men; abandoned 11 April 1861 (Prickett 1994a: 72–73). Reoccupied in October 1864 by troops, but replaced late 1865 by Huirangi Blockhouse (9.28) at the adjacent Military Settlers' town site (Prickett 1996: 38).

Square work with unusually large bastions at three corners covering all sides.

Earthworks visible both sides of Bertrand Road despite cultivation; subsurface remains likely.

9.50 No 7 Redoubt

Q19/148 (2618800E 6237700N); N109/87; recorded 1963, update 2003; Figs 81–83.

Huirangi, Waitara; in the paddock north of the Waitara and Spargo Road junction.

On 10 February 1861, c. 1000 men marched 1300 yards (1200 m) forward of No 6 Redoubt to a point where they came under fire from Māori positions at Te Arei (9.56) where work began on a redoubt. On 16 February the second sap (9.53) was begun from No 7 Redoubt for Te Arei; after the 19 March ceasefire the redoubt was abandoned on 11 April (Prickett 1994a: 74–77).

At first there was a near-square redoubt with two large bastions covering all sides. Two successive additions then made a rectangular work, c. 100 × 30 m, with a c. 20 × 20 m bastion at the right front angle and a square bastion from the rear face covering two entries.

Under pasture; defensive ditches easily seen despite cultivation; subsurface remains likely.



Figure 83. No 7 Redoubt. Photo: N. Prickett, 1975.

9.51 No 8 Redoubt

Q19/149 (2619200E 6237300N); N109/88; recorded 1963, update 2003; Fig. 81.

Huirangi, Waitara; at a high point in the paddock over fence from Waitara Road.

Put up 452 yards (413 m) in advance No 7 Redoubt on 28 February 1861, to protect the forward part of the sap to Te Arei; held by 50 men (Prickett 1994a: 76–77).

Small guard redoubt 16 yards (14.5 m) square.

Under pasture; not visible in cultivated paddock, subsurface remains likely.

9.52 Onukukaitara

Q19/130 (2616300E 6242300N); N109/73; recorded 1963; Figs 84, 85.

Waitara; low mound on the commanding ridge between Tuturererua and Mataiaua Streams, and between Devon, Waitara and Pennington Roads.

One of two pā (see also Puketakauere, (9.54)) built in June 1860, inland of Waitara, attacked on 27 June by 40th Regiment troops who were beaten off with c. 30 men killed (Prickett 1984, 1994a: 29–33). This was one of three major successes of Māori fortifications over British troops in the New Zealand Wars, the others being Ohaeawai (2.3) in 1845, and Gate Pā (5.11) in 1864. The site was later occupied by Puketakauere Stockade (9.55).

Elevated strong point within a single and double stockade backed by rifle-pits, enclosing an area of c. 2100 m²; rifle-pits hidden in fern forward of the pā caused most damage to the attack.

Under pasture; modified for construction of Puketakauere Stockade and partly quarried in recent years.



Figure 84. Puketakauere (upper left) and Onukukaitara (later occupied by Puketakauere Stockade). Photo: N. Prickett, 1975.

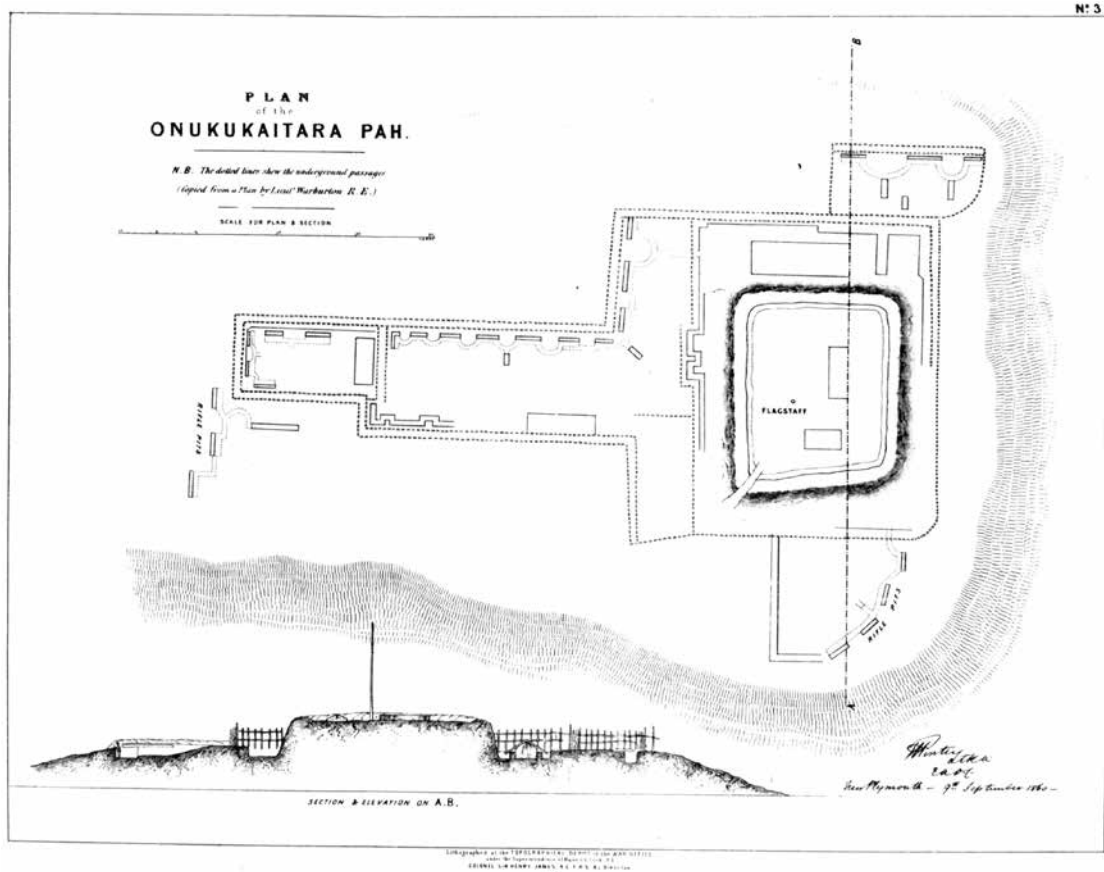


Figure 85. 'Plan of the Onukukaitara Pah'. Lieutenant F.T. Warburton, Royal Engineers. *From War Office 0270 II: opp. p. 23.*

9.53 Pratt's Sap

Q19/70; N109/7; recorded 1964, update 2001; Heritage New Zealand Category II registration 6036; Figs 86, 87.

Huirangi, Waitara.

Two lengths of attacking sap dug by troops under General Pratt, from 22 January 1861 to the 19 March ceasefire (Prickett 1994a: 66–70). The saps were defended by eight redoubts and traversed the whole length against enfilading fire—traverses were banks part-way across the width of the sap for protection against enemy fire along its length.

1. The first length of sap was directed to the Māori defensive line at the Huirangi bush edge (9.27), made up of 768 yards (702 m) of double sap dug from No 3 to No 6 Redoubt, plus 90 yards (82 m) of single sap forward of No 6 Redoubt. Single saps were protected on one side only by raised gabions (earth-filled wicker baskets); double saps had gabions on both sides.
2. The second sap was directed to Māori defences at Te Arei (9.56), including 452 yards (413 m) of single sap from No 7 to No 8 Redoubt and 316 yards (289 m) of double sap beyond No 8 Redoubt.

Most of Pratt's Sap is under pasture on private land; the section from No 3 to No 6 Redoubt is visible in favourable conditions, but the section from No 7 Redoubt is not visible, except in the Pukerangiora Pā historic reserve where there is intact length of sap and demi-parallel (trench at right angles to main sap, and so parallel or near parallel to the face being attacked). For vegetation cover see Jones & Simpson (1995: 68–73).



Figure 86. 'The Limit of the Sap at Te Arei', 1861. Picture immediately after the March 1861 ceasefire shows the use of traverses and wicker gabions to prevent an enfilading fire. At left are two demi-parallels extending to the cliff to the river; beyond is Te Arei pā. Francis Hamar Arden, watercolour, collection of Puke Ariki, New Plymouth, (A75.439).



Figure 87. Section of Pratt's Sap preserved in the Pukerangiora Reserve. Photo: N. Prickett, 1997.

9.54 Puketakauere

Q19/120 (2616550E 6242400N); N109/63; recorded 1963, update 2001; Heritage New Zealand Category II registration No 6039; Figs 84, 88.

Waitara; on the ridge between Tuturererua and Mataiaua Streams, and between Devon, Waitara and Pennington Roads.

See Onukukaitara (9.52) for history; referred to as 'Waikato pā' from being understood by the Pākehā enemy to be occupied by Waikato in the Puketakauere engagement of 27 June 1860. Occupied in September 1860, by British troops while building 'Puketakauere Stockade' (9.55) on the nearby Onukukaitara pā site.

Elevated platform 30 × 18–21 m, partly enclosed by a single stockade, surrounded by a double ditch and bank, one of the ditches c. 6 m deep (Prickett 1984, 1994a: 30–31).

Under pasture; good order in Department of Conservation historic reserve.

9.55 Puketakauere Stockade

Q19/130 (2616300E 6242300N); N109/73; recorded 1963; Fig. 84.

Waitara; low mound on the ridge between Tuturererua and Mataiaua Streams, and between Devon, Waitara and Pennington Roads.

Nº 4

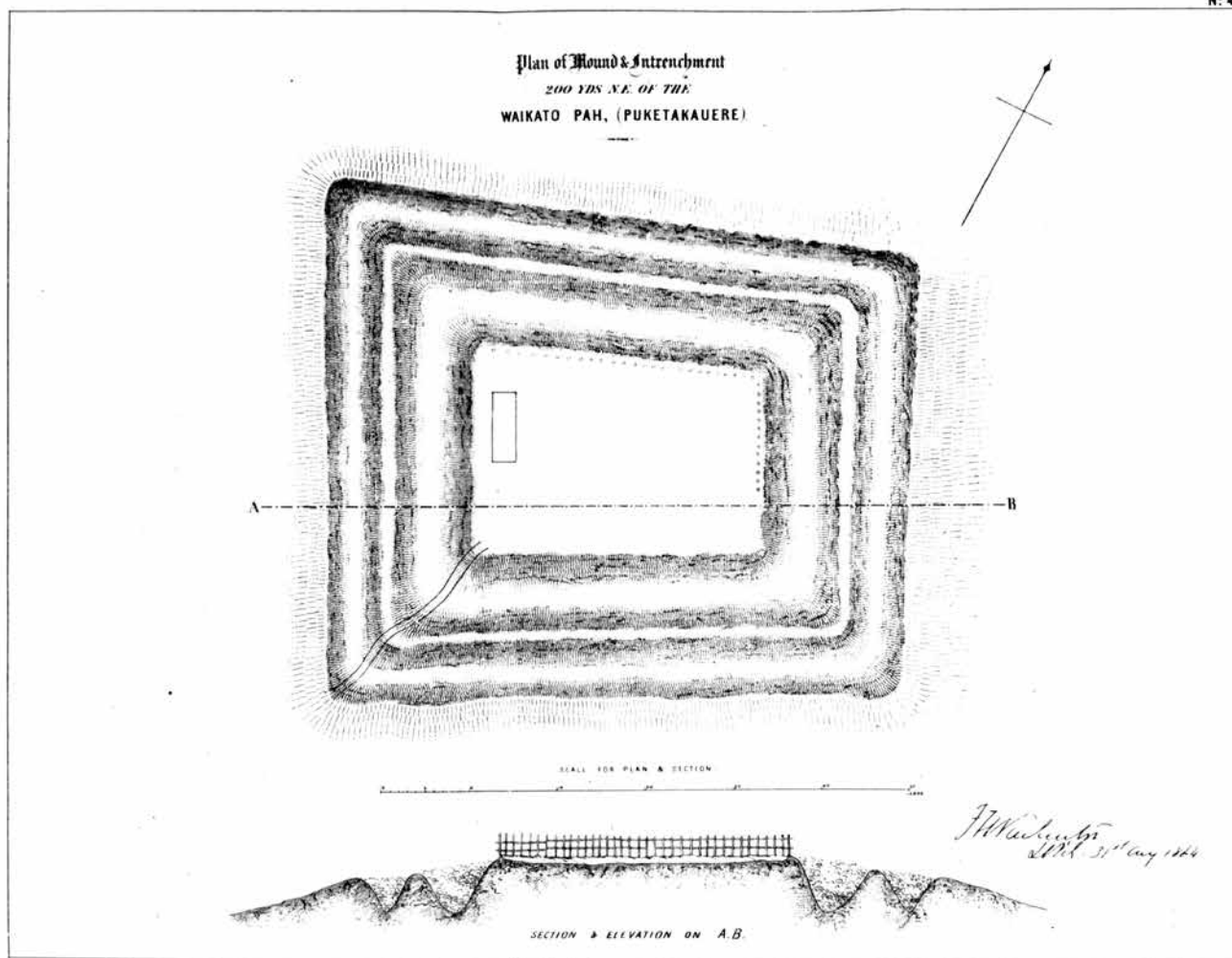


Figure 88. 'Plan of Mound & Intrenchment 200 yds N.E. of the Waikato pah, (Puketakauere)'. Onukukaitara was thought to be held largely by Waikato. Lieutenant F.T. Warburton, Royal Engineers, from War Office O270 II: opp. p. 25.

The site of Onukukaitara pā (9.52) was occupied by British troops in October 1860 and a small stockade for 50 men put up in two days, with work on internal buildings, etc. taking another four weeks. The stockade served as a signal station between New Plymouth and Waitara. Abandoned after the March 1861 ceasefire and destroyed by Māori in 1863, early in the second war (Prickett 1994a: 33–35).

The surviving platform suggests a stockade c. 19 × 13 m (Prickett 1994a: 33–35).

Under pasture; partly quarried.

9.56 Te Arei

Q19 (2619300E 6236950N); no site record.

Pukerangiora; at the edge of high ground between cliff to Waitara River and gully of the Kokopomomi Stream to the west; partly within Pukerangiora historic reserve

Pā which was main position of a Māori defensive line, said to include Te Arei, Pukerangiora and Te Tutu (9.60) strong points, which was the focus of attack by Pratt's Sap (9.53) 10 February – 19 March 1861, bringing an end to the First Taranaki War (see Prickett 1994a: 73–74). In the Second War the pā was taken on 11 October 1864 without a shot being fired.

In June 1864 the pā comprised a 200–250 yard (180–225 m) stockade from the Waitara River cliff across the terrace to the adjacent gully. Two stockades at right angles to the main line protected access to the deep rear ditches of the 1861 pā; in front was a 100–150 yard (90–135 m) fence (War Office 0270 I: 118–119).

The only known remains are rifle-pits at the cliff edge in Pukerangiora historic reserve, near the surviving length of sap, and Te Tutu on the high ground now cut by York Road, which may be part of the 1861 defensive line. Te Arei Redoubt (9.58), on the site of the 1861 and 1864 pā, made use of some of the Māori earthworks and destroyed the remainder.

9.57 Te Arei Blockhouse

Q19/154 (2619250E 6236950N); N109/93; recorded 1963, updates 1975, 2003; Fig. 89.

Pukerangiora; high end of spur over Waitara Road from Pukerangiora historic reserve.

Manganui Blockhouse (9.33) was moved to the site and re-erected in March–April 1869, following the Māori raid on Pukearuhe; abandoned late 1870 or 1871 (Prickett 1999: 39–41).

Platform c. 12 × 7.5–10 m where the narrow terrace falls steeply to the north and west; shallow ditch up the spur behind.

Under pasture; defensive ditches largely filled, otherwise in good order.

9.58 Te Arei Redoubt

Q19/163 (2619250E 6237000N); N109/103; recorded 1975; Fig. 89.

Pukerangiora; Pukerangiora historic reserve, Waitara Road.

Te Arei pā was taken without a shot being fired on 11 October 1864, as part of the Pākehā military push into the Manutahi and Mataitawa districts to secure the bush edge and the inland route from the south (see also Manutahi Redoubt, (9.36) and Mataitawa Redoubt, (9.39).) Te Arei redoubt probably made some use of older Māori defensive works of Te Arei pā (9.56). First held by 150 men of the 70th Regiment. In February 1867 occupied by Military Settlers, but probably abandoned soon after (Prickett 1996: 35–37).



Figure 89. Te Arei Redoubt; the west wall (left) has been destroyed, probably when Te Arei Blockhouse was put up in 1869 over the road (the platform earthworks are visible immediately right of the road corner) as it would have provided a position for firing on the blockhouse. *Photo: N. Prickett, 1975.*

Ditch and bank earthwork 66–53 × 35–30 m, with flanking bastions covering three sides, the cliff to Waitara River makes up the east side.

Pine trees covering the site when recorded in 1975 have since been removed. Earthworks at the west end are largely destroyed, probably in 1869 when Te Arei Blockhouse (9.57) was built nearby. There is some damage to the earth walls, otherwise stable (Jones & Simpson 1995: 68–73).

9.59 Te Kohia

Q19/129 (2615800E 6242800N); N109/72; recorded 1963; also ‘L-pā’ from its shape; Fig. 90.

Waitara; between Tate Road, Raleigh Street and Devon Road; located on Map 189, LINZ, New Plymouth.

Te Kohia was put up on the night of 16 February 1860 at the southwest corner of the Pekapeka Block at Waitara, and attacked next afternoon in the first engagement of the First Taranaki War. It was abandoned that night and destroyed by troops the next day (Cowan 1922–23 I: 159–160; Prickett 1994a: 23–24).

Pā c. 33 m long and 8.5 m wide throughout, with covered rifle trenches behind a double stockade.

No surface evidence found in 1975 when its location in an orchard was pointed out to the writer by the landowner who had found cannon balls and other items there.

9.60 Te Tutu

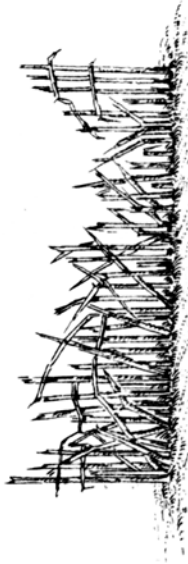
Q19/150 (2618600E 6237000N); N109/89; recorded 1963, update 2005.

Pukerangiora, Waitara; near where York Road cuts through the ridge, 1 km from the Waitara Road corner; access via 82 York Road.

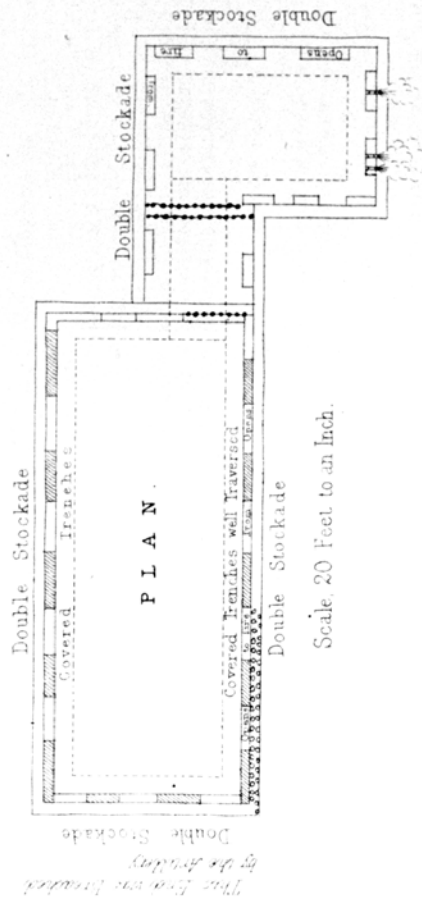
Recorded site consists of rifle-pits, likely to have been part of Te Tutu pā, at the west end of the early 1861 Te Arei (9.56) defensive line (Prickett 1994a: 73–74).

Under pasture; visible depressions indicate pits; longer trenches reported along ridge crest and slopes.

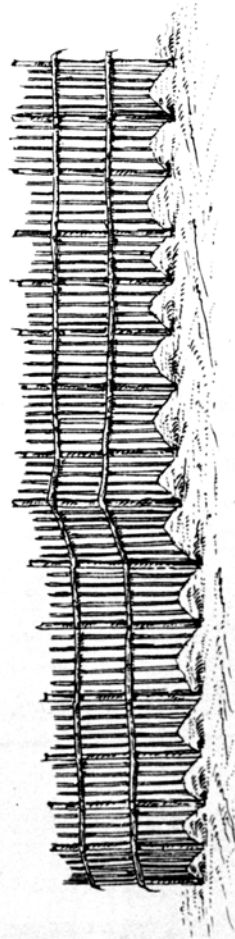
SKETCH OF PAH, DESTROYED ON THE 18TH MARCH, 1860.



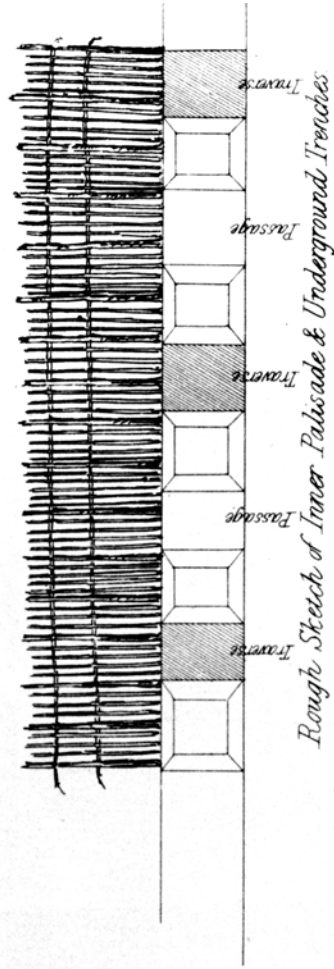
Breached End of Pah.



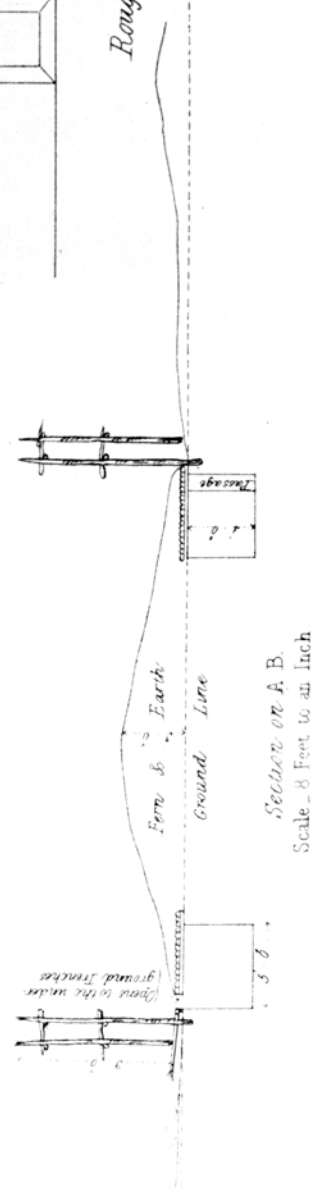
Scale 20 Feet to an Inch.



Rough Sketch of Outer Palisade.



Rough Sketch of Inner Palisade & Underground Trenches



Section on A. B.
Scale 8 Feet to an Inch.

*Fredk Mould
Lt Royal Engs
20th March 1860*

Figure 90. Te Kohia, plan, section through the pah and sketches. Lieutenant F. Mould, Royal Engineers, from GBPP 1861 [2798] opp. p. 16.

9.61 Waitara Blockhouse

Q19/45 (2616300E 6245200N); N99/87; recorded 1975; Fig. 91.

Waitara; south bank near river mouth, at the rear of a small tidal creek between Te Waiai and Mangaiti Streams, the blockhouse site mostly at 116–126 Centennial Avenue.

Built April–July 1860 on the site of Kuikui, a kāinga of Wiremu Kingi Te Rangitake supporters that was destroyed when troops arrived at Waitara in early March. The location was a landing place for ships servicing troops at Waitara in the 1860–61 war. When Governor Grey ordered a European withdrawal from Waitara in May 1863, at the start of the second war, the blockhouse was handed over to Teira and Ihaia. In 1865 it was reoccupied by Pākehā soldiers and a river ferry was operated from it for some years (Prickett 1994a: 16–23).

Cross-shaped blockhouse with other buildings and gun platforms in an irregular bastioned earthwork.

No surface evidence.

NORTH OF WAITARA

9.62 Kaipikari

Q19 (2631400E 6242300N); no site record.

Urenui; 2 km up Kaipikari Road at the top of hill; 'Kaipikari' trig, 161 m a.s.l. at the site.

Pā attacked in December 1864, but abandoned as the troops arrived. In 1870 a Māori 'scout' was struck off militia pay at Kaipikari (Prickett 1999: 26).

Described in 1864 as '... a formidable stockade, and half a mile of rifle-pits recently constructed' (Taranaki Herald 3 Dec 1864).

Under pasture; present condition not known.

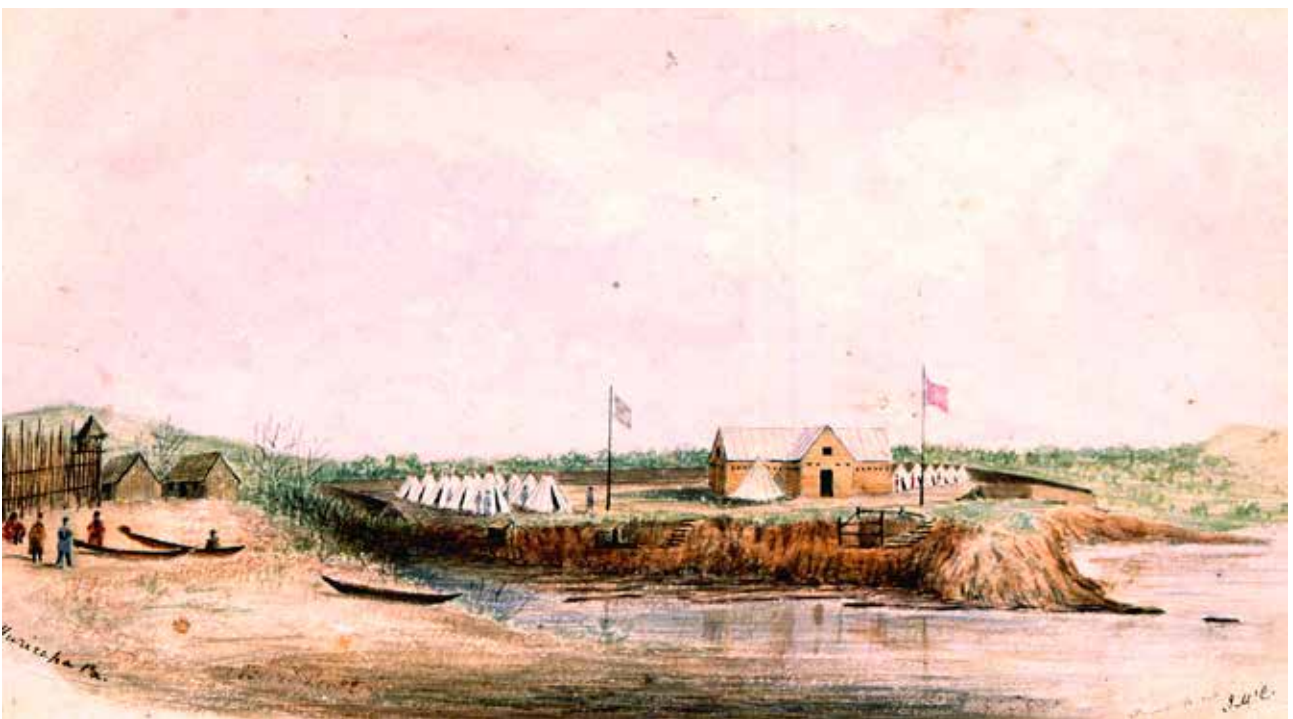


Figure 91. 'Hurirapa Pa', 1860. Part of the pa is at the left; in the centre, Waitara Blockhouse is shown as a loop-holed building of cross plan within an earthwork defence. *Justin E.D. McCarthy, watercolour, collection of Puke Ariki, New Plymouth, A65.626.*

9.63 Mimi Stockade

Q19/60 (2635000E 6248200N); N99/104; recorded 1978, update 1993.

Mimi; near the spur end c. 100 m north of Mimi River, near mouth.

Built by Armed Constabulary in 1869, after the February 1869 Māori attack on Pukearuhe, to protect the ferry crossing and house parties working on a Mimi River bridge; abandoned in 1877 (Prickett 1999: 48–49).

Single-storey blockhouse in stockade.

Under pasture; c. 6 × 8 m platform surrounded by 4 m wide ditch.

9.64 No 2 Company redoubt

Q19/165 (2625850E 6241200N); N109/105; recorded 1975, update 2005.

Onaero; 600 m south of the Inland North Road, 150 m west of Waiau Road; an urupā is now on the site.

Established illegally in December 1865 by No 2 Company Militia Volunteers when Tikorangi was found to have insufficient land for the men of two companies as had been promised. On 8 December, the militia were ordered to level the earthworks and return to Tikorangi; they were later given land at Patea (Prickett 1999: 22–23).

Rectangular redoubt c. 22 × 24 m, bastions at two corners cover all sides.

Under pasture and a small fenced urupā; earthworks damaged but visible in 1975, not seen in 2005.

9.65 Papatiki Redoubt

Q18/40 (2639400E 6252300N); N99/78; recorded 1962, update 2003; Fig. 92.

Pukearuhe; east of Waiiti Road, 200 m past the Rowe Road corner, on a low ridge above Papatiki Stream.

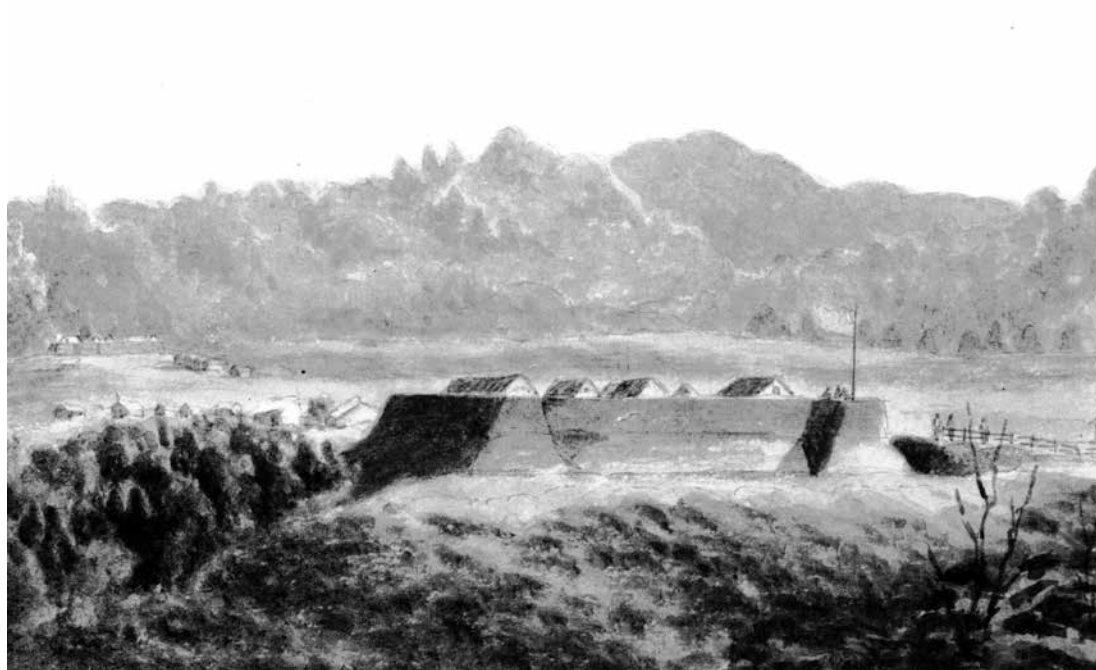


Figure 92. Waiiti Redoubt, with Papatiki Redoubt at left rear. *Untitled, 1871, Francis Hamar Arden, watercolour, collection of Puke Ariki, New Plymouth, A58.489.*

After Pukearuhe Redoubt (section 9.66) was abandoned following the Māori attack of 13 February 1869, there were reports of 600 Ngāti Maniapoto at Mokau advancing on north Taranaki. Papatiki and Waiiti Redoubt (9.73) were then established on 6 April 1869, the two posts forming the 'Papatiki Line' at the northern frontier of Pākehā Taranaki. Papatiki was held by Taranaki Bushrangers until abandoned at the end of 1871 (Prickett 1999: 44-46).

The redoubt was 22.5 × 16 m with bastion defence at the northwest side only, and a 4 m wide ditch outside except at the rear where the bank drops down the scarp to the valley; dug-out soldiers' huts are on the slope outside.

Under pasture; fair to good order.

9.66 Pukearuhe Redoubt

Q18/80 (2641400E 6255600N); N99/49; recorded 1993; also White Cliffs and Clifton; New Zealand Heritage Category II registration No 6030.

Pukearuhe; at the north end of Pukearuhe Road, on the cliff top south of Parininihi (White Cliffs).

On 24 April 1865, c. 110 Pākehā troops established a strategic post to prevent Māori access to Taranaki from the north. The redoubt was completed by mid-May and a large blockhouse built inside by the end of September. The garrison was run down over the following years and on 13 February 1869 the few remaining occupants were killed by a party of Ngāti Maniapoto. The northern frontier of Pākehā Taranaki was then pulled back to Waiiti (9.73) and Papatiki Redoubt (9.65). Pukearuhe was reoccupied on 11 September 1872 by Armed Constabulary, and held until 1885 when agreement between the Pākehā government and Māori King led to opening up of the King Country and the end of the threat to Pākehā Taranaki's northern frontier (Prickett 1999: 12-18).

Under grass in historic reserve; formerly the important Ngāti Tama pā, Pukearuhe. The 1865 redoubt was reshaped in 1872, and reduced in size in 1879. Pā terraces were used for Armed Constabulary housing; a concrete chimney foundation survives of the commanding officer's house; archaeological excavations were carried out in 1968 (Lawrence & Prickett 1984); vegetation on the site is discussed by Jones & Simpson (1995: 82-86).

9.67 Takapu Redoubt

Q19/164 (2622100E 6240700N); N109/104; recorded 1975, update 2003.

Tikorangi; in the paddock southeast of the Inland North Road and Otaraoa Road corner.

Established 2 March 1869 after the Māori raid on Pukearuhe (9.66); constructed and mostly occupied by Taranaki Bushrangers; abandoned 1 November 1870 (Prickett 1999: 38-39).

Earthwork redoubt and building inside.

Under pasture; no surface evidence.

9.68 Tikorangi Redoubt

Q19/153 (2620800E 6238100N); N109/92; recorded 1963, update 2005; Fig. 93.

Tikorangi; on the hill-top at the south end of Ngatimaru Road, west of the road line; on site is the trig 'Tikorangi VII', 133 m a.s.l.

Two companies of Taranaki Militia Volunteers, promised land at Tikorangi, arrived on 19 June 1865 and built a stockade (see also 9.64); later references are to a redoubt and blockhouse. The last garrison was struck off pay in 1872 and the redoubt was then used as a militia muster post until 1882 (Prickett 1999: 19-21).



Figure 93. Tikorangi Redoubt. Photo: N. Prickett, 1975.

Rectangular redoubt 22 × 16 m, with bastions at two angles covering all sides; 40 m east of the redoubt is a 10 × 10 m earthwork around a 3 m diameter depression which may mark the well.

In good order under pasture.

9.69 Tupari

Q19/16 (2635650E 6245550N); N99/18; recorded 1961, update 2005.

Waitoetoe, Urenui; north of Urenui River on a steep ridge overlooking the main road and terrace to coast; above the line of the former Tupari Road.

Pā occupied by Māori in the 1860s; a Māori scout at Tupari was struck off militia pay 1870 (Prickett 1999: 26).

Headland pā; scarp fortification only (Buist 1964: 55).

Under pasture; damage from stock erosion and farm road reported in 2005.

9.70 Urenui Redoubt

Q19/27 (2630200E 6245000N); N99/34; recorded 1961, update 2005.

Urenui; high on the left bank of Urenui River, 300 m from the mouth.

Put up in winter 1865 by a Māori force under Captain Good to secure overland communication with the recently established Pukearuhe Redoubt (9.66); on the site of former 'Pihanga' pā. Held for 20 years by different Māori and Pākehā forces; in 1869–1870 it was one of the strongest posts in Taranaki after the Māori raid on Pukearuhe. The last Armed Constabulary were withdrawn in 1884–85 (Prickett 1999: 23–26).

Elevated redoubt 24–21 × 21 m, originally without flanking defence but a bastion added later at the north angle.

Now within a domestic garden, the redoubt interior formerly a vegetable garden.

9.71 *Urenui north redoubt*

Q19/224 (2631200E 6245000N); N99/113; recorded 1975, update 2003; Fig. 94.

Urenui; at the high point of a broad spur, c. 100 m north of Beach Road where it cuts down the hill.

Established by 50 Armed Constabulary on 7 June 1869, as part of the Pākehā response to the attack on Pukearuhe; abandoned 10 August 1869 (Prickett 1999: 46–48).

Off-square earthwork c. 20 × 18 m, without flanking defence.

Visible under pasture, despite cultivation.

9.72 *Urenui earthwork*

Q19 (2628900E 6244800N); no site record.

Urenui; 1 km west of Urenui Redoubt, overlooking Onaero River mouth; trig '10922', 42 m.a.s.l., on site.

History not known.

Off-square platform 21–17.5 × 14–12.5 m, earth parapet and glass fragments indicate a New Zealand War date, oven-stones suggest Māori occupation while the form indicates Pākehā input.

Under pasture, good condition in 1975.

9.73 *Waiiti Redoubt*

Q18/41 (2639000E 6252900N); N99/79; recorded 1962, update 2003; Fig. 92.

Pukearuhe; east of Pukearuhe Road, on the terrace edge south of Papatiki Stream.

Established on 6 April 1869 in response to reports of 600 Ngāti Maniapoto at Mokau advancing on north Taranaki, following the February Māori raid on Pukearuhe Redoubt (9.66). Built and held by Armed Constabulary, with Bushrangers at the nearby Papatiki Redoubt (9.65). Waiiti lost

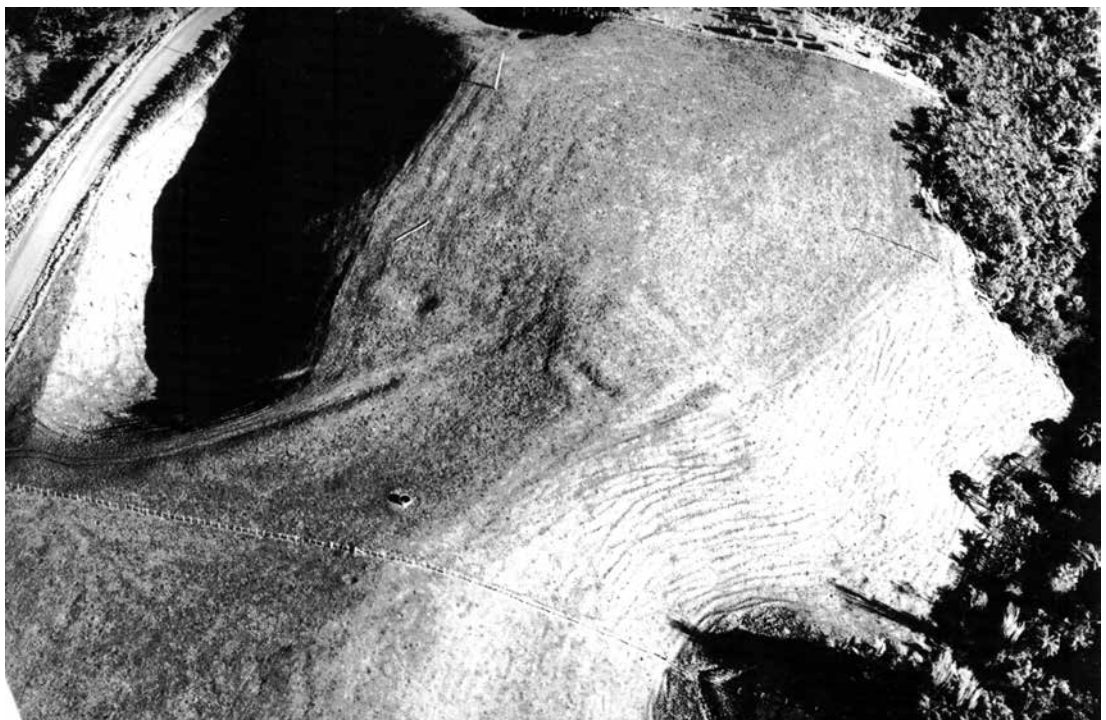


Figure 94. Urenui north redoubt. Photo: N. Prickett, 1975.

its importance when Pukearuhe was reoccupied in September 1872 and was abandoned in 1874 (Prickett 1999: 41–43).

Rectangular redoubt 40 × 32 m with flanking angles at two corners; in 1873–74 was reduced to an off-square work 25 × 14.5–11.5 m.

Formerly distinct earthworks under pasture have been deteriorating under pine trees since the 1990s.

OMATA AND OAKURA DISTRICTS

9.74 Ahuahu

P19/109 (2591100E 6227800N); N108/143; recorded 1979; also Te Ahuahu.

Ahuahu, Oakura; on summit of ridge above South Road at the Ahuahu Road corner, exact location yet to be confirmed.

Pā taken by European forces on 24 March 1864, along with Te Tutu (9.108) on 22 March and Kaitake (9.79) on 25 March, these three pā being the last Māori positions north of Hangatahua (Stoney) River.

Possibly destroyed by World War II radar station on hill-top.

9.75 Ahuahu Blockhouse

P19 (c. 2590800E 6228500N); no site record, not located.

Ahuahu, Oakura; corner of Ahuahu and South Roads; at the Ahuahu military settlers' town site, shown on Block Sheet Cape III (14/5).

On 9 August 1864, the Lower Kaitake Blockhouse (9.81) was ordered removed to Ahuahu, where it was re-erected by early September and the surrounding stockade completed by 17 October. In September 1866 the last man left and thereafter the post was used only for militia musters; sold 1872 (Prickett 1999: 37).

Single-storey blockhouse in stockade, accommodation for 35 men, one officer's room and one storeroom.

No known archaeological evidence.

9.76 Allen's Hill Blockhouse

P19/32 (2597450E 6233200N); N108/36; recorded 1975.

Omata; top of prominent hill over South Road from the Hurford Road corner.

One of four blockhouses built in 1864 to give security for Pākehā returning to farms abandoned in 1860 (Prickett 1996: 32). Manned by local militia. See also Dingle's Blockhouse (9.3), Puketotara Blockhouse (9.22) and Ratanui Blockhouse (9.23).

Likely to have been a two-storey blockhouse like the other three.

House and garden now on the site; probably nothing left.

9.77 Fort Robert

P19/20 (2595350E 6233550N); N108/21; recorded 1975, update 2001.

Omata; on high ridge seaward of SH45, opposite Plymouth Road; 'Poutoko A' trig, 97 m a.s.l., on site.

Put up after the 2 October 1863 fight at Allen's Hill; name from Ropata Ngarongomate of nearby Poutoko kāinga. Fort Robert is significant as the first post held by Taranaki Military Settlers on land that, although not yet legally confiscated, was marked for their settlement; Fort Robert probably abandoned July 1864 (Prickett 1996: 14–17).

Part earthwork and part stockade, c. 23 × 35 m, with defensive angles at two corners covering the two longer sides only; soldiers' huts dug into the hill slope below.

Under pasture; the fort and hut sites have lost definition since 1950 NZ Aerial Mapping photograph 1787/5.

9.78 Kaipopo

P19/120 (2597200E 6234200N); N108/154; recorded 1976.

Omata; seaward of Waireka Road, above the old Omata Cemetery; at hill-top location 'Ratanui'.

Kaipopo pā was the main Māori position in the Battle of Waireka, 28 March 1860, when it was taken by the Naval Brigade under Captain Cracroft, with more than 16 Māori killed (Prickett 2005: 83–91). Leading Seaman William Odgers was awarded the first Victoria Cross of the New Zealand Wars for being first into the pā.

Built in two days by 330 Taranaki and some Ngāti Ruanui (Prickett 2005: 84). Fence made of posts and rails from Pākehā farms, tied with flax and wire, and trenches and rifle-pits covered with timber and soil (Prickett 1994a: 25–26). An innovative form of pā with no stockade of any kind. This style was followed by historically significant pā at Porou (9.102), Orakau (4.69) and Gate Pā (5.11).

Under pasture; slight surface indications only, important subsurface remains include some defenders buried where they were killed.

9.79 Kaitake

P19/98 (2593650E 6229450N); N108/41; recorded 1979.

Oakura; northern spur of Kaitake Range and adjacent Wairau Stream valley.

Pā complex occupied by Māori in the First Taranaki War. In the second war, Kaitake was attacked and taken by Pākehā troops on 25 March 1864, along with Te Tutu (9.108) on 22 March and Ahuahu (9.74) on 24 March; the three pā being the last Māori positions held north of Hangatahua (Stoney) River.

A map dated to the day of the attack shows 'upper pā' at trig '10863' (site of later Kaitake Redoubt; (9.80)), 'lower pā' c. 150 m down the spur, and rifle-pits at the edge of the spur above the valley of the Wairau Stream. The fortified complex also included a stockade and a rifle trench across the Wairau Stream valley, and a pā in the valley (reported in June 1863 but no longer there in March 1864). A traversed rifle trench and palisade line were found in the course of 2006 archaeological excavations by Ivan Bruce on the east side of the upper Wairau Road (Bruce 2006).

Under pasture; no known surface evidence.

9.80 Kaitake Redoubt

P19/37 (2593650E 6229450N); N108/41; recorded 1975, update 2005; also Fort Warre; Fig. 95.

Oakura; northern spur of Kaitake Range, at trig '10863', 211 m a.s.l.; access from Wairau Road.

Established at the end of March 1864 after Māori forces were driven from Kaitake, Ahuahu (9.74) and Te Tutu (9.108) pā, north of the Kaitake Range. Held by British troops and Military Settlers until 1866, then maintained as needed; last garrisoned after the February 1869 raid on Pukearuhe (9.66; Prickett 1996: 23–27).

A restricted site on a narrow ridge gave rise to an unusual redoubt form, c. 40 × 17–13 m, with flanking defence for the forward (south) end of two long sides only; entrance at the north end; depressions on the slope down to north mark soldiers' huts.

Under pasture, some stock damage.

9.81 Lower Kaitake Blockhouse

P19/45 (2593450E 6229750N); N108/49; recorded 1975, update 2005.

Oakura; Wairau Road, on knoll east side of the road end.

Established for support and communication with Kaitake Redoubt on the ridge above; first occupied in October 1864. The garrison was withdrawn in February 1865 and blockhouse removed to the nearby Ahuahu (9.75) town site in August 1865 (Prickett 1996: 26–28).

Probably a single-storey blockhouse in stockade.

Under pasture; no surface evidence, west side cut by Wairau Road. Not found in 2006 excavations on the knoll (Bruce 2006).

9.82 Oakura A.C. Redoubt

P19/34 (2592850E 6231500N); N108/38; recorded 1975; Fig. 101.

Oakura; Hussey Street goes directly through the site.

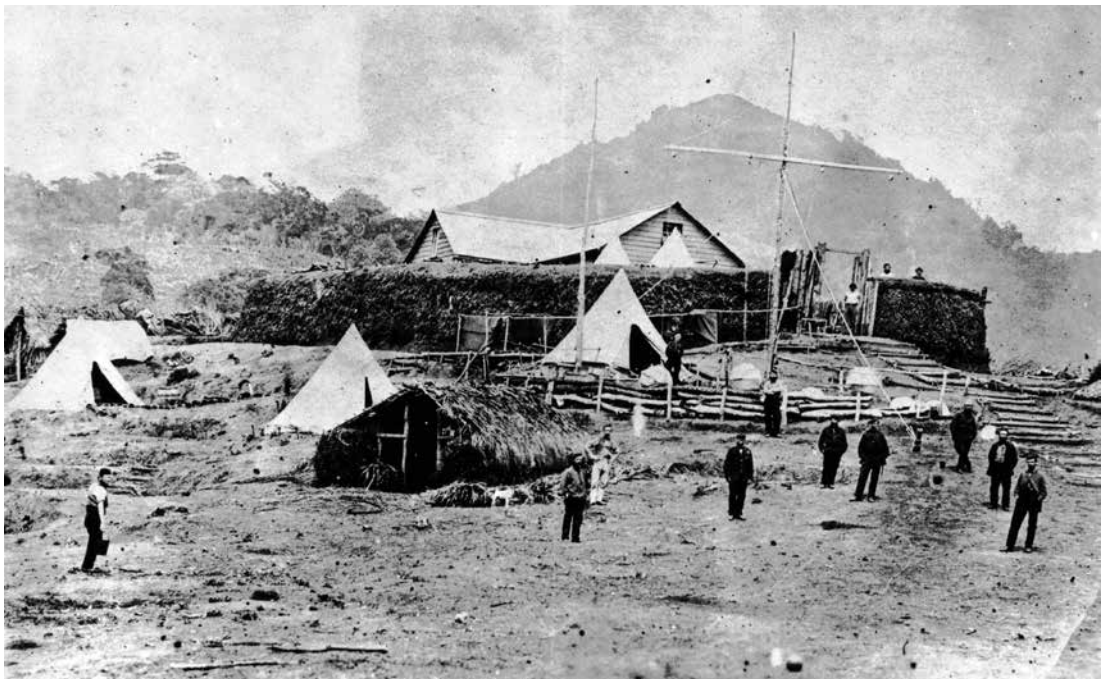


Figure 95. 'Kaitake Redoubt'. Photograph probably dates from December 1864. *Unknown photographer, collection of Puke Ariki, New Plymouth, PHO2001-112.*

Armed Constabulary and other Pākehā military forces for the advance on Parikaka were first assembled at Oakura in early winter 1879, the redoubt dating from August or early September. It was abandoned before the crossing of Hangatahua (Stoney) River on 6 March 1880, which signalled the start of the campaign (Prickett 1981: 240–242).

Large redoubt c. 50 × 50 m with unusual angled bastions.

Shows well in 1950 NZ Aerial Mapping photograph 1788/7; part of the earthwork was present at the edge of tennis courts in 1975; now largely or completely destroyed under the 1980s extension of Hussey Street and associated houses.

9.83 Omata Stockade

P19/35 (2598800E 6235050N); N108/39; recorded 1975, updates 2001, 2002; Heritage New Zealand Category II registration No 5965; Fig. 6.

Omata; small hill inland of South Road (SH45), south of Herekawe Stream; Department of Conservation historic reserve.

Built in early 1860 by local settlers enrolled as militia, on the site of pre-European Ngaturi pā (Alexander 1863). Except for Waireka Camp (9.90), which was occupied briefly in late winter 1860, this was the only Pākehā post south of New Plymouth before Second Taranaki War commenced in March 1863; demolished in 1867 (Prickett 1994a: 13–16).

The old pā platform was modified for a rectangular timber stockade, 19.3 × 12.8 m, with bastions at two opposite corners covering all sides; an open yard was enclosed by lean-to building for guard room, magazine, hospital, store and accommodation; outside the stockade was a steep scarp to a V-shaped ditch.

Under pasture; good condition, some stock damage on steeper slopes; excavated 1977 (Prickett 1994b).

9.84 Pahitere Redoubt

P19/23 (2593950E 6232300N); N108/24; recorded 1974.

Oakura; highly visible on a small hill 400 m south of the SH45 and Koru Road corner.

Established in March 1864 by Military Settlers when nearby St Andrew's Redoubt (9.86) was reoccupied by troops. Taken over by the local chief Ropata Ngarongomate, in November 1866 (Prickett 1996: 22–23).

The former Pahitere pā (Prickett 1980: 30–31) was reshaped to accommodate a blockhouse on a 25 × 11 m rectangular platform, surrounded by an earth bank, ditch, and short lengths of a second bank and ditch. Soldiers' huts were dug into the eastern slope.

Good order under pasture. The original blockhouse is now a farm cottage nearby, and a rare surviving example of such buildings, which were prefabricated in kauri at Auckland and shipped to Pākehā troops in the North Island throughout the 1860s.

9.85 Poutoko Blockhouse

P19 (2596900E 6233600N); no site record, not located.

Omata; north of South Road (SH45), c. 250 m southeast of the Waireka Road corner.

Put up in spring 1864, replacing St Patrick's Redoubt (9.87) as a fortified post in the locality, to secure Pākehā farmland as campaigning troops moved further from New Plymouth. Garrisoned until March 1866 or later (Prickett 1996: 33).

Blockhouse for 35 men within stockade or earthwork.

No known archaeological evidence.

9.86 St Andrew's Redoubt

P19/38 (2593000E 6232400N); N108/42; recorded 1975; also Oakura Redoubt; Fig. 96.

Oakura; north of Oakura River, on the coastal terrace above Corbett Park; 'Oakura' trig, 43 m a.s.l., at the northwest corner of the earthwork.

Established on 5 May 1863, a day after the ambush of a party of 57th Regiment soldiers on Oakura Beach; abandoned on 11 August 1863 when troops were transferred to Waikato. Reoccupied 1 March 1864 by 100 men of the 57th Regiment and 150 Military Settlers. The redoubt was a central forward Pākehā post in campaigning south of New Plymouth in the summer of 1864-65; finally abandoned on 6 December 1866 (Prickett 1966: 10-14).

Off-square redoubt, c. 45 × 30 m, with bastions at each corner covering one side only; a parapet extends along the adjacent scarp edge. Depressions of dug-out soldiers' huts mark the adjacent camp; cart tracks cross the terrace to the top of the old road to the beach (see Fig. 96).

Under pasture and gorse; considerable deterioration of earthworks since 1975, but remains an important site for its history and significant archaeological evidence.

9.87 St Patrick's Redoubt

P19/19 (2596300E 6233750N); N108/20; recorded 1975, update 2003; also Poutoko Redoubt.

Omata; high seaward end of Tapuae Ridge, mostly under the house inland of the major bend of South Road.

The 12 March 1863 move to Poutoko by 300 of the 57th Regiment, accompanied by Sir George Grey and General Cameron, marked the start of the Second Taranaki War. St Patrick's Redoubt



Figure 96. St Andrew's Redoubt, Oakura, 1863; outside the off-square redoubt are depressions marking dug-out soldiers' huts and the cart road leading to a steep descent to the Oakura Beach. *Photo: N. Prickett, 1975.*

was completed by 20 March, the work planned and supervised by Lieutenant Charles Ferguson, Royal Engineers, who was later responsible for many Taranaki redoubts. When fighting moved south in early 1864, local militia took over from British troops at the redoubt. It was abandoned in spring 1864 when Poutoko Blockhouse (9.85) was established nearby (Prickett 1996: 2-7).

NZ Aerial Mapping photograph 1787/5 (1950), shows an off-square work, c. 50 × 42 m, with flanking defence at all corners each covering one side; the entrance was through the north (rear) side and dug-out soldiers' huts were on a nearby slope.

The redoubt was largely destroyed when the present house was built on the site in late 1950s; some external evidence of huts, etc., will have survived. In 2003 there were archaeological excavations during road-widening took place in the vicinity of the redoubt entrance (Taylor & Sutton 2003)

9.88 Timaru Redoubt

P19/43 (2589900E 6230700N); N108/47; recorded 1975, update 2003.

Oakura; cut by Weld Road at a bend c. 500 m from coast.

Established by Taranaki Military Settlers in November 1864 to protect communication with the newly reoccupied Tataraimaka district which had been abandoned in June 1863 (see 9.104).

Timaru Redoubt was abandoned in April 1865 (Prickett 1996: 44-45).

Classic form, 24 × 24 m with two opposite 8 × 5 m bastions covering all sides.

Largely destroyed by road, house and garden; some of the southwest corner survives in the paddock west of the road; southeast bastion barely visible east of road in 2003.

9.89 Tuahukino Blockhouse

P19 (2596000E 6230000N); no site record, not located.

Koru, Oakura; 3 km up Koru Road from SH45.

Built May–July 1865 at the military settlers' Tuahukino town site and held by a small garrison until September 1866; maintained by local militia until January 1872 (Prickett 1999: 36).

Probably one-storey building within a stockade, with accommodation for 25 men, one officer's room and one storeroom.

No known archaeological evidence.

9.90 Waireka Camp

P19/36 (2597000E 6234200N); N108/40; recorded 1975, updates 2004, 2005; Fig. 3.

Omata; corner of Sutton and Waireka Roads; in paddock behind Heritage New Zealand plaque.

Put up on 27 July 1860 by 250 of 12th and 40th Regiments under Major W.J. Hutchins, while under fire from Māori dug in on high ground (9.91) near the present main South Road (then Hurford Road). All tents were pitched within the earthwork that night. From 11 to 23 August, every wood and water party exchanged shots with Māori. Abandoned 7 September 1860 after Māori returned south (Prickett 1994a: 41-43).

Redoubt earthwork c. 50 × 50 m with c. 15 m square bastions at two opposite corners; c. 8 m wide ditch around the work.

Under pasture, in good order and highly visible; outstanding example of a classic redoubt form.

9.91 *Waireka pā*

P19 (2596600E 6233500N); no site record, not located.

Omata; extensive works along high ground south of present intersection of SH45 and Waireka Road.

After the success of Te Atiawa and Waikato at Puketakauere (9.52, 9.54) on 27 June 1860, Taranaki, Ngāti Ruanui and other southern tribes advanced on New Plymouth at the end of July, fortifying the crest of Tapuae Ridge, which had the security of bushed gullies behind. British troops met the Māori advance with Waireka Camp (9.90). When Māori left their positions early in September, the troops withdrew to New Plymouth (Prickett 1994a: 434).

The Māori works included three stockades, each capable of holding 80–100 men, connected by rifle-pits, with underground huts at or below the crest of the scarp into the rear gully. More rifle-pits extended for 900 yards (820 m) around to the south of the Pakeha position at Waireka Camp (Prickett 1994a: 43–44).

No known archaeological evidence.

9.92 *Waireka rifle-pits*

P19/292 (2597300E 6234100N); recorded 2002.

Omata; across Waireka Road from the old Omata Cemetery.

At the end of 1860, southern Māori returned to Tapuae Ridge, digging rifle-pits by the road through remains of Mrs Jury's house that was destroyed earlier in the war (Adamson 2008). A skirmish at Waireka on 23 February 1861 may have involved these rifle-pits (Prickett 2005: 116).

Rifle-pits revealed in January 2008 archaeological excavations by Janice Adamson include a line of square pits connected by a trench, with escape trenches to the rear (Adamson 2008; Prickett 2010: 89).

Under pasture; more will exist than has so far been uncovered.

TATARAIMAKA AND OKATO DISTRICTS

9.93 *Bayly's Farm A.C. Camp*

P19/41 (2587350E 6229600N); N108/45; recorded 1975, update 2005; Fig. 97.

Tataraimaka; 150 m from Greenwood Road and coast, on the terrace between Pitone and Waiaua Streams.

Armed Constabulary base established in the spring 1879 build-up to the Parihaka Campaign. In early 1880 it was the main European base north of Hangatahua (Stoney) River, with 260 men; on 8 March 1880 the post was abandoned when the garrison crossed Stoney River to Māori land to begin the advance on Parihaka (Prickett 1981: 242–246).

A rectangular earthwork 43 × 30 m enclosed a low mound on an otherwise level terrace. Defences included an external ditch 8–5 m wide and unusual flanking defence at the middle of the two long sides. Entry was by way of a causeway at the north end. A contemporary picture shows an extensive camp outside the earthwork (Prickett 1981: 245).

Mostly destroyed for a farm race in August 1978, only a small part of the west side remains under pasture.

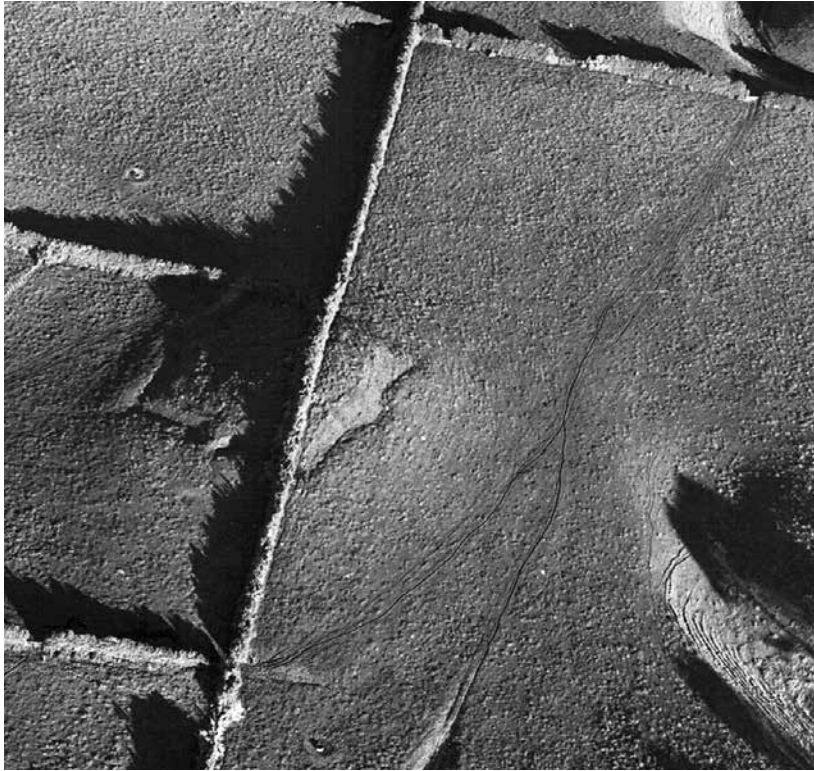


Figure 97. Bayly's Farm A.C. Camp, Tataraimaka, 1879. Most of the earthwork is now destroyed. Photo: N. Prickett, 1975.

9.94 Camp Parawaha

P19/39 (2583700E 6227500N); N108/43; recorded 1975; Fig. 98.

Okato; seaward end of Hampton Road, over a small stream from pre-European Parawaha pā (P19/204).

Earthwork defence thrown up by General Pratt's force of 500 men attacking three Māori positions (9.99, 9.101, 9.103) at Kaihihi River by sap (9.98), 10–12 October 1860 (Prickett 1994a: 48, 52–53).

Ditch and bank earthworks at the coastal terrace edge defended a large central area and two small areas on the other side of gullies at each side; the rear was undefended but for a natural scarp.

Under pasture; only the long central earthwork was visible in 1975, and since then has been further erased by cultivation.

9.95 Crow's Nest

P19/218 (2586950E 6229800N); N108/100; recorded 1962, update 2002.

Tataraimaka; top platform of pre-European Tataraimaka pā, bottom end of Lower Pitone Road; Department of Conservation historic reserve.

The pā top platform (the 'Crow's Nest') was used as a signal station in April–June 1863 for nearby St George's Redoubt (9.104; Prickett 1996: 9–10).

An earth parapet protected a small work for 30 men. The signal mast allowed communication with St Patrick's Redoubt (9.87) and so to New Plymouth.

Under planted trees and coastal bush; parapet remains are visible on inland side.

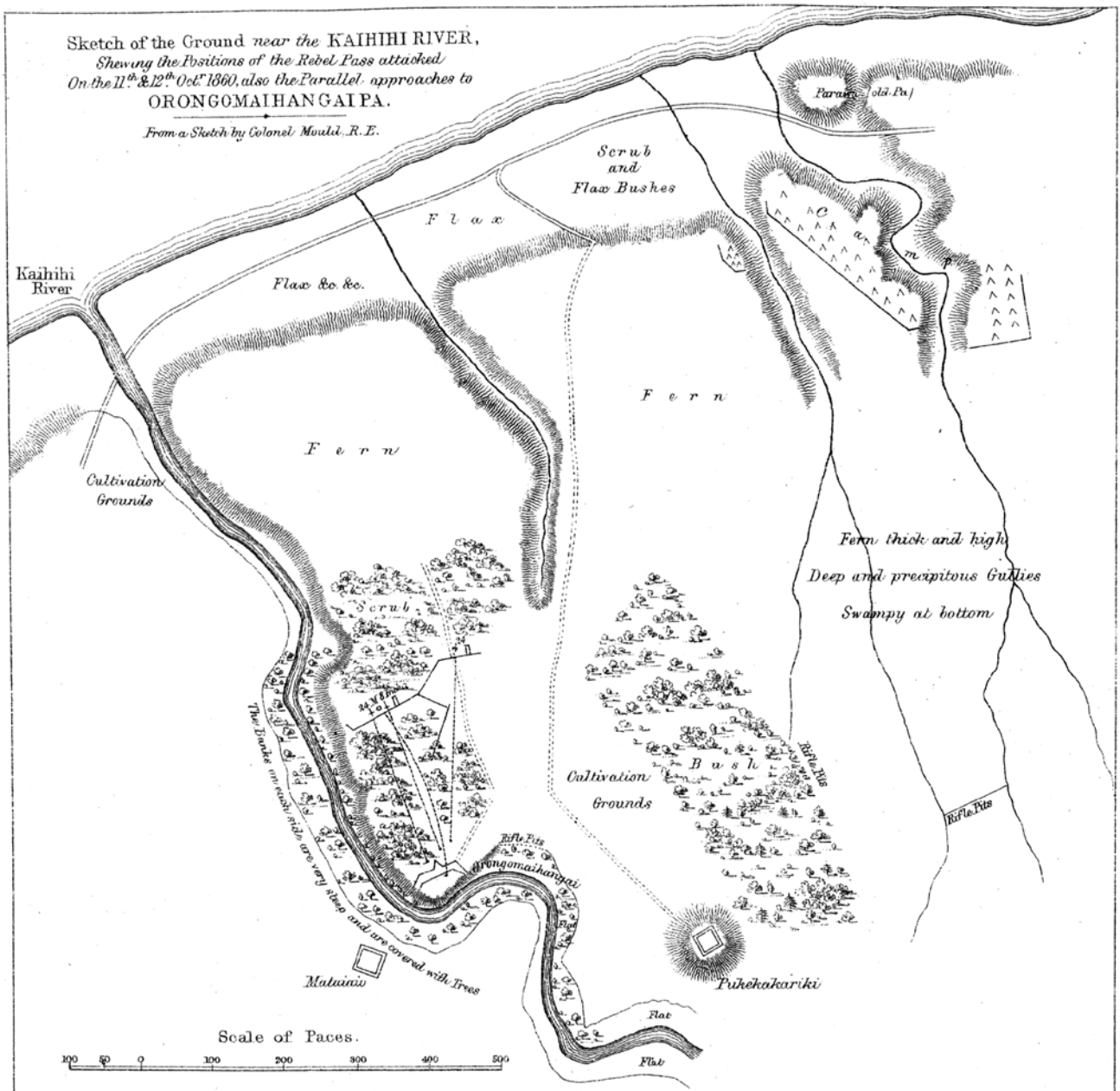


Figure 98. 'Sketch of the Ground near Kaihihi River...', showing the Camp Parawaha earthwork, the three pā, Mataiaio, Orongomaihangai and Pukekakariki, and line of sap to Orongomaihangai. From Mould 1863.

9.96 Fort Strange

P19/44 (2586850E 6229650N); N108/48; recorded 1975; Fig. 99.

Tataraimaka; at terrace edge above the scarp to shore platform and beach, 100 m west of Lower Pitone Road.

British Army redoubt, established in April 1860 to secure European farms at Tataraimaka (see also Fort Turner, (9.97)); 65th Regiment garrison under Captain T.G. Strange; abandoned on 29 June 1860 after defeat of the 40th Regiment at Puketakauere (sections 9.52, 9.54; Prickett 1994a: 26–29).

Small square redoubt with flanking defence at four corners covering all sides.

Under pasture; the earthworks of Fort Strange were revealed within the 1863 St George's Redoubt (9.104) by a geophysical survey carried out by Hans Bader in 2008.

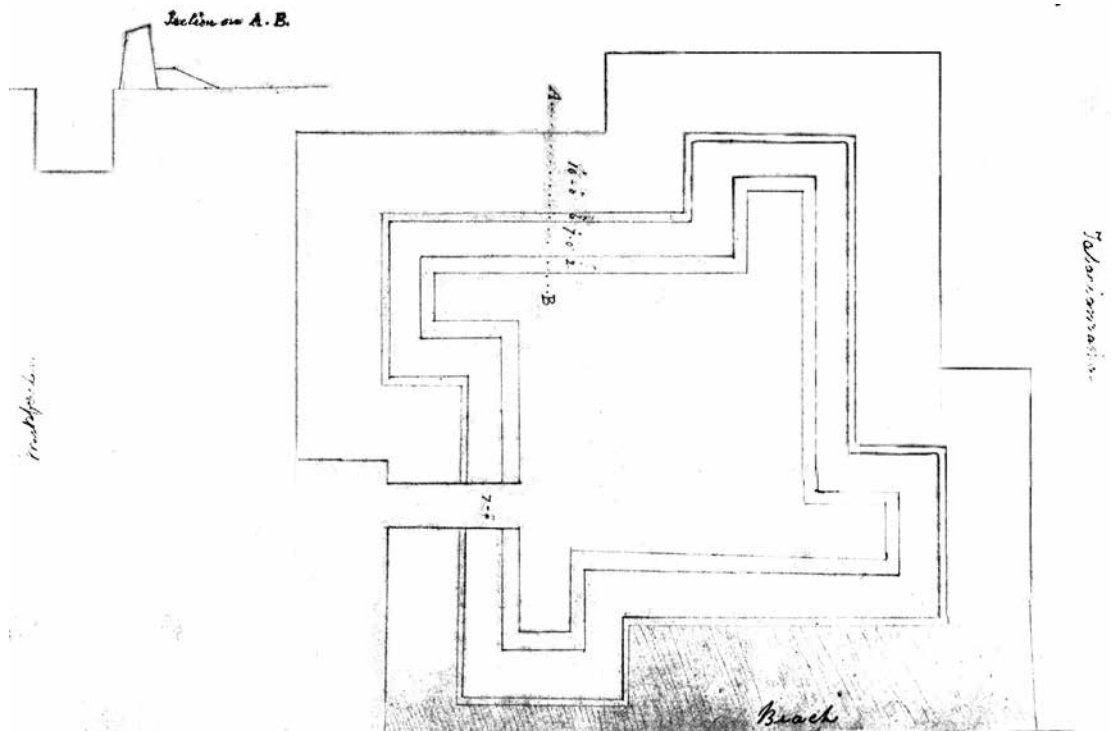


Figure 99. 'Tataraimaka Redoubt'. Military engineer's drawing of Fort Strange, probably 1860. Copy photograph of original drawing by Sergeant Hall, collection of Puke Ariki, New Plymouth, PHO2013-0013.

9.97 Fort Turner

P19/42 (2589100E 6229800N); N108/46; recorded 1975.

Tataraimaka; on a low hill, 100 m east of Lower Timaru Road, c. 1.5 km from the Greenwood Road corner.

British Army redoubt established in April 1860 to secure European farms at Tataraimaka (see also Fort Strange; (9.96)); 65th Regiment garrison under Captain H.F. Turner; abandoned on 29 June 1860 after the defeat of the 40th Regiment at Puketakauere (9.52, 9.54; Prickett 1994a: 26–29). The site subsequently occupied and modified by Māori (9.107).

Unusual defensive earthworks may relate in part to later Māori works at the site.

The hill and part of the site was cut down for a house, which has now gone; remaining earthworks are stable under pasture.

9.98 Kaihihi River sap

P19 (2583400E 6227000N); no site record; Fig. 98.

Okato; on the terrace north of Kaihihi River, c. 800 m from the mouth.

Pākehā sap (attacking trench) dug on 11 October 1860 towards Orongomaihangai (9.101), which was the central of three pā on both sides of the Kaihihi River (see also Mataiaio, (9.99) and Pukekakariki, (9.103)). The three pā and Pākehā sap were abandoned the next day.

Not visible on cultivated ground, but trenches will survive subsurface.

9.99 Mataiaio

P19/105 (2583500E 6226600N); N108/138; recorded 1979; Fig. 98.

Okato; on terrace south of Kaihihi River, c. 1 km from mouth.

Mataiaio was one of three pā attacked by General Pratt in October 1860, along with Orongomaihangai (section **9.101**) and Pukekakariki (**9.103**). All were abandoned on 12 October, then destroyed by troops (Prickett 1994a: 48, 52–53).

A rectangular work c. 50 × 30 m, with escape ditch from the southeast corner to the outer ditch of nearby pre-European Pukearuhe pā (P19/104).

Under pasture; now ploughed out, but visible in 1950 NZ Aerial Mapping photograph 1790/3.

9.100 Okato Blockhouse

P19/47 (2586500E 6222800N); N108/51; recorded 1975.

Okato; summit of isolated hill east of Oxford Road behind Okato township; ‘Okato’ trig 133 m a.s.l. on the site.

Taranaki Military Settlers completed the earthwork defences in September 1865 and the blockhouse by 17 October, on an old pā site. The blockhouse was locked up in late 1866, then maintained and occasionally used by local militia. In the 1870s there was a small Armed Constabulary garrison at the blockhouse in the period up to the Parihaka Campaign, when Okato was at the southern boundary of Pākehā Taranaki. The blockhouse was finally abandoned only after troops occupied Parihaka in late 1881 (Prickett 1999: 34–36).

First described in historical sources as a redoubt with blockhouse, but later as a T-shaped blockhouse for 30 men, plus officer’s, store and guard rooms, within a small, unflanked stockade. In 1975 archaeological remains showed a 15 × 11 m work with massive earth walls and circular bastion at the northeast corner (Prickett 1999: 36).

Now in a private garden; earthwork in good condition in 1975, but considerably deteriorated and damaged when viewed in 1997.

9.101 Orongomaihangai

P19/40 (2583500E 6226800N); N108/44; recorded 1975, update 2003; Figs 98, 100.

Okato; Kaihihi River right bank, 1 km from sea.

The central of three pā (see also Mataiaio (**9.99**) and Pukekakariki (**9.103**)) attacked in October 1860 by General Pratt, employing a sap (**9.98**) to approach Orongomaihangai. This was a precursor of the well-known early 1861 sap at Waitara (**9.53**). Māori abandoned Orongomaihangai on 12 October and it was then destroyed by troops (Prickett 1994a: 48, 52–53).

The pā is c. 52 m across and 40 m maximum depth from a central forward bastion. At the front was a flax screen and stockade, backed by traversed rifle trench, with huts behind. At the rear was a cliff to Kaihihi River.

A fence now divides the pā front, which is under pasture with the defensive line still visible despite cultivation, from the interior which remains largely under trees, gorse, etc.

9.102 Porou

P19/223 (2586300E 6228700N); N108/105; recorded 1978, updates 2002, 2004; also Katikara.

Okato; on a low but commanding mound on the terrace west of Katikara River, 1 km from sea.

This pā was the main object of attack in the Katikara engagement on 4 June 1863, when 28 Whanganui defenders were killed, most of them buried at St George’s Redoubt (**9.104**; Prickett 2008).

PLAN AND SECTION OF
 ORONGOMAIHANGAI PA,
 Captured on the 12th October 1860.
From a Sketch by Colonel Mould, Royal Engineers.

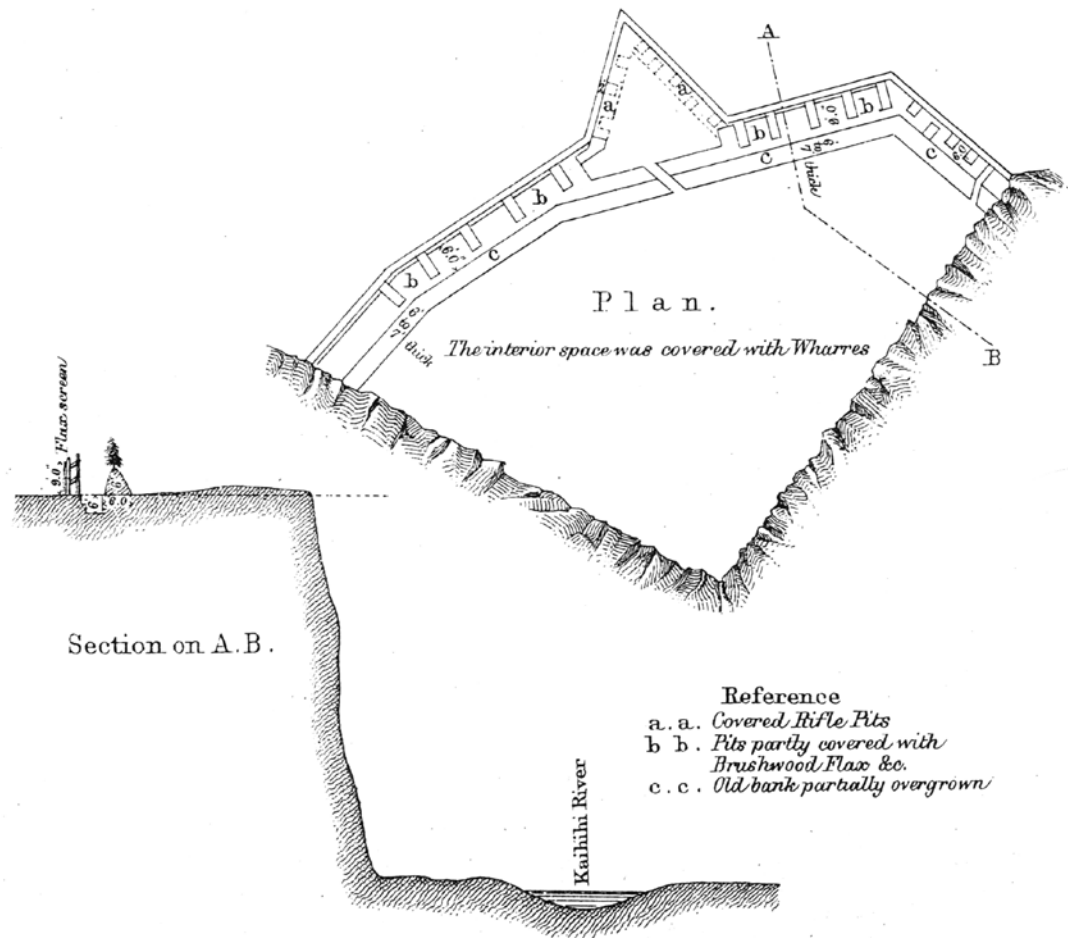


Figure 100. 'Plan and section of Orongomaihangai pa...' From Mould 1863.

Porou was an earthwork pā without a stockade or even a fence. Two or three huts were inside the parapet of a small inner work, and two external rifle trenches and pits faced the direction of the expected attack only, the rear (south) side being largely undefended.

Under pasture; visible in NZ Aerial Mapping 1950 aerial photograph 1789/3. When the grass is short, it is possible to see slight surface evidence over an area c. 50 × 50 m.

9.103 Pukekakariki

P19/205 (2583800E 6226700N); N108/189; recorded 1981; Fig. 98.

Okato; west of the bottom of Hampton Road, on low hill behind the present homestead.

One of three pā on both sides of Kaihihi River, attacked by General Pratt in October 1860 (see also Mataiaio (9.99) and Orongomaihangai (9.101)). All were abandoned on 12 October and destroyed by the troops (Prickett 1994a: 48, 52–53).

An historical plan shows a 25 × 25 m pā, with usual flax screen and stockade defences and a traversed rifle trench behind, four huts inside.

The site is now largely destroyed by a house on the north side of hill; a significant and rare section of traversed rifle trench survives in the paddock behind.

9.104 St George's Redoubt

P19/44 (2586850E 6229650N); N108/48; recorded 1975; also Tataraimaka Redoubt.

Tataraimaka; terrace edge above the beach, 100 m west of Lower Pitone Road; see also Fort Strange (9.96).

Established in April 1863 when British troops returned to the Tataraimaka district which had been held by Māori since winter 1860 in the First Taranaki War. The redoubt was the forward base for an attack on Māori positions south of Katikara River (9.102) on 4 June 1863 (Prickett 2008), then abandoned on 30 June 1863 when troops were sent north to the Waikato War. On 24 November 1864 it was reoccupied by British troops; finally abandoned on 18 April 1866 (Prickett 1996: 4-11).

A large earthwork redoubt, c. 60 × 60 m, has bastion defence at all corners each covering one side. An 1863 painting shows the redoubt in campaigning mode with the interior filled with tents; later there would have been huts inside (Prickett 2008: 14).

Under grass, in reserve; defensive works visible in 1975 have since been largely obscured by further cultivation.

9.105 Stoney River Redoubt

P19/33 (2583300E 6225100N); N108/37; recorded 1975; also Ngana or Te Ngana Redoubt.

Okato; Kaihihi Road, on a lahar mound immediately south of the Brophy Road corner.

Established in January 1865 by 200 of the 43rd Regiment, to occupy Māori land south as far as Hangatahua (Stoney) River for military settlement. Held by the 50th Regiment until abandoned in May 1867 (Prickett 1999: 8-9). The Hangatahua River was the frontier of Pākehā settlement for 15 years until crossed by troops in the Parihaka Campaign, March 1880.

Site destroyed by construction of present house in the early 1970s.

9.106 Tataraimaka Blockhouse

P19/46 (2588400E 6225500N); N108/50; recorded 1975.

Tataraimaka; on a mound behind the house southwest of the SH45 and Upper Pitone Road intersection; location given on Block Sheet Cape II (14/4).

Established in February 1865 by Military Settlers, to give security to Pākehā returning to farms in the district which were abandoned in 1860. Locked up in late 1866 but maintained as militia post, then occupied briefly in February 1869 after the raid on Pukearuhe in north Taranaki (Prickett 1999: 7-8).

Blockhouse for 25 men, with barrack room, an officer's room and one storeroom, probably of two-storey form (Prickett 1999: 8).

Now under pasture, but probably destroyed by a former house on the site (now gone), which was behind the present house.

9.107 *Tataraimaka pā*

P19; no site record, not located.

Tataraimaka; Greenwood Road area.

In September 1860, five pā with trenches and double stockades were reported extending inland from the coast south of the Timaru River. They included one on the site of Fort Turner

(section 9.97). All were destroyed by troops. The fortified line was presumably aimed at contesting a Pākehā return to Tataraimaka (Prickett 1994a: 28–29).

Nothing is known of these pā except for brief contemporary mentions.

At Fort Turner, the archaeological evidence may represent both Pākehā and Māori defensive works, and so the rare circumstance of a Māori position on the site of an earlier Pākehā work, rather than the other way around. The other four pā are unlocated under pasture, but not beyond discovery.

9.108 Te Tutu

P19 (2588700E 624500N); no site record.

Tataraimaka; end of Albion Road, at ‘Tutu A’ trig, 152 m a.s.l.

Pā on a high hill inland of Tataraimaka Block; among several Taranaki and allied southern iwi bases, inland or south of Tataraimaka in autumn and winter 1863, at the start of the Second Taranaki War. Later, Pākehā forces found Te Tutu abandoned on 22 March 1864. This was followed up by advances on Ahuahua (9.74) on 24 March and Kaitake (9.79) on 25 March, to drive Māori from their last three positions north of Hangatahua (Stoney) River.

Stockaded pā.

No visible archaeological evidence.

9.109 Tukitukipapa

P19/119 (2585250E 6228750N); N108/153; recorded 1978, update 2003.

Okato; coast road joining Leith and Perth Roads.

At or near the kāinga of the same name which was attacked in the 4 June 1863 Katikara engagement (Prickett 2008). On 22 January 1865 an agreement was made between the Ngamahanga hapū of the Taranaki iwi and Pākehā military authorities at Tukitukipapa pā, ‘... formed of earthworks exactly after the models of English redoubts, with flanking angles and ditch complete’ (Taranaki Herald 28 Jan 1865).

An earth bank c. 80 m long cuts off the end on a terrace c. 45 m from the sea cliff, but needs confirmation as the January 1865 work referred to here.

The location is mostly under pasture, but also badly damaged by the road and by recent construction of a house on the site.

SOUTH OF HANGATAHUA (STONEY RIVER)

9.110 Cape Egmont Camp

P20/107 (2575000E 6214000N); N118/98; recorded 1978; Fig. 101.

Cape Egmont; stockade by Kapoiaia Stream 200 m from lighthouse, and small stone redoubt 100 m seaward of the lighthouse (Prickett 1981: 264).

Armed Constabulary provided security for the construction of Cape Egmont Lighthouse 1880–1881 during the Parihaka Campaign.

Stockaded camp and a small stone-built guard redoubt.

A low mound is partly encircled by a derelict wall of dressed stone; no remains of the stockade found.

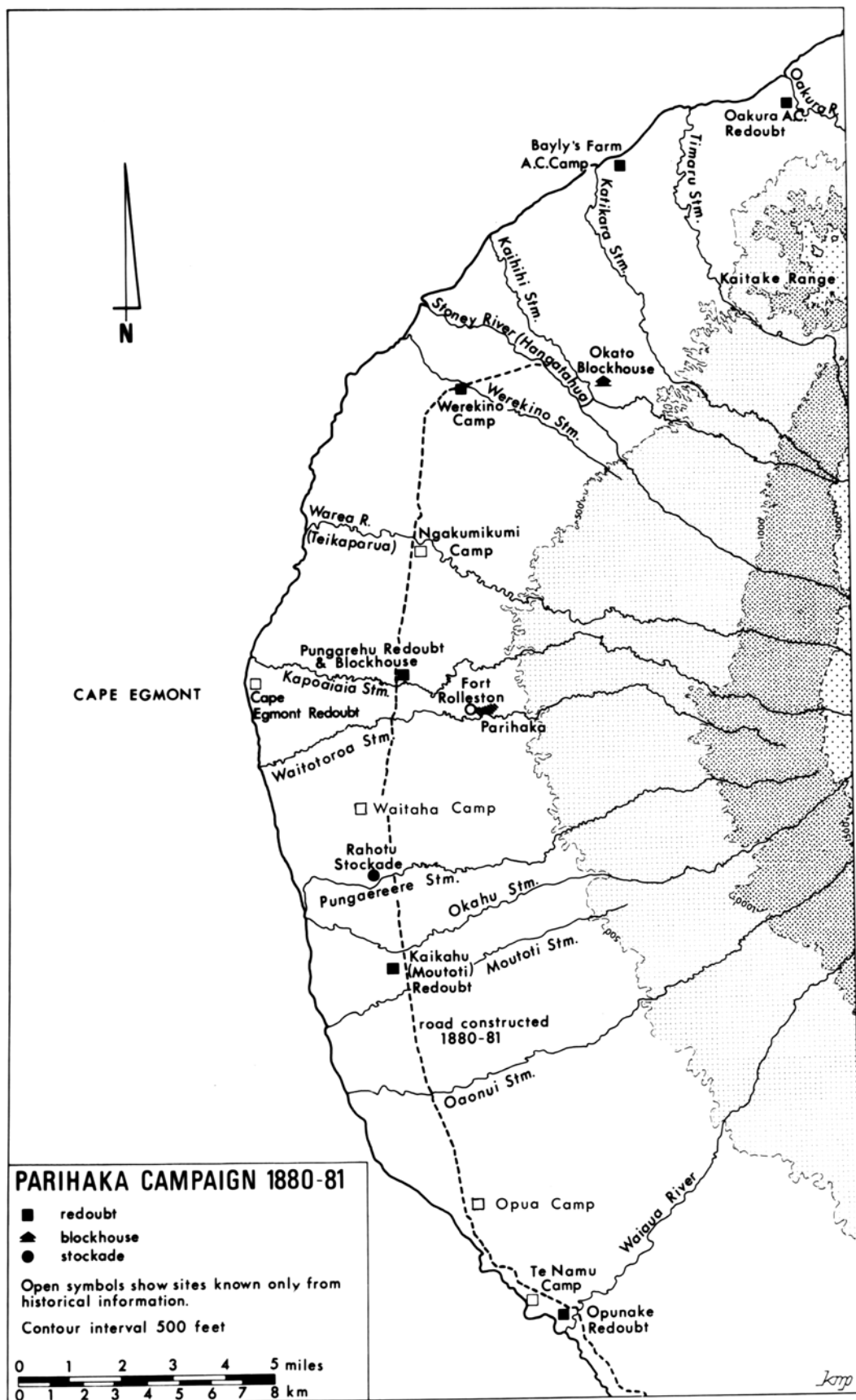


Figure 101. Pākehā fortifications and other historic sites of the Parihaka Campaign 1879–1881. Drawing by K.M. Peters.

9.111 Fort Rolleston

P20/110 (2582200E 6212600N); N118/101; recorded 1978, update 2005; Fig. 101.

Parihaka; 150 m from Parihaka Road, on the high east end of a dominating hill west of the kāinga.

Parihaka was occupied on 5 November 1881 by 1500 Volunteers and Armed Constabulary, with Fort Rolleston (after Native Minister William Rolleston) then put up, comprising an earth breastwork and Nelson Artillery Volunteers Armstrong gun. The last Armed Constabulary garrison at Parihaka departed in March 1885 (Prickett 1981: 264–266).

Oval breastwork c. 7 × 9 m intact under scrub in 2005. Remains have not been found of a second stockade overlooking the village from another hill.

9.112 Kaikahu Redoubt

P20/109 (2579500E 6204500N); N118/100; recorded 1976, update 2004; Fig. 101.

Oaonui, Rahotu; 100 m west of SH45, 350 m south of Manihi Road.

The second Armed Constabulary post north of Opunake in the Parihaka Campaign (see also Opua Camp (9.116), established in May 1880 for the security of road-builders; abandoned on 25 June (Prickett 1981: 258–260).

Defensive earthworks on a small lahar mound measure 31–36.5 × 20 × 17 m, with a magazine pit inside and 7 m diameter bastion extension from northwest corner. The associated camp was on level ground between the redoubt and Maungahoki Stream to the south.

Good order under pasture.

9.113 Kekeua

P20/40 (2582100E 6214500N); recorded 1978.

Pungarehu; c. 3.2 km from SH45 up Wataroa Road; trig 'B' 152 m a.s.l. on the site.

Kekeua was originally a pre-European pā, which was reworked in 1864 (Taranaki Herald 18 June 1864), before being attacked and destroyed on 13 June 1865 by troops from Warea Redoubt (9.123).

Described as '... old fortified position with a deep trench around it' (Cowan 1983 II: 57).

In pasture and still in good condition, despite having a fence line up part of the pā and trig on the summit.

9.114 Ngakumikumi Camp

P20/24 (2580400E 6217700N); N118/13; recorded 1976; Fig. 101.

Warea; east side of SH45, opposite Burgess Road and Warea School, south of Teikaparua (Warea) River.

Established by Armed Constabulary in the Parihaka Campaign on 3 May 1880, for the road workers' camp south of Stoney River; occupied discontinuously to 1882. Ngakumikumi kāinga at the same location was destroyed by troops from Warea Redoubt on 13 June 1865 (Prickett 1981: 249–251).

Small round guard redoubt on top of a lahar, immediately south of a farm race; extensive camp north to Teikaparua River.

Redoubt bulldozed c. 1970; some of the associated camp may survive.

9.115 Okeanui

P20/99 (2581500E 6213900N); N118/90; recorded 1978.

Pungarehu; 200 m south of Wataroa Road, 2 km from SH45, south bank of Kapoiaia River.

Pā attacked and destroyed on 13 June 1865 by troops from Warea Redoubt.

Hill pā, with a ditch around a near rectangular 30 × 20 m platform, on a lahar above a steep slope west to Kapoiaia River.

Good condition.

9.116 Opuā Camp

P20 (2561100E 6197300N); no site record, not located; Fig. 101.

Opuā; 3 km north of Opunake, close to SH45 bridge over Okeweu Stream.

The first Armed Constabulary post north of Opunake in the Parihaka Campaign; established for the security of road-builders, probably in March 1880; abandoned May 1880 (Prickett 1981: 257).

Nothing known of camp fortifications.

Present condition not known.

9.117 Opunake Redoubt

P20/18 (2583950E 6193800N); N118/7; recorded 1975; Figs 101, 102.

Opunake; terrace edge above the south end of Opunake Beach, in a reserve adjacent to the Layard Street and Bowen Crescent corner.

Established on 29 April 1865 by 400 troops, mostly 43rd Regiment. In May 1867 the redoubt was abandoned by the 50th Regiment and taken over by local chief Wiremu Matakatea (Prickett 1999: 29–34). In 1875, Pākehā troops returned to Opunake when 25 Armed Constabulary set up camp at Te Namu 1.5 km west of the 1865 redoubt. In April 1879 the Armed Constabulary rebuilt and significantly altered the earlier redoubt as a major base for the forthcoming Parihaka Campaign. Opunake was well situated for this purpose, being behind a sheltered bay and mid-way between

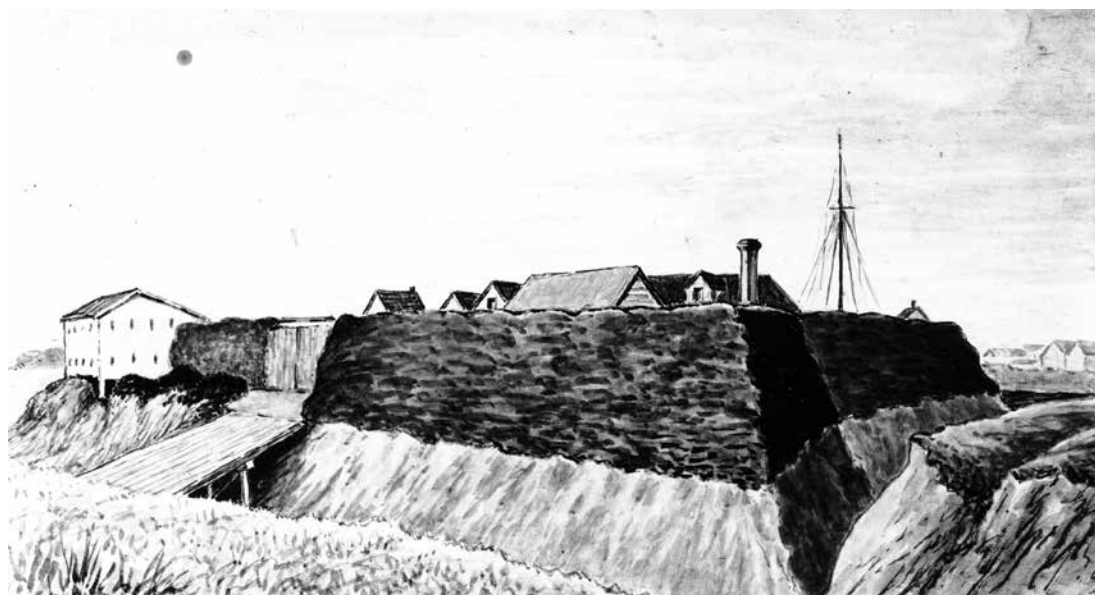


Figure 102. Armed Constabulary redoubt, Opunake, 1881. From Cowan 1983 II: 495.

the Hangatahua and Waingongoro River frontiers of Māori land at the time. Opunake Redoubt was finally abandoned in early 1887 (Prickett 1981: 187–195).

The 1865 work made use of the cliff for one side, with defensive angles flanking the other three sides. Rebuilt in 1879 to be fully enclosed, 120 × 130 ft (37 × 40 m); flanking defence at two corners covered three sides, the inland side being slightly angled to the centre (Prickett 1999: 29–34).

The defensive ditch is now barely visible under grass; significant subsurface remains likely.

9.118 Pungarehu Camp

P20/108 (2579650E 6213750N); N118/99; recorded 1976, update 2006; Heritage New Zealand Category II registration No 818 (blockhouse only); Fig. 101.

Pungarehu; both sides of SH45, north of Pungarehu Road.

Camp established on 21 June 1880 for a large garrison, and the the main forward base for the 5 November 1881 move on Parihaka, 2.5 km inland. Given over to civilian police in 1885 (Prickett 1981: 251–256).

Fortifications comprised a large single-storey blockhouse within an earth breastwork on a prominent lahar hill east of SH45, immediately north of Pungarehu Road, and a small round guard redoubt on the seaward side of the main road.

The blockhouse survives as a private residence with an adjacent two cell lock-up used as a garden shed; guard redoubt earthworks are good order under pasture west of SH45. Terraces used for buildings and tents, etc. and other remains, make up an important archaeological complex.

9.119 Rahotu Stockade

P20/63 (2578600E 6207500N); N118/54; recorded 1978, update 2005; Figs 101, 103.

Rahotu; north of Rahotu Road, southwest corner of sports ground in Rahotu Domain.

Camp established in January 1881 by Armed Constabulary and road builders; the stockade was still under construction in July. Most of the garrison left on 5 November 1881 to the occupation of Parihaka; Rahotu was abandoned in December 1881 (Prickett 1981: 260–264).

The main work was a well-built rectangular stockade 77 × 56 ft (23.5 × 18 m) of 10 inch (250 mm) × 12 ft (3.5 m) high timbers on the levelled top of a lahar mound north of the road. South of the road an earth breastwork enclosed the top of a smaller lahar. Next to the two fortified lahars was an extensive associated camp on lower ground. There had been older pā on both mounds.

The stockade site is in good order, now mostly under grass, having been cleared of large trees in recent years. The earthwork south of the road has been gutted by a quarry, a remaining ditch and bank on the south side may relate to the 1881 occupation.

9.120 Waikoukou

P20; no site record, not located; also Waikoko.

Opunake; 6 miles (10 km) inland of Tipoka.

Pā attacked in General Chute's campaign inland of Tipoka and Opunake on 1 February 1866 (Cowan 1983 II: 70).

No description.

Present condition not known.

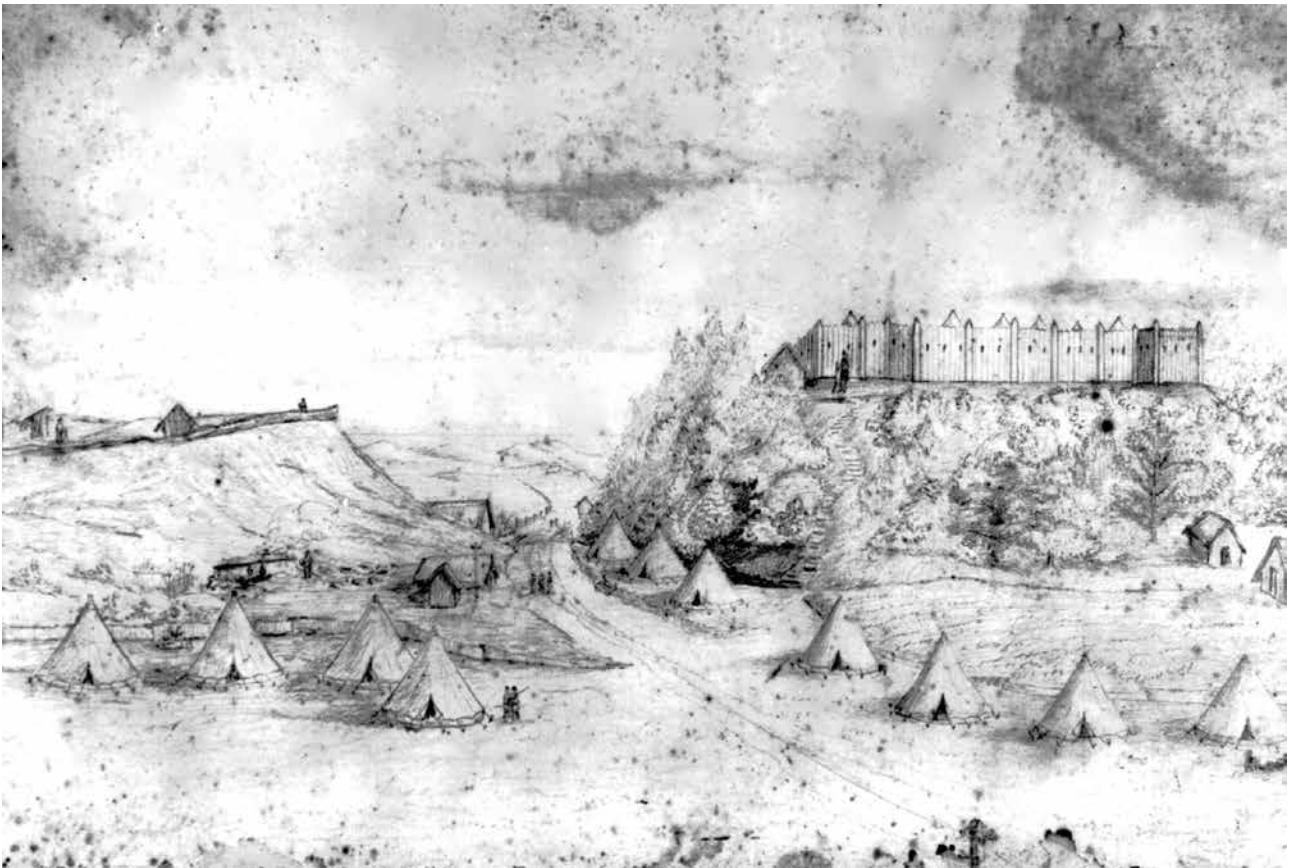


Figure 103. Rahotu Stockade; showing stockade at right, low earthwork at left and tents on low ground. *W.W. Fulton, pencil, [ca 1881], Ref: A-081-010, Alexander Turnbull Library, Wellington.*

9.121 Waitaha Camp

P20 (2578500E 6210000N): no site record, not located; also Pukehinau Camp; Fig. 101.

Rahotu; south bank of Waitaha Stream, 600 m seaward of South Road.

Established in June 1880 by road-building parties, abandoned before April 1881 (Prickett 1981: 260).

‘Temporary defensive work’ as at Ngakumikumi (9.114), Opua (9.116) and Kaikahu (9.112; AJHR 1881 H18: 3).

Present condition not known.

9.122 Warea

P20/92 (2577000E 6218500N); N118/83; recorded 1979.

Warea; on the coast, south side of Teikaparua (Warea) River.

Warea pā was bombarded by HMS Niger on 30 March 1860, two days after the Battle of Waireka; later burned by troops in Colonel Gold’s southern reconnaissance, 27 April 1860 (Prickett 1994a: 26–27).

Stockade pā, on level ground without natural defence.

Under pasture; only in-filled pits were visible in 1979; cannonball find recorded.

9.123 Warea Redoubt

P20/17 (2577000E 6218700N); N118/6; recorded 1975.

Warea; on the coast, 400 m south of the coast end of Stent Road; between the beach and paper road.

Established on 28 April 1865 by two companies of the 43rd Regiment under Colonel F.H. Synge; followed by the 50th Regiment in March 1866. On 3 May 1867 British troops were replaced by 25 militia; the post was abandoned in early 1868 (Prickett 1999: 26–29).

Field evidence shows the early redoubt (40 × 30 m), which housed a substantial garrison of regimental troops, was replaced by a 10 × 10 m work in the southeast corner of the first work along with the original 7 × 7 m bastion at that corner; 1978 excavations showed the smaller work to be built around an existing blockhouse within the earlier work (Prickett 1994b). Hut dug-outs and fireplaces mark an external camp north of the redoubt.

Under pasture, in good order.

9.124 Werekino Camp

P19/116 (2581900E 6222850N); N108/150; recorded 1976, updates 2004, 2005; Fig. 101.

Puniho; 100 m seaward of SH45, left bank of Werekino Stream.

The first camp south of Hangatahua (Stoney) River in the Parihaka Campaign was established on 8 March 1880 by 260 Armed Constabulary, soon joined by 63 road-builders; subsequently occupied by up to 600 men. Werekino was abandoned on 3 May 1880 when the whole force moved on to Ngakumikumi as the road work moved south (Prickett 1981: 246–250).

Extensive camp between two small guard redoubts on top of lahar mounds.

Under pasture; one redoubt in good condition, 8 m in diameter with a low earth parapet; the other earthwork in poor condition.

10. South Taranaki

Fighting in South Taranaki began when General Cameron's invasion army marched north from Whanganui on 24 January 1865. This was a major New Zealand campaign, exceeded in the number of Pākehā troops only by the Waikato War a year earlier. A chain of redoubts protected communications, notably on each bank of the Waitotara, Patea, Manawapou and Waingongoro rivers. Pā were mostly inland, at or near the bush edge, and were left alone. The invasion halted at Waingongoro River on the last day of March 1865. British troops then stayed on at the redoubts, while colonial forces took Māori land in return for service, with local fortifications put up for refuge and defence.

On 30 December 1865, General Chute marched north from Whanganui on a very different campaign. By the time his combined British Army, colonial and Whanganui Māori force returned on 9 February 1866, seven fortified pā and 21 kāinga had been attacked and taken in search and destroy operations. When British regiments left South Taranaki later that year, colonial troops took over the garrison role.

Titokowaru's 1868–69 campaign was an outstanding strategic episode of the New Zealand Wars. Colonial troops were defeated at Te Ngutu o te Manu and Moturoa and forced back to Whanganui, abandoning Pākehā settlement north of Kai Iwi but for posts at Patea and Wairoa (Waverley). The Māori effort failed early in 1869 when Tauranga Ika, the greatest of Titokowaru's pā, was given up without a fight. In the years that followed, Pākehā settlers on Māori land were protected by Armed Constabulary and militia posts.

The last military activity in the region was the Parihaka Campaign, consisting of the Pākehā invasion of coastal Taranaki districts between the Hangatahua (Stoney) and Waingongoro Rivers, the only substantial part of Taranaki still in Māori hands after the wars of the sixties. Key European posts were maintained until the Armed Constabulary was disbanded in 1886. There were no Māori works. Parihaka Campaign works included here are only those south of Opunake; fortifications at Opunake and north are under North Taranaki in Section 9.

Note that in this report the boundary between South Taranaki (Section 10) and Whanganui (Section 11) is taken as being at Patea, despite most campaigns taking place throughout the region north of Whanganui into South Taranaki. In Cameron's campaign, the Patea, Manawapou and Waingongoro redoubts are included here in Section 10, and the Waitotara redoubts and Wēraroa pā are in Section 11. In Titokowaru's campaign, Turuturumokai and Te Ngutu o te Manu are in Section 10, and Moturoa and Tauranga Ika in Section 11.

10.1 Canada Redoubt

Q21; no site record, not located.

Hawera; south side of town, within the block formed by South and Manawapou Roads, 'Princess Street Extension' (Puriri Street) and Fairfield Road (Buist ms 1: 8–9), or at the end of Iredale Road (Bromley 1981: 30).

In July 1868, the Middlemass family from Canada built an earth fort around their whare (Buist ms 1: 8), or around two small houses (Bromley 1981: 31). When settlers returned in 1869 after Titokowaru's war, the redoubt was rebuilt and held by 65 Carlyle (i.e. Patea) Rifle Volunteers. It was closed down in March 1870 (Lovegrove 1971: 20).

The 1868 redoubt was a small earthwork, defensible by a few settlers. In 1869 there were two loopholed blockhouses in a work for 65 men (Lovegrove 1971: 20), suggesting a fort similar to the Hawera Stockade (10.2) or Manutahi Redoubt (10.9).

Any remains or present condition are not known.

10.2 Hawera Stockade

Q21 (c. 2620300E 6178750N); no site record; Fig. 7.

Hawera; High Street, at the site of the present Public Library.

Approval was given in October 1869 for the erection of a stockade with two blockhouses (Bromley 1981: 36). The stockade built in 1870 was then headquarters of No 2 Company of the Patea Militia until 1874, and probably used by other volunteer units after that (Lovegrove 1971: 19).

A rectangular fortification 102 × 50 ft (31 × 15 m) was made up of two blockhouses separated by a 50 × 50 ft (15 × 15 m) square yard, with two lengths of 8 ft (2.5 m) high stockade of 12 × 8 inch (300 × 200 mm) matai, each with an entry to the central yard, between the blockhouses. Each blockhouse measured 50 × 26 ft (15 × 8 m), with a corrugated-iron roof and exterior walls, a timber interior wall (i.e. to the yard) and 6 inch (150 mm) wall cavity filled with gravel all around; all sides of the two buildings, including the yard, were loopholed. Two small timber bastions at opposite corners of the work had pits dug beneath an upper floor to give two rows of four loopholes at all four sides (data from Cowan 1983 II: 478).

The bastion rifle-pits and any other underground features may survive under later buildings on the site.

10.3 Kakaramea Blockhouse

Q21/329 (2634200E 6165400N); N129/221; recorded 1964; also Ginger's Blockhouse (Buist ms2: 10).

Kakaramea; hill west of Kakaramea Road and above SH3, behind the hotel and school.

Occupied by 20 men in September 1866, just inland of the newly surveyed Kakaramea town site; abandoned in March 1867. Reoccupied in August 1868 in response to the Titokowaru campaign, then abandoned a second time in October 1868, along with all of South Taranaki except for Patea (Church ms: 131-132). The significance of 'Ginger's' is not known (Buist ms1: 4).

Probably a standard form of single-storey blockhouse in a stockade.

Church (ms: 131) refers to large depressions where a building may have stood on the high point in the paddock next to the school. Present condition not known.

10.4 Kakaramea Redoubt

Q21/154 (2635350E 6164350N); N129/176; recorded 1964; also Cameron Redoubt; Fig. 104.

Kakaramea, Patea; on a low rise 100 m southwest of the Wilson Road railway crossing, 1.5 km from SH3.

Established by General Cameron after the 15 March 1865 fight at Te Ngaio. Cowan (1983 II: 54) refers to a Māori village at the redoubt site, for which Buist (ms2: 2) gives the name 'Te Awa'. First held by 120 of the 57th Regiment, later by the 50th and 18th Regiments; colonial forces took over in September 1866 but soon abandoned the post (Buist ms1: 2). A militia force returned in August 1868, early in the Titokowaru campaign, but left again the next month; Māori forces then occupied the abandoned work (Buist ms2: 11), destroying the buildings (Lovegrove 1971: 4).

Earthwork redoubt c. 50 × 40 m, of unusual irregular pentagonal form with four bastions covering all sides and entry through the west bastion. A ditch extends c. 40 m from the defensive ditch at the large south bastion, probably to huts outside the fortification.

Important earthwork in good condition under pasture; Buist (ms1: 2) refers to '... signs of early Māori occupation'.



Figure 104. Kakaramea Redoubt. Photo: A.G. Buist, 1965.

10.5 Ketemarae

1. Q21/32 (2620500E 6182400N); N129/33; recorded 1960, update 2000.
2. Q21/33 (2620700E 6182700N); N129/34; recorded 1961, update 2000.

Normanby; two recorded sites north of Ohangai Road, east and west of Tawhiti Stream.

Cowan (1983 II: 66) describes Ketemarae as a 'stockaded village', which may be correct in both respects, i.e. there was only one Ketemarae, not two as indicated by the site records, and that it was not a fortification but a kāinga within a stockade.

The two recorded sites are in poor condition in pasture.

10.6 Manaia Redoubt

P21/24 (2607700E 6183600N); recorded 1994; Fig. 105.

Manaia Domain, Bennett Drive, off Hassard Street; on the golf course, 100 m northeast of clubhouse.

Manaia Redoubt dates from the 1880 Pākehā military build-up to the Parihaka Campaign (Church ms: 107). An Armed Constabulary garrison (80 on 31 March 1881, AJHR1881 H18: 12), took part in the November 1881 advance on Parihaka. Officer in charge at Manaia to 1883 was Captain Walter Gudgeon. In 1886 the redoubt became a civilian police station (Lovegrove 1971: 14-15). The redoubt was built on the site of pre-European Te Takahe pā.

Earthwork redoubt, c. 35 × 30 m, with loopholed 12 ft square (3.7 × 3.7 m) blockhouse bastions at the northeast and southwest corners (Cowan 1983 II: 516-517); a 10 m wooden watch-tower over the entry was added in October 1881 (Church ms: 107); the interior was largely filled with buildings.

Good condition under mown grass; wall levelled and some reconstruction of ditch scarps. Two rare original timber blockhouses; the wooden watch-tower blew down in a storm and in 1912 was replaced by the present concrete tower.



Figure 105. Manaia Redoubt: the Parihaka Campaign fortification has two blockhouses at opposite angles for flanking defence. A concrete tower at the centre of the square redoubt replaces the original wooden watch-tower. *Photo: N. Prickett, 1975.*

10.7 Manawapou Redoubt

Q21/153 (2626150E 6171150N); N129/175; recorded 1961–64, updates 2002, 2006; also Thacker's Redoubt; Fig. 106.

Manutahi, Hawera; terrace country 600 m east of Manawapou (Ingape) River mouth; access from SH3 at Manutahi by Lower Taumaha and Manawapou Roads.

On 17 March 1865, General Cameron's force established Manawapou Redoubt south of the Manawapou River, which was first held by the 57th Regiment to March 1866, then the 18th (Royal Irish) under Lieutenant W.F. Thacker. In June 1866, Lieutenant Colonel McDonnell and



Fig. 106. Manawapou Redoubt and associated archaeological complex. *Photo: A.G. Buist, 1965.*

colonial troops established the Patea Military District headquarters at the redoubt, but left in September. Colonial troops returned in May 1867, but withdrew in September 1868 after the defeat at Te Ngutu o te Manu (10.23). The redoubt was reoccupied in 1869 and finally abandoned in December that year (Buist 1968; Church ms: 130). On the north side of the Manawapou River mouth was Tangahoe Redoubt (10.21).

A ditch and bank redoubt c. 30 × 22 m with bastion defence at north and south angles covering all sides; a 35 m trench from the south bastion ditch gave protected access to huts dug into the scarp above the present road. Nearby are round and rectangular enclosures, hut depressions, an old military road, etc.

Under pasture; an outstanding archaeological complex in good condition; a later ditch and bank fence cuts through the fortification.

10.8 Mangamanga

Q21/34 (2618200E 6184700N); N129/36; recorded 1959.

Normanby; north of Ohangai Road, west bank of Waihi Stream.

Lovegrove (1971: 10) and Church (ms: 109) give a pā 'Mangamanga' as the first location of the Waihi Redoubt (10.26). The site record identifies a square area with depressions enclosed by a ditch as a 'possible pā or military camp'; history and archaeology both are yet to be confirmed.

Under pasture; present condition not known.

10.9 Manutahi Redoubt

Q21; no site record, not located; Fig. 107.

Manutahi, Hawera.

General Cameron's army reached Manutahi on 14 March 1865. When the invasion moved on to Manawapou on 18 March, one officer and 50 men remained to secure communications, in a redoubt with a few huts and a blockhouse inside (Lovegrove 1971: 4). This was abandoned in 1868, then destroyed by Titokowaru's force. A second work was built at Manutahi in 1869 (AJHR 1970: D7), designed by Major M. Noake (Cowan 1983 II: 181), whether at the same location is not known.

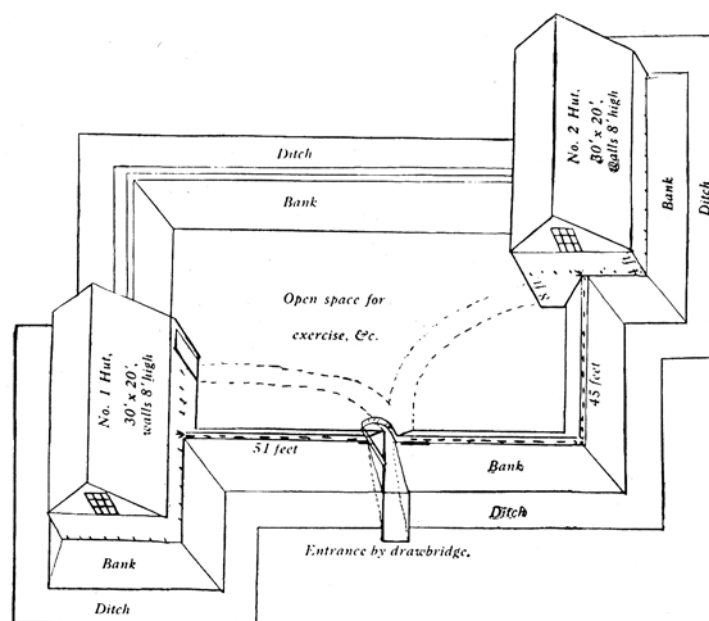


Figure 107. Manutahi Redoubt. From Cowan 1983 II: 181.

The 1869 work was a rectangular redoubt 51 × 45 ft (15.5 × 13.7 m) with two loopholed blockhouses, each 30 × 20 ft (9 × 6 m), in bastions at opposite corners (data from Cowan 1983 II: 181).

Present condition not known.

10.10 Meremere

Q21; no site record, not located.

Meremere, Hawera.

Pā destroyed by Lieutenant Colonel Butler in January 1866 (Lovegrove 1971: 5).

Present condition not known.

10.11 Mokoia Redoubt

Q21 (c. 2627600E 6174200N); no site record, not located.

Lovegrove (1971: 21) reports a redoubt established at Mokoia in 1865, by Royal Engineers for British troops, on the road between Patea and the Waingongoro redoubts. The work is said to have been on the site of the present Mokoia railway station, from which the above map reference is derived.

Present condition not known.

10.12 Normanby Redoubt

Q21/372 (2619400E 6184770N); recorded 2009.

Normanby (Matariki); Normanby Domain, north end of the township, west of Ketemarae Road; at the site is a monument to European soldiers killed in the district.

Site or locality of General Chute's camp in January 1866 before marching to New Plymouth via the inland Whakaahurangi Track. The redoubt dates from 1879 in response to protest ploughing by Māori on land in the district occupied by Pākehā settlers, and is one of three European works east of the Waingongoro River dating from the Parihaka Campaign (see also Waihi Redoubt, (10.26) and Waingongoro Redoubt, (10.27).) Later held by Armed Constabulary (Cowan 1983 II: 515–516).

Rectangular ditch and bank earthwork 70 ft square (21 × 21 m) inside, with bastion defence probably at two corners. A drawbridge was later built over the ditch and a lookout tower erected inside (Cowan 1983 II: 515–516; Bruce 2009).

Under grass in a sports field; rough ground near the monument may indicate earthworks (Bruce 2009).

10.13 Ohawe Redoubt

Q21 (c. 2612900E 6179100N); no site record, not located.

Ohawe: east of Waingongoro River, at the top of the sea cliff (Cowan 1983 II: 528); lost to sea erosion (Cowan 1983 II: 60); also Waingongoro Redoubt.

On 31 March 1865, a British force marched from Tangahoe to put up redoubts on both sides of the Waingongoro River mouth (see also Rangitoto Redoubt, (10.20)). This was as far as General Cameron was to go. Most of invasion army returned to Patea in April, leaving 150 men of the 57th Regiment at each of the Waingongoro redoubts; later replaced by the 18th Regiment. Colonial forces then took over, but left on 13 July 1868, early in the Titokowaru Campaign (Buist ms1: 10). In the nearby river valley is the Ohawe Military Cemetery (Q21/356).

In about 1920 the indistinct earthworks of a northwest bastion and part of the north parapet and ditch survived, the rest having been lost to erosion of the sea cliff (Cowan 1983 II: 60); nothing now remains of the site.

10.14 Okautiro Redoubt

Q21/232 (2627300E 6173800N); N129/174; recorded 1964; also Mokoia Redoubt; Fig. 108.

Mokoia, Hawera; east of Mokoia Road, at the edge of higher ground, 500 m south of Mokoia railway station.

Okautiro Redoubt was completed in June 1867 at a location overlooking the Military Settlers' Mokoia town site. It was held by militia, under Captain Page when Lieutenant Colonel Lepper was in command of colonial forces in south Taranaki (Cowan 1983 II: 185; Buist ms2: 9). By early 1868 it was unoccupied, but maintained for use as needed. Destroyed by Titokowaru's forces on 17 September 1868 (Buist ms1: 8).

Square earthwork redoubt, 50 × 50 ft (15 × 15 m) internally, two 11 × 11 ft (3.5 × 3.5 m) bastions at opposite corners, entry at west side and a wide external ditch. Said to have enclosed a 34 × 18 ft (10 × 5.5 m) unlined and unfloored corrugated-iron shed. A rectangular enclosure measuring 108 × 36 ft (33 × 11 m) to the northwest (see Fig. 108) may have been a stockade (Buist ms1: 8).

Under pasture; present condition not known.

10.15 Otapawa

Q21/123 (2626300E 6181050N); N129/133; recorded 1961, update 2005.

Tawhiti, Hawera; right bank of Tangahoe River, on a spur within a bend; marked on NZMS 260 map; visible over the river from Buchanan Road.

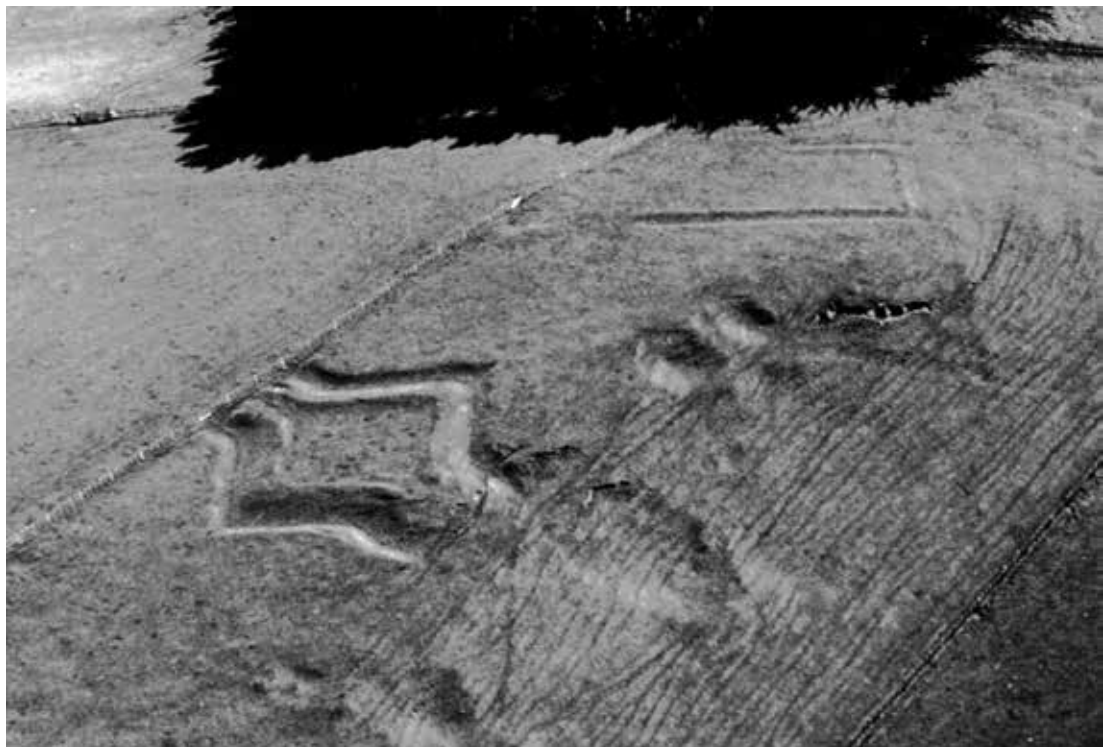


Figure 108. Okautiro Redoubt, Mokoia: the small square earthwork has flanking defence at two angles covering all four sides; a rectangular enclosure above may have been a stockade; on terrace edge are two dug-out soldiers' huts. *Photo: A.G. Buist, 1965.*

Otapawa pā was held by c. 200 Tangahoe, Pakakohi and Ngāti Ruanui when it was attacked by General Chute on 16 January 1866 in the main action of his Taranaki campaign (Cowan 1983 II: 63–66). Māori losses were c. 30 killed and 30 wounded; Pākehā losses were 11 killed, ten wounded.

Otapawa took up a spur extending to the Tangahoe River from terrace country to the west. From a 1918 visit, Cowan (1983 II: 63–64), shows rua forward of the main defences and two external transverse ditches across the spur at the river (east) end.

Under pasture; largely levelled by bulldozer; part of the main defensive bank is clear though damaged.

10.16 Patea Blockhouse

Q21/ Q22; no site record, not located.

Patea; on the terrace within or near the present township.

According to Buist (ms1: 1) the post was established in October 1868 a mile inland, to replace the 1865 redoubt west of the river mouth as the fortified position in the district.

Present condition not known.

10.17 Patea Redoubt (1)

Q22/10 (2637800E 6158500N); N136/9; recorded 1964, update 2006; also Patea Beach Redoubt, Cameron's Redoubt.

Patea; west of end of Beach Road, right bank of the Patea River.

Dates from 16 February 1865 in General Cameron's advance into South Taranaki, when redoubts were put up on both sides of the Waitotara, Patea, Manawapou and Waingongoro rivers, the major position always on the forward side of the river (in relation to the advance of the troops). This (forward) Patea Redoubt was Cameron's headquarters for the remainder of the 1865 campaign, and Pākehā military headquarters in South Taranaki until after the 1868–69 Titokowaru war.

The northern Patea Redoubt has completely eroded into the sea, with the approximate location established from survey plan SO1519 (see also Mallows 2006).

10.18 Patea Redoubt (2)

Q22/9 (2637600E 6158800N); N136/8; recorded 1964; also Dawson's Redoubt, Waituri Redoubt; Fig. 109.

Patea; terrace left (south) of river mouth, west of Pilot Station Road, under and behind the Waituri Marae meeting house.

When General Cameron's campaign reached Patea on 16 February 1865, redoubts were thrown up on both sides of the river. The left bank redoubt was probably abandoned after the campaign, while the right bank redoubt was occupied until 1868 (10.17). 'Dawson's Redoubt' is probably from Captain Richard Dawson, 18th (Royal Irish) Regiment (Hart 1862: 260), presumably in command at the redoubt for part or all of its existence.

Rectangular 140 × 83 ft (43 × 25 m) redoubt with 32 × 27 ft (10 × 8 m) bastions at two angles covering all sides. A trench from the defensive ditch gave access to external huts; a gap in the southwest wall was probably the original redoubt entry.

Most of the site is in good condition under grass, but for the northeast bastion (visible in the 1949 NZ Aerial Mapping photograph 374/3) now under the marae meeting house,



Figure 109. Patea Redoubt: General Cameron's 1865 redoubt on the south bank of Patea River is now partly covered by buildings of Waioturi marae. *Photo K.L. Jones, 1994.*

10.19 *Patea River pā*

Q21/158 (2638000E 6166000N); N129/178; recorded 1964, update 2006.

Kakaramaea, Patea; on the terrace edge west of Patea River, at the eastern edge of tablelands next to pine plantations on steep slope. Access is from the end of Otoia Gorge Road by the left farm track.

Said to have been associated with Titokowaru in 1868; possibly 'Otoia' pā (Cowan 1983 II: 61, 247, 295).

Fortification consists of a zig-zag trench extending 40 m along the cliff edge, and a ditch enclosing a semi-circular area c. 20 m in diameter. No features are visible on the enclosed defended platform.

The site is badly eroded by cattle and quickly losing definition; under threat from cultivation.

10.20 Rangitoto Redoubt

Q21 (2612550E 6179900N); no site record; also Waingongoro Redoubt.

Ohawe: west of Waingongoro River, on the cliff edge of a river erosion loop opposite Ohawe township.

One of two Waingongoro Redoubts dating from General Cameron's campaign; established on 31 March 1865; for history see Ohawe Redoubt (10.13). The name is from nearby Rangitoto pā (see Houston 1965: 150).

A 1951 NZ Aerial Mapping aerial photograph (1900/13) shows an earthwork open to a cliff above the old river loop; this is likely to have been fully enclosed before erosion of the cliff has taken the missing part. Pits immediately south of the redoubt mark soldiers' huts, with a larger group on the terrace edge c. 200 m north.

The redoubt ditch and bank was destroyed by bulldozer in the 1950s (Buist ms1: 10); both groups of pits have also been destroyed since the 1951 photograph; subsurface remains likely.

10.21 Tangahoe Redoubt

Q21/152 (2625700E 6171500N); N129/173; recorded 1964, update 2006; also Inman's Redoubt; Fig. 110.

Mokoia, Hawera; in a paddock south of the Mokoia Road end, at the seaward edge of tableland between the Manawapou and Tangahoe Rivers.

Dates from 17 March 1865 when General Cameron put up redoubts on both sides of the Manawapou River mouth (see Manawapou Redoubt, (10.7)). Named after Captain John Inman, 18th (Royal Irish) Regiment (Hart 1862: 260). The original 150-man redoubt was later replaced by a smaller work (see Fig. 110), probably in September 1866 when the British Army in South Taranaki was replaced by smaller numbers of colonial troops.

The first redoubt measured 170 × 120 ft (52 × 37 m), with bastion defence at the west and east angles. An external ditch at the north angle may have enlarged the early work (see Fig. 110). The second redoubt was 53 × 42 ft (16 × 13 m), with narrow flanking projections at north and south angles. Both works had communication trenches to c. 12 external huts at the terrace edge to the south (all measurements from Buist ms1: 7-8).

Good condition under pasture.



Figure 110. Tangahoe Redoubt: a later small redoubt can be seen within the partly levelled defences of General Cameron's 1865 work; other features include a square enclosure at bottom left and dug-out soldiers' huts right of redoubt and top centre. *Photo: K.L. Jones, 1994.*

10.22 Tauranga-Riri

Q21; no site record, not located.

Hawera, inland of Ohangai and Meremere.

Pā occupied by Māori after the 14 January 1866 fight at Otapawa (10:15) in Chute's campaign, and also by Titokowaru's non-combatants after the Otautu engagement of 13 March 1869 (Lovegrove 1971: 5).

Present condition not known.

10.23 Te Ngutu o te Manu

Q20 (2611800E 6190200N); no site record.

Kapuni district; Te Ngutu o te Manu Domain, on Ahipaipa Road, 600 m south of the Skeet Road corner.

From 1867, South Taranaki Māori rallied to Titokowaru at Te Ngutu o te Manu and nearby bush settlements, with the aim of driving Pākehā troops and settlers from the region. Colonial troops advanced on and destroyed the pā on 21 August 1867. A second attack on 7 September was driven off with 24 Pākehā killed and 26 wounded, in one of the notable Māori successes of the New Zealand Wars (Cowan 1983 II: 202–221; Belich 1989: 98–137).

A stockade pā across a small clearing, with concealed rifle-pits and other firing positions in the bush at both flanks (Belich 1989: 120–121).

No confirmed surface evidence.

10.24 Tirotiromoana

Q21; no site record, not located.

East of Ketemarae (10.5).

Pā destroyed by Lieutenant Colonel Butler on 18 January 1866 (Cowan 1983 II: 70); attacked again by Major McDonnell on 5 November 1866, when described as a village (Cowan 1983 II: 151).

Present condition not known.

10.25 Turuturumokai Redoubt

Q21/328 (2621250E 6181320N); N129/220; recorded 1958, updates 1994, 2000, 2004; Heritage New Zealand Category II registration No 6042; Fig. 111.

Hawera; Turuturumokai Reserve, west of Turuturu Road; marked by a tall stone cairn.

Redoubt first put up in October 1866 by the 18th (Royal Irish) Regiment; abandoned in early 1867. Reoccupied and repaired in June 1868 by Captain Ross and 25 Armed Constabulary. Attacked by Māori on 12 July 1868 in the first action of Titokowaru's campaign, and one of only three attacks on European redoubts in the New Zealand Wars, all in Taranaki (see Sentry Hill, (9.24) and No 3 Redoubt, (9.46)). Most of the garrison were killed or wounded, survivors holding out in two small bastions before troops came from Waihi Redoubt (10.26) and Māori withdrew (Cowan 1983 II: 186–201; Belich 1989: 81–97). Abandoned in September 1868.

Square earthwork c. 18 × 18 m, with bastion defence at northwest and southeast angles; the 5 ft (1.5 m) high walls and 6 ft (1.8 m) deep ditch were unfinished when the redoubt was attacked.

Mostly under pasture, a shallow ditch marks out the redoubt; the southeast bastion is largely destroyed by the Turuturu Road cutting; stone cairn and plaque on the site.

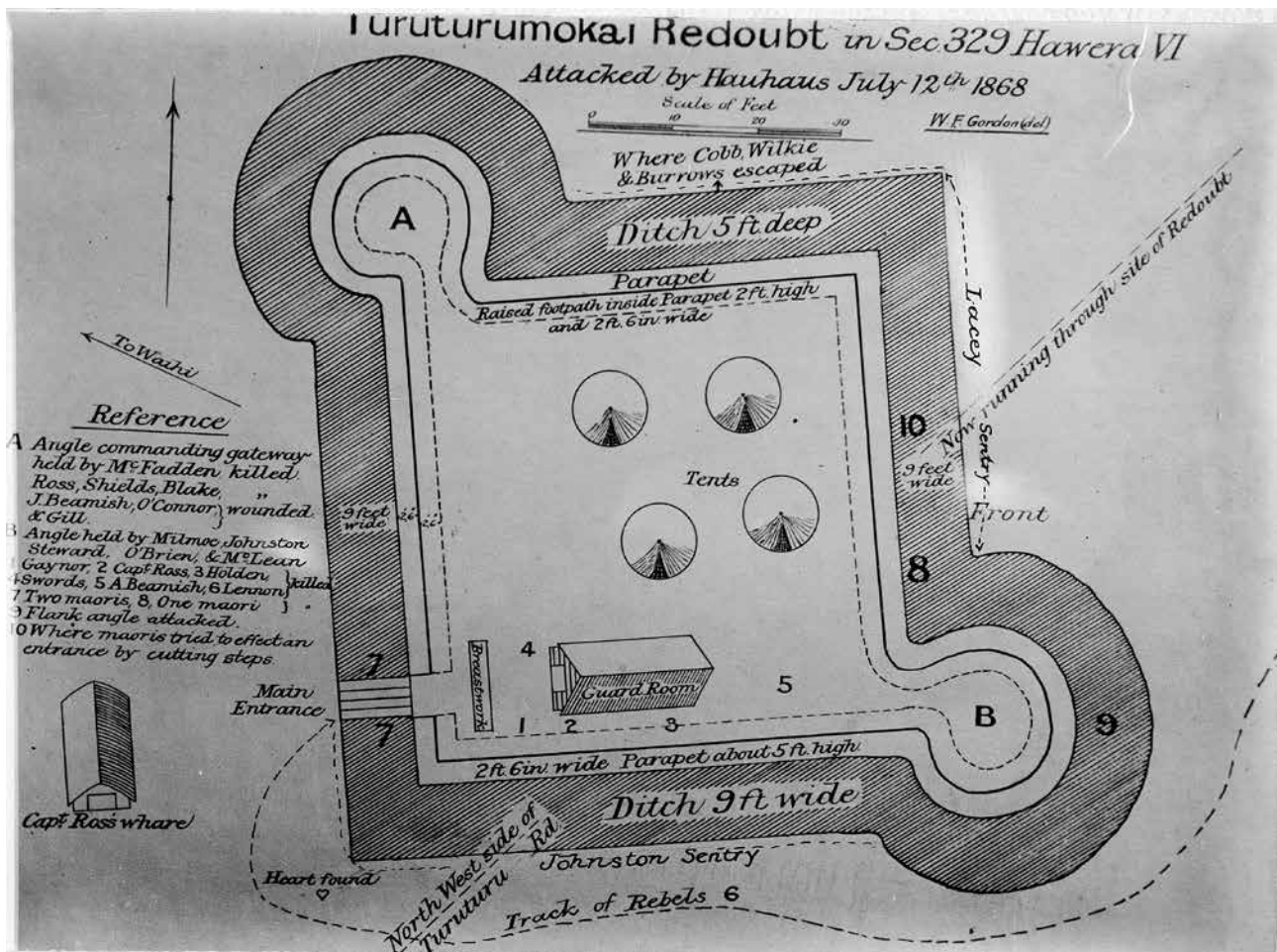


Figure 111. 'Turuturumokai Redoubt', c. 1868. Copy photograph of original drawing by William Francis Gordon, collection of Puke Ariki, New Plymouth, PHO2002-456.

10.26 Waihi Redoubt

Q21/151 (2617850E 6183700N); N129/172; recorded 1964, update 2002; Fig. 112.

Normanby; Pikituroa Road, on terrace past the cemetery, marked by a roadside plaque.

Established in September 1866 by Forest Rangers and Native Contingent; from February 1867 it was McDonnell's district headquarters, with 170 men. The post was abandoned from October 1868 to February 1869 in the Titokowaru campaign. In 1869 it was garrisoned for a time by Ngāti Porou, comprising three chiefs, 115 men and 30 women. Rebuilt as a stockade in the early 1870s and held a large garrison until the early 1880s, then a smaller garrison until abandoned in 1885 (Lovegrove 1971: 10–11, Cowan 1983 II: 146–147, 185).

The first fort was an earthwork redoubt, likely to have been large in order to accommodate the considerable 1860s garrison. Cowan (1983 II: 185) describes the early 1870s work as a 55 × 52 yd (50 × 47.5 m) stockade with two 50 × 52 ft (15 × 16 m) blockhouses made of 7 inch matai (180 mm) extending 8 ft (2.4 m) beyond the line of wall. Inside was a guard room, orderly room, reading room, underground magazine and well. A loopholed lookout tower at the northern angle was 8 ft square and 35 ft (10.5 m) high.

Under pasture; the stockade is still marked out by the ditch despite cultivation.



Figure 112. Waihi Redoubt: the outline of Waihi Redoubt can be seen within the bend of Pikitoroa Road at centre right; lower left is a cemetery and pre-European pā. Photo: K.L. Jones, 1994.

10.27 Waingongoro Redoubt

Q21/374 (2614500E 6180100N); recorded 2009 (previously included in 1961 record Q21/73 of a pā 50 m east); also Livingston's Redoubt.

Tokaora, Hawera; south of SH45 just before the road descends to Waingongoro bridge, the northwest angle cut by road works.

Put up in 1879 in response to the Māori protest ploughing on Pākehā-occupied land east of the Waingongoro River. Local settlers declared a 'Hawera Republic' and gathered for security at the home of James Livingston while the redoubt was built nearby (Roberts 1939: 80).

The redoubt was c. 20 yards square (18 × 18 m), with bastions at the southwest and northeast angles. The earth bank was lined with heavy timber allowing for loopholes, and the external trench was 4–5 ft (1.2–1.5 m) deep and wide. A wooden door at the west side was lowered to form a bridge over the trench (Houston 1965: 169).

1951 NZ Aerial Mapping photograph 1900/13 shows the square earthwork and bastions in good order; present condition is good but for the destroyed northwest angle.

10.28 Waukina

Q21/29 (2621900E 6175100N); N129/30; recorded 1960.

Hawera; seaward side of Manawapou Road.

In the site record the pa is said to have been subject to an advance by the Armed Constabulary, who found it deserted; this requires confirmation.

In 1960, the remains of a ditch and bank were visible on the seaward (south) side of the site, with a series of shallow depressions suggestive of collapsed rua or rifle-pits.

Little remained of site when recorded; present condition not known.

10.29 **Whakamara**

Q21; no site record, not located.

Mokoia, Hawera; c. 5 km east of Mokoia.

Pā on a narrow neck of high land, flat in front and behind and flanked by deep gullies (Cowan 1983 II: 296).

Present condition not known.

11. Whanganui

Military conflict took place in the Whanganui district in 1847, and later from 1864 to 1869. Many Māori engaged in fighting near Wellington in 1846 were from Whanganui and when they returned home afterwards troops were sent there for the security of settlers, arriving in December 1846. The Rutland and York Stockades, put up on two adjacent hills, were to dominate the town for a generation.

Fighting resumed in the region in May 1864, at first between Māori groups at Moutoa on the Whanganui River. With the Waikato War ended, large numbers of British troops were shifted to Whanganui. On 24 January 1865, General Cameron led a substantial army of British troops northward as far as Waingongoro on the last day of March, keeping to open country near the coast and setting up redoubts at the mouths of rivers on the way.

On 30 December 1865, General Chute left Whanganui with a mixed force of British troops, colonial forces and Whanganui Māori totalling about 700 men (Cowan 1983 II: 70), on a very different campaign. Six weeks later he was back in Whanganui, having destroyed seven fortified pā and 21 kāinga in the Patea, Hawera and coastal Taranaki districts (Cowan 1983 II: 70)

The last fighting in the region was Titokowaru's 1868–69 campaign, in which Pākehā forces were beaten at Te Ngutu o te Manu and Moturoa in September and November 1868. Pākehā then withdrew from all posts north of Kai Iwi except Patea and Wairoa (Waverley), and settlers put up refuge works throughout the Whanganui and Rangitikei districts in case Titokowaru's forces continued their advance. But when his greatest pā, Tauranga Ika, was abandoned in January 1868 before it was attacked, it was the turn of Pākehā to take the offensive, reoccupying land north to Waingongoro River. This time they did not leave.

Whanganui region fortifications are grouped by location as follows:

- The town
- Whanganui River
- North to Patea
- South—including Rangitikei and Manawatu

Note that the boundary between South Taranaki (section 10) and Whanganui (section 11) is here put at Patea, despite major campaigns taking place throughout the wider region into South Taranaki. In Cameron's 1865 campaign, the Nukumaru and Waitotara redoubts and Weraroa pā are listed with Whanganui, while Patea, Manawapou and Waingongoro works are included in South Taranaki; in Titokowaru's campaign, Moturoa and Tauranga Ika are included here, and Turuturumokai and Te Ngu o te Manu are with South Taranaki sites in section 10.

The spelling 'Whanganui' is used throughout for the river, district, Māori people of the region and for the town, following the December 2009 New Zealand Geographic Board decision.

THE TOWN

11.1 Albuera Redoubt

R22; no site record, not located; also King's Redoubt (Smart & Smart ms).

Virginia Lake; overlooking the main road (SH3) west of the lake.

The redoubt dates from after the 57th Regiment's arrival at Whanganui in April 1861. The name is from the Napoleonic Peninsular War Battle of Albuera, 16 May 1811, where the 57th Regiment was urged to 'die hard' by commanding officer Colonel Inglis, taking 400 casualties out of the 570 men engaged, the regiment afterwards being referred to as 'The Die Hards'.

Present condition not known.

11.2 **Aramoho Redoubt**

R22; no site record, not located; also Walker's Redoubt (Smart & Smart ms).

Aramoho; Mt Jowett.

Listed by Smart (ms) as a redoubt and blockhouse; history not known.

Present condition not known.

11.3 **Castlecliff Redoubt**

R22; no site record, not located; also Heads Redoubt and Castlecliff Blockhouse.

Castlecliff; signal station site at mouth of the Whanganui River.

Established 1868 (Smart ms), likely to be in response to Titokowaru's advance on Whanganui.

Present condition not known.

11.4 **Gunboat Stockade**

R22 (c. 2685700E 6139400N); no site record, not located.

Whanganui; in the area of Moutoa Gardens and Market Place, exact location uncertain.

Built during the fighting at and near Whanganui in winter 1847; completed in the third week of July. Its location near a river jetty suggests a role in landing stores.

Sketch by Collinson (see Prickett 2002: 56) shows a rectangular stockade with an external ditch and one hip-roofed building inside.

Destroyed except for any subsurface evidence.

11.5 **Lower Stockade**

R22 (c. 2685300E 6138950N); no site record, not located.

Whanganui; town block between Ridgeway, Wilson and St Hill Streets and Taupo Quay, towards the south end of the area now taken up by the Trafalgar Square shopping centre.

Whanganui's first defensive stockade. Built by the 58th Regiment, Royal Engineers and Royal Artillery when the troops first arrived on 14 December 1846 (Downes 1915: 291-292; Springer ms2: 3).

Made of fortified settlers' buildings (Springer ms2: 3).

Probably completely destroyed.

11.6 **Nixon's Redoubt**

R22; no site record, not located.

Bastia Hill, Whanganui.

Established in December 1868 as Titokowaru advanced towards Whanganui; on Major J. Nixon's land; construction superintended by Captain H. Young.

Earthworks visible until 1950s (Smart ms); present condition not known.

11.7 Rutland Stockade

R22/440 (2685400E 6139600N); recorded 2001; Fig. 113.

Queen's Park, Whanganui; the hill top is now public land taken up by the reserve, Sarjeant Gallery, etc.; site of former Pukemanu pā (Smart & Bates 1972: 33).

On 13 December 1846, a detachment of the 58th (Rutlandshire) Regiment arrived at Whanganui on H.M.S. Calliope, starting work immediately on a 60 × 30 yard (54 × 27 m) stockade (Springer ms2: 2-3) on a hill and old pā site above the town. The stockade was completed in April 1847, with a two large two-storey blockhouses added later. Rutland Stockade played a significant part in defence of the town in 1847. The last imperial troops (18th Regiment) left Rutland Stockade and Whanganui in 1870. Demolished in 1887.

The hill is now considerably cut down and modified; subsurface deposits may survive in places.

11.8 *St John's Wood rifle-pits*

R22; no site record, not located.

St John's Wood, Whanganui; within or near the Wanganui Collegiate School grounds.

Māori defensive earthworks and a base for advances on Whanganui in 1847 (Downes 1915; Smart & Smart 1965; Cowan 1983 I: 143).

Present condition not known.

11.9 York Stockade

R22/253 (2685100E 6139100N); recorded 1996, update 2007.

Cook's Gardens, Whanganui; reserve, adjacent to St Hill Street; commemorative plaque. Site of former Patupuhou pā (Smart & Bates 1972: 32-33).



Fig. 113. Rutland Stockade on hill top with Moutoa monument in foreground, Whanganui. Photograph: Lieutenant Bernard Gilpin Haines, 18th Royal Irish Regiment, [1860s], Ref.: PA1-f-027-12-2. Alexander Turnbull Library, Wellington.

Situated on old dunes on the seaward side of the 1840s town, opposite the earlier Rutland Stockade (11.7). Dates from the 1847 arrival of troops of 65th (Yorkshire) Regiment. Completed and occupied on 16 July 1847 (Smart & Bates 1972: 68). After the fighting in 1847, the 65th moved to Rutland Stockade and remained as the Whanganui garrison until 1861. York Stockade was used as married quarters (Springer ms2: 15). Demolished in the 1880s.

A platform c. 20 × 15 m remains, now occupied by an historic bell tower. The rest of the stockade platform has been largely or wholly cut down.

WHANGANUI RIVER

11.10 Buckthought's Redoubt

S22/43 (6147050E 2690700N); N138/45; recorded 1963, update 2007.

Upokongaro; terrace edge northwest of village overlooking the Whanganui River; above an old quarry.

Built in November 1868 by settlers and militia as Titokowaru advanced towards Whanganui; the name is from landowner Phillip Buckthought.

Irregular ditch and bank earthwork 40 × 15–20 m cuts off the corner of a terrace; one bastion at the south end and a small bastion next to entry at the north end.

Good condition in pasture, 2007.

11.11 Koroniti Stockade

S21 (c. 2695000E 6169800N); no site record, not located.

Koroniti (Corinth); left bank of the Whanganui River.

Established by militia and/or Taranaki Military Settlers to secure river communication after the Pākehā advance to Pipiriki in April 1865. On 15 August 1865, local troops were replaced by 80 rank and file plus officers and non-commissioned officers of the 50th Regiment (War Office 0270.I: lxii, App. 31).

Described on 22 August 1865 by Major G.R. Greaves, Deputy Assistant Quartermaster General, as '... a stockade which commands everything in the vicinity of the post' (War Office 0270.I: lxii, App. 31).

Site condition not known.

11.12 Missionary Road Redoubt

R22; no site record, not located; also Finnemore's Redoubt after the landowner (Smart ms).

Described as being 'on Mt Mission, Waireka Road' (Smart ms), or 'Mt Finnimore' (Smart & Smart ms), right bank of the river 5 km from Aramoho.

Occupied for a short time from December 1868 (Smart ms), in response to Titokowaru's advance towards Whanganui.

Site condition not known.

11.13 Nga Mokamokai

S21/5 (2695200E 6169900N); N131/7; recorded 1979; also Victoria Redoubt (Smart & Smart ms).

Koriniti, Whanganui River; probably on the hill at or near trig 'AK4M'.

Built by Whanganui Māori to defend the river and town either in March 1865 or after the siege of Pipiriki in July 1865, according to different sources.

Under pasture and trees, present condition not known.

11.14 No 1 Redoubt

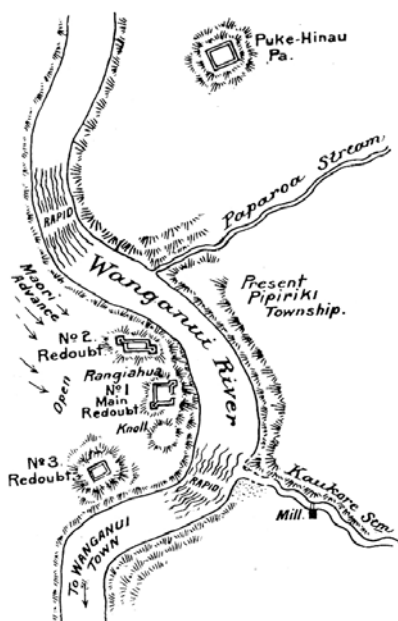


Figure 114. Nos 1, 2 and 3 Redoubts and Pukehinau pā, Pipiriki, 1865. From Cowan 1983 II: 519.

R21/1 (2685600E 6189400N); N121/5; recorded 1978; also Brassey's or Main Redoubt; Fig. 114.

Pipiriki; at the bend on the other side of Whanganui River, on top of the prominent bluff, Rangiahua.

Built and held by Taranaki Military Settlers under Lieutenant Gosling; one of three redoubts of a combined Pākehā and Māori force under Major Willoughby Brassey at Pipiriki from April 1865 (11.15–16), and besieged by Māori based at Pukehinau (11.18) in July that year. Subsequently held by the 57th Regiment until the end of the year (Cowan 1983 II: 36–45, 519; Smart and Smart ms).

Earthwork redoubt.

A 9–10 m square depression on the hill above the river is the only reported field evidence; graves nearby; poor condition in 1978.

11.15 No 2 Redoubt

R21; no site record, not located; also Kemp's Redoubt or Popoia Redoubt (Cowan 1983 II: 36–45, 519); Fig. 114.

Pipiriki; across Whanganui River from the settlement, on a spur upstream of No 1 Redoubt.

One of three redoubts built by a combined Pākehā and Māori force under Major Brassey from April 1865. Established by Māori under Keepa Te Rangihwinui (Major Kemp) and the Patea Rangers (Cowan 1983 I: 36–45).

Earthwork redoubt.

Field evidence not known.

11.16 No 3 Redoubt

R21; no site record, not located; also Gundagai Redoubt after a supply steamer on the Whanganui River; Fig. 114.

Pipiriki; across Whanganui River from the Pipiriki settlement, downstream of No 1 Redoubt.

One of three redoubts built by a combined Pākehā and Māori force under Major Brassey from April 1865. Established by Māori under Keepa Te Rangihwinui and the Patea Rangers (Cowan 1983 II: 36-45, 519).

Earthwork redoubt.

Field evidence not known.

11.17 Parikino Redoubt

S22/50 (2693500E 6154000N); N138/55; recorded 1963.

Parikino; west of the river, near a house on the river flat.

Established by militia and/or Taranaki Military Settlers to secure river communication after the April 1865 advance to Pipiriki (11.14-16). On 13 August 1865, local troops were replaced by 60 rank and file plus officers and non-commissioned officers of the 14th Regiment (War Office 0270.I: lxii, App. 31).

Described on 22 August 1865 by Major G.R. Greaves, Deputy Assistant Quartermaster General, as '... redoubt near the bank of the river ... commanded by a hill on the opposite side of the river; but the parapet has been raised on that side to defilade the interior of the work, and loopholed to enable the defenders to fire on the counterscarp' (War Office 0270.I: lxii, App. 31).

Identified on the S22/50 site record from a 1942 aerial photograph ('May be the Parikino Redoubt'); 'earthworks' in 'excellent condition' and 'surface pits still clearly recognisable under grass cover'; no record of a field visit.

11.18 Pukehinau

R20/1 (2685600E 6190200N); N121/4; recorded 1978; Fig. 114.

Pipiriki; on a hill north of township; trig 'Pukehinau', 188 m a.s.l. on site.

Pā occupied by Pai Marire forces during the 1865 siege of Pākehā and allied Māori works on the other side of the river (11.14-11.16; Cowan 1983 II: 37-45).

Under bracken and gorse in 1978; present condition not known.

11.19 Suffren's Redoubt

S22/37 (2690200E 6144000N); N138/39; recorded 1963, update 2007.

Whanganui East; above SH4 between Kaimatira and Kukuta Roads.

Built in 1868 as Titokowaru advanced towards Whanganui; laid out by Captain H.C. Young (Royal Engineers), attached to the 18th Regiment.

Field evidence of ditch and bank redoubt 100 ft square (30 × 30 m), in poor position for defence and not commanding the Whanganui River.

Most of the redoubt bank still visible in 2007.

11.20 Tawhitinui Redoubt

S21; no site record, not located.

Ranana; 'commanding position opposite Ranana' (Smart & Smart ms); 'opposite Moutoa Island' (Smart ms).

Established in September 1865 by 150 men of the 68th Regiment brought up-river by the steam ship *Gundagai* (Smart & Smart ms).

Present condition not known.

NORTH TO PATEA

11.21 Alexander's Farm Redoubt

R22/145 (2672890E 6144880N); N137/101; recorded 1963, update 2002; Fig. 115.

Rapanui, Whanganui; terrace edge south of Mowhanau Stream; access via Rapanui Road and Peat Avenue, in paddock past houses at end of road.

In 1864 a large camp was set up north of Whanganui, as a base from which General Cameron left on 24 January 1865 for the advance into South Taranaki (Cowan 1983 II: 46–60; Prickett 2002: 108–111). Remaining troops then put up a 250-man redoubt (Springer ms1), probably the recorded site. On 31 December 1865, General Chute left the post on the second South Taranaki campaign.

The redoubt and associated features are mostly in excellent order, but for the ditch and some of the bank on the southeast side destroyed by a road formation. Three hut sites are cut into the adjacent terrace edge; other features are visible on sloping ground north of the redoubt.

11.22 Bluff Redoubt

R22 (2655750E; 6149900N); no site record.

Waitotara; on a commanding hill on the left (south) bank of Waitotara River, 2 km from mouth; at or near 'P No 2' trig, 34 m a.s.l.; the name is from Colonel Gamble's reports (War Office 0270 I: 145).

Established on 5 February 1865, along with Waitotara Redoubt (11.41) on the other side of the river, in General Cameron's advance into South Taranaki (War Office 0270 I: 142). On 1 July 1865 there were 126 troops at Waitotara (War Office 0270 II: 435), although it is unclear which of the two Waitotara redoubts this refers to.

Redoubt for 150 men and two field guns (Smart & Smart ms).

No sign of earthworks in 1963 (Smart & Smart ms); present condition not known.

11.23 Bryce's Redoubt

R22/6 (2683300E 6151900N); N138/48; recorded 1963.

Brunswick, Whanganui; on a hill-top, right of Kai Iwi Stream, c. 350 m north of Mt Bryce trig.

Built in 1868 as part of defences against Titokowaru's advance on Whanganui (11.35, 11.39). Name is from Lieutenant John Bryce, Kai-iwi Yeomanry Cavalry Volunteers (who was to play a major role at Parihaka in 1881).

The site record form tells of a redoubt and blockhouse.

Earthworks 'not very clear' under grass and scattered trees when recorded in 1963. Present condition not known.

11.24 Kai Iwi redoubt

R22/417 (2674000E 6150150N); N137/280; recorded 1963.

Kai Iwi; east of Ngarino Road, on the scarp edge above SH3 (Smart & Smart ms).

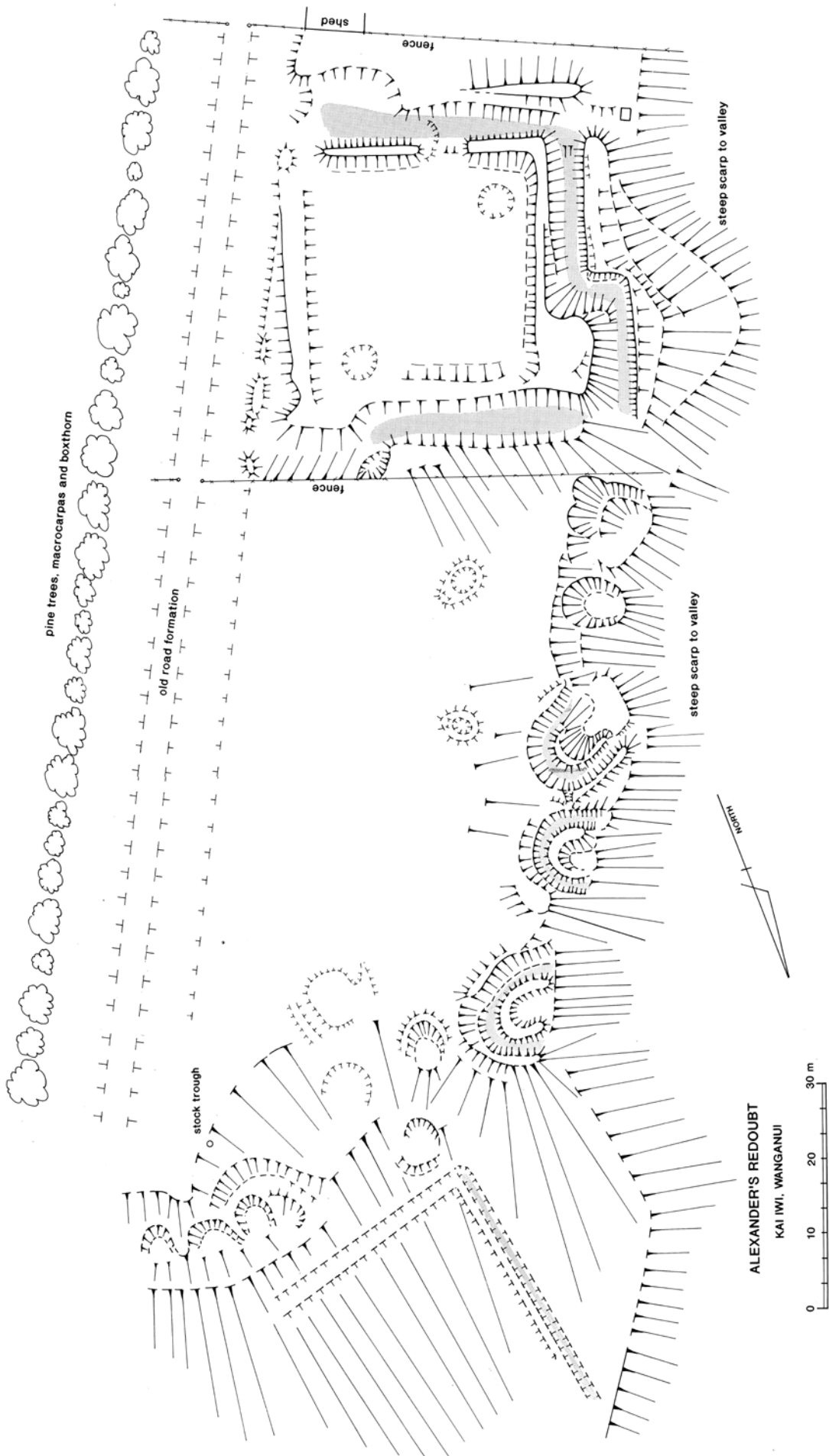


Figure 115. Alexander's Farm Redoubt. Plan: N. Prickett.

No known history.

Surviving west side and northwest bastion indicate a 25 × 25 m redoubt.

Visible on 1943 aerial photograph (E93161); described in the 1963 record as difficult to see on the ground. Present condition not known.

11.25 Lyon's Redoubt

R22/146 (2673800E 6149250N); N137/102; recorded 1963, update 2007; also Fort Lyon.

Kai Iwi; east of Ngarino Road ('Mt Smith'), 1 km from SH3, in a paddock immediately south of farmhouse.

Established by colonial troops under Lieutenant Colonel William Lyon near the end of the Titokowaru campaign, either in December 1868 or on 21 January 1869 (Gudgeon 1879: 255; Lyon 2009). On 26 January, Māori skirmished with an outlying picket from the redoubt. After Titokowaru abandoned Tauranga Ika (11.36) on the night of 1 February 1869, Lyon's Redoubt continued in use to March or April.

Ditch and bank earthwork c. 30 yards square (27 × 27 m), with flanking angles at the east, west and south sides and entries indicated at north and south sides; three dug-out soldiers' huts are at the top of the adjacent scarp southeast to the Kai Iwi valley.

Under pasture; part of earthworks visible in 2007.

11.26 Moturoa

R21 (2651600E 6164100N); no site record; Fig. 116.

Waverley; pā cut by Braemore Road near the battle notice board; 6 km from SH3 via Chester Street, Mangatangi Road and McDonald Road. Cowan (1983 II: 261) gives location as 'Papa-tihakehake'.

Titokowaru's pā, where Colonel Whitmore was defeated on 7 November 1868 (Cowan 1983 II: 244-262; Prickett 2002: 120-122).

A barrier pā (rather than fully enclosed) extending c. 110 m across a clearing, with three strong points: at each end, and at an angle c. 44 yards (40 m) from west end and 66 yards (60 m) from the east (see Fig. 116).

No known visible remains, trenches will survive subsurface; the 1921 site is described by Cowan (1983 II: 261).

11.27 *Moturoa attacking trenches*

R21 (c. 2651350E 6163800N); no site record, not located.

Moturoa, Waverley; Braemore Road, on terrace in front (south) of Moturoa pā.

Temporary works dug by Captain Hawes' Wairoa Militia in Whitmore's 7 November attack on Moturoa (Smart & Smart 1965).

Trenches.

Condition not known.

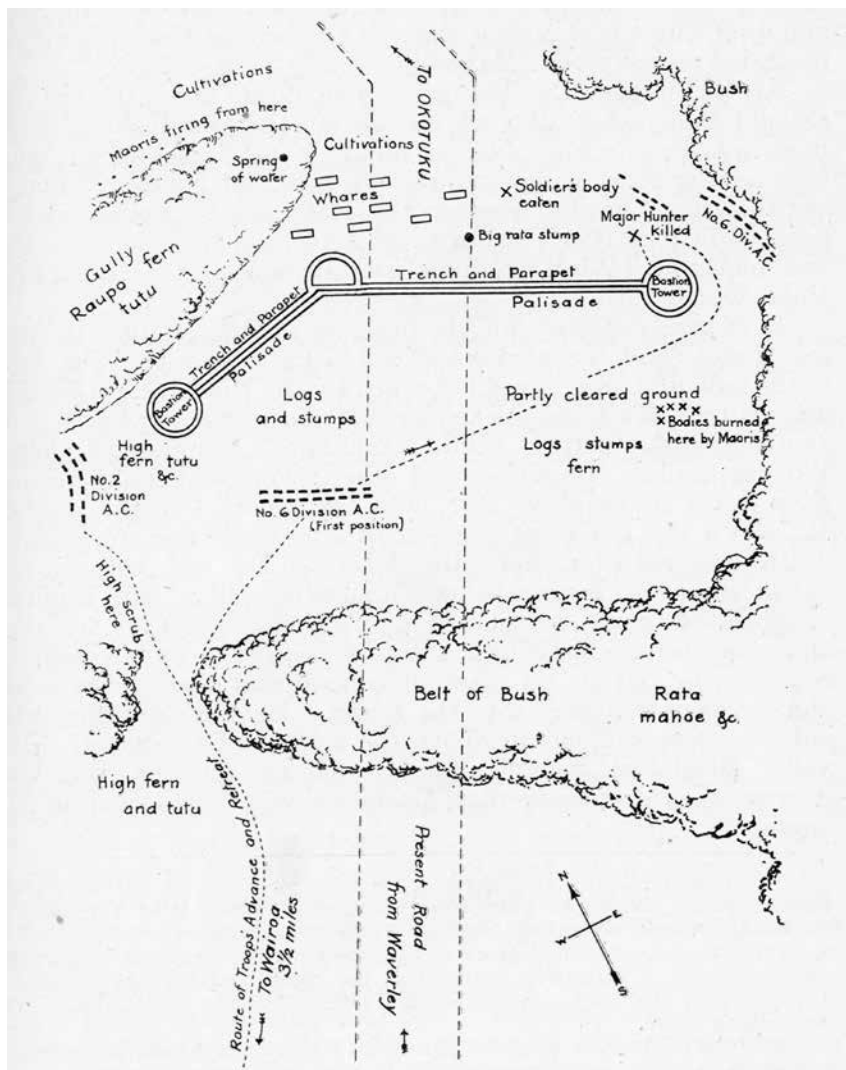


Figure 116. Moturoa battlefield and pā. From Cowan 1983 II: 245

11.28 *Nukumaru picket (1)*

R22/106 (2661200E 6152000N); N137/147; recorded 1962, update 2006; Fig. 117.

Nukumaru; c. 40 m north of railway line; access via Paetaia Road.

One of three small picket redoubts (11.29–30) established forward of General Cameron's Nukumaru camp after Māori attacks on 24–25 January 1865. When the camp was abandoned on 15 February the picket redoubts were destroyed by Māori from Weraroa pā (11.42). In June 1865 Nukumaru was reoccupied by troops with establishment of the 200-man Nukumaru Redoubt (11.31), the three picket works being rebuilt.

Square ditch and bank earthwork 25 × 25 m, two parallel lines of four pits from the south angle to the railway cutting may have been soldiers' huts.

Under pasture; clear in 1943 NZ Aerial Mapping photographs 376/21 and 2154/64; ploughed out by 1962; no observed field evidence in 2006.

11.29 *Nukumaru picket (2)*

R22/107 (2661600E 6152300N); N137/149; recorded 1962, update 2006; Fig. 117.

Nukumaru; 50 m south of Paetaia Road end.



Figure 117. Nukumaru Redoubt and three earthwork pickets (left to right: 11.28, 11.29, 11.30), from General Cameron's 1865 campaign. Sourced from aerial photography S.N. 215 376/22, 4 October 1942. Crown Copyright Reserved.

One of three small picket redoubts established forward of General Cameron's Nukumaru camp after the Māori attacks of 24–25 January 1865 (see **11.28** for history).

Ditch and bank earthwork of two squares joined at a corner make up a work c. 40 yards (36 m) in length.

Under pasture; clear in 1943 NZ Aerial Mapping photograph 376/21; ploughed out by 1962; no observed field evidence in 2006.

11.30 *Nukumaru picket (3)*

R22/108 (2662000E 6152250N); N137/151; recorded 1962, update 2006; Fig. 117.

Nukumaru; from the end of Paetaia Road c. 200 m east over farm paddocks and gully.

One of three small picket redoubts established forward of General Cameron's Nukumaru camp after the Māori attacks of 24–25 January 1865 (see **11.28** for history).

Square ditch and bank earthwork c. 22 × 22 m; possible entrances east and west sides. Shallow ditch and pits to the north.

Under pasture; clear in 1943 NZ Aerial Mapping photograph 376/21; visible on the ground in 1962; no observed field evidence in 2006.

11.31 **Nukumaru Redoubt**

R22/109 (2662250E 6151900N); N137/155; recorded 1962; Fig. 117.

Nukumaru; west of Lake Waikato, between Paetaia and Russell Roads, 500 m north of railway line, on flat land.

Established on 8 June 1865 by 600–700 men from Alexander’s Farm, for the security of European military communications north of Whanganui to Patea and South Taranaki, and to keep a watch on the large Māori force at Weraroa pā (11.42). The 200-man redoubt was located behind the January 1865 picket works (11.28–30), which were found to have been destroyed and were rebuilt.

Square redoubt, c. 60 × 60 yards (55 × 55 m); flanking defence at two corners covers three sides, with the fourth (west) side apparently covered by an angled projection from centre of the face. Pits in the larger (northeast) angle and scattered pits outside.

Clear in 1943 aerial photograph 376/23 and 1952 aerial 2154/65; ploughed out by 1962 (aerial photograph 3395/19).

11.32 Oika

Q22/28 (2642400E 6159050N); N137/212; recorded 1974; Fig. 118.

Whenuakura; on a hill-top south of SH3 Whenuakura River bridge, 100 m west of road and 100 m south of river.

Almost certainly of the New Zealand War period, but particular history not known; the name is from the site record.

Near rectangular earthwork 50 × 20–30 m, marked out by a strongly traversed trench; a projection at the northwest corner makes use of a point of the scarp edge.

In outstanding order when visited by the writer in the 1970s; fair condition in 2012 (Google Earth).



Figure 118. Oika gun-fighter pā. Photo: K.L. Jones, 1994.

11.33 Okotuku

R21 (2651800E 6164650N); no site record.

Waverley; Braemore Road, top of hill 500 m beyond (north) of Moturoa (11.26).

Pā attacked on 4 January 1866 in Chute's campaign (Cowan 1983 II: 62).

Defences consisted of an 80 yd (72 m) palisade, several feet high, made of piled horizontal logs between two rows of uprights, at the rear of a clearing, across a ridge between steep scarps (Chute to Grey 8 Jan 1866, GBPP [3695]).

Present condition not known.

11.34 Peake's Redoubt

R22/419 (2671950E 6145350N); N137/285; recorded 1963.

Kai Iwi Beach; high point west of Kai Iwi Stream near mouth.

History not known; name from Smart (ms), but note that Woodall's Redoubt (11.44) is also referred to as 'Peake's', presumably after the same landowner.

Located from NZ Aerial Mapping photograph (G 91744).

Present condition not known.

11.35 Stewart's Redoubt

R22/148 (2681400E 6150300N); N137/104; recorded 1962; also Mussen's Redoubt from landowner.

Brunswick, Whanganui; north of Brunswick Road at edge of tableland overlooking Kai Iwi Stream valley to the north, at or near 'Mt Stuart' trig.

Established before General Cameron's 1865 South Taranaki campaign, to secure Pākehā settlement behind the advancing troops (see also Woodall's Redoubt, 11.44). Held by 70 men of the 57th Regiment before militia took over on 31 January 1865 (War Office 1270 I: 141). Name probably from Captain J. Stewart of the 57th Regiment. Reoccupied by local forces after Titokowaru's success over Whitmore at Moturoa in November 1868 (see also 11.23 and 11.39).

Square ditch and bank earthwork c. 50 × 50 yards (45 × 45 m), with bastions at two corners covering three sides. The north side above scarp to valley has a bank only and no flanking defence.

Shows clearly on 1942 NZ Aerial Mapping photograph 377/40; ploughed out before 1962 (see aerial photograph 3396/31); defensive trenches will survive subsurface; now under pasture.

11.36 Tauranga Ika

R22/110 (2663400E 6153250N); N137/166; recorded 1962, update 2002; Fig. 119.

Nukumaru; the church 'Tutahi', on rising ground north of SH3, is said to be near or on the site.

Pā built by Titokowaru after the 7 November 1868 fight at Moturoa (11.26). The Māori strategy was to advance on Whanganui—outflanking the enemy who kept to open country near the coast, and fighting in or near the bush on Māori terms, as at Te Ngutu o te Manu (10.23) and Moturoa. Tauranga Ika was found abandoned by Colonel Whitmore's colonial troops on the morning of 2 February 1869, for reasons explored by Belich (1989).

Tauranga Ika was one of the largest enclosed (as opposed to barrier) pā of the New Zealand Wars, c. 140 × 140 m with concave sides and strong points at each corner. A double palisade line was backed by traversed rifle trench and tunnel access to underground bunkers behind.

The 1962 site record refers to traces of earthworks (but which were not seen by the recorder). Subsurface remains may be located by surface examination and geophysical testing.

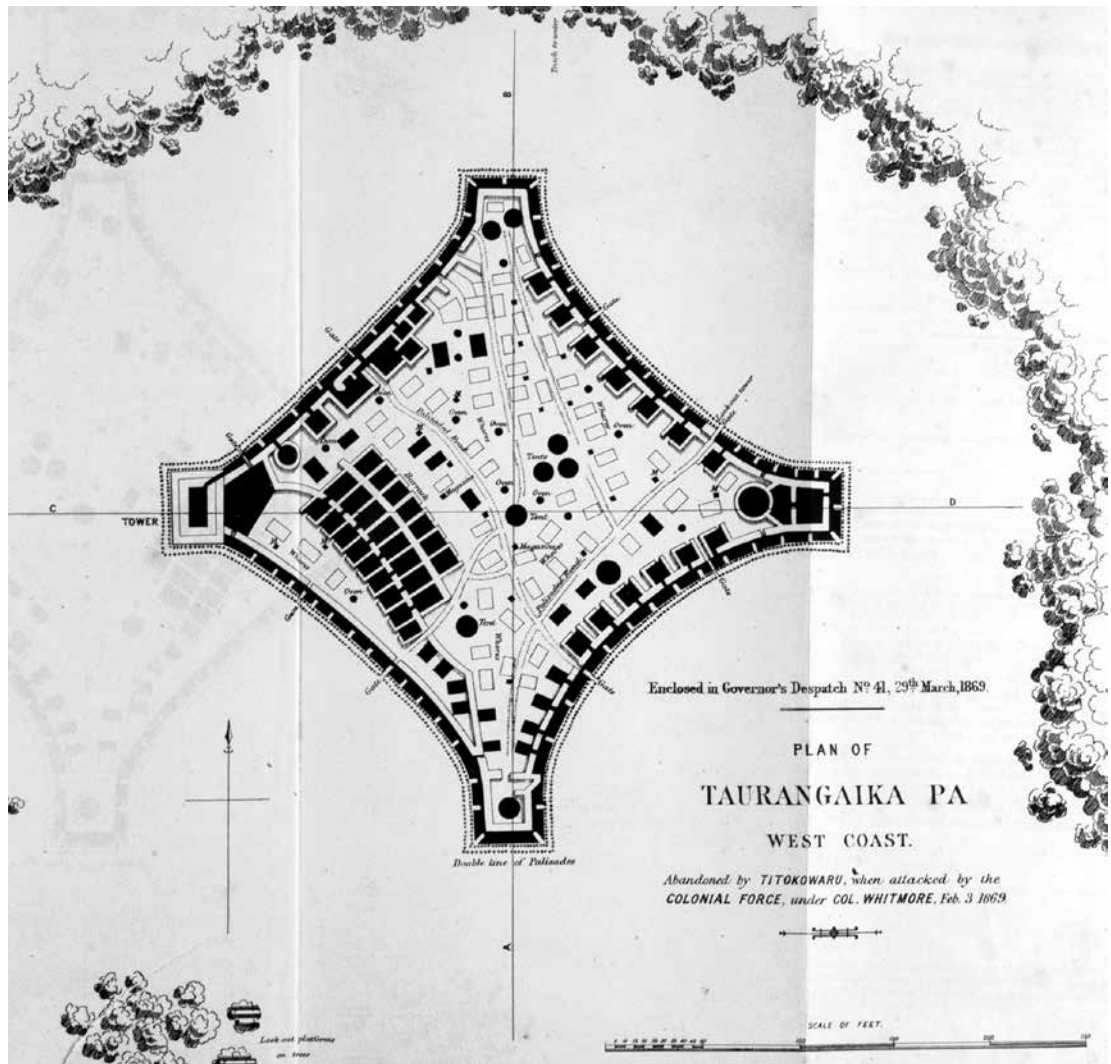


Figure 119. Tauranga Ika: a traversed rifle trench has two rows of palisades in front and tunnel access to underground shelters behind. In the pā are surface huts (open squares) and food storage and shelter pits. Bastion strong points are at each corner of the 140 × 140 m pā. From *GBPP 1868–69* *xliv* (307) p. 396.

11.37 *Tauranga Ika attacking trenches*

R22; no site record, not located.

Temporary attacking trenches of Pākehā forces east and south of Tauranga Ika (Cowan 1983 II: 290; Smart & Smart ms).

Present condition not known.

11.38 *Te Putahi*

Q21/209 (2644400E 6162100N); N130/17; recorded 1965.

Waverley; above east side of Whenuakura River, west of Karahaki Road.

Te Putahi pā was taken by General Chute, 7 January 1866 (Cowan 1983 II: 62).

Pā in dense bush, no available account of stockade or earthwork defences. Rectangular pits recorded in 1965; no subsequent visit.

Present condition not known.

11.39 Trafford's Redoubt

R22/5 (2686500E 6149150N); N138/47 recorded 1963, updates 1997, 2007.

Brunswick; terrace edge above right bank of the Whanganui River opposite Kaiwhaiki; at 'Trafford' trig (205 m a.s.l.); access from Tokomaru East Road.

Built in 1868 in the Brunswick district as Titokowaru advanced towards Whanganui (see also **11.23** and **11.35**). Named after Major Trafford.

An unusual triangular work at a sharp terrace point, high above the Whanganui River. A large angled bastion dominates ditch and bank defences facing the terrace on the west side. At the other two sides above the steep hillside there is now a bank on part of the north side only. In the 1961 visit for the original record this was visible also on the southeast side to the eastern point of the redoubt.

Good condition in pasture, fenced from the terrace. Three interior depressions noted on the 1963 record were not visible in 2007.

11.40 Wairoa Redoubt

R22/455 (2650000E 6158900N); N137/238; recorded 1981, update 2004; Fig. 120.

Waverley; north side of the main street just west of the Chester Street corner; World War I and II Memorial clock tower now on the site.

The township of Wairoa, now Waverley, was laid out in 1867 for Taranaki Military Settlers. The redoubt was built by Wairoa militia under Captain Hawes (Smart & Smart ms). After the defeat of colonial troops at Te Ngutu o te Manu in September 1868, Wairoa and Patea were the only remaining Pākehā posts north of Kai Iwi. On 7 November 1868, Colonel Whitmore was defeated near Wairoa at Moturoa (**11.26**). The militia garrison was disbanded in March 1870 (Church 1982: 136-137; see Lovegrove 1969).



Figure 120. Wairoa Redoubt, Waverley. Photo: N. Prickett, 1994.

Square redoubt. In the early 20th century, Cowan (1983 II: 262) reported parapets to 9–10 ft (2.7–3 m) high and a small bastion. Earthwork defences, and probably also the redoubt platform, were largely or completely destroyed in construction of the present memorial tower.

11.41 Waitotara Redoubt

R22/117 (2655400E 6150000N); N137/203; recorded 1962.

Waitotara; Waitotara River right bank, in flat paddock 2 km from the river mouth.

The forward post established 5 February 1865, with Bluff Redoubt (11.22) on the opposite bank, in General Cameron's advance into South Taranaki (War Office 0270 I: 142).

Earthwork c. 50 × 50 yards (45 × 45 m) square; aerial photograph shows three visible corners with bastions covering one side only (Smart & Smart 1965).

Present condition not known.

11.42 Weraroa

R22/66 (2659400E 6154600N); N137/56; recorded 1962, update 2002; Fig. 121.

Waitotara; on high ground east of Waitotara River inland of SH3, at 'Weraroa No. 2' trig (114 m a.s.l.)

Weraroa is the pā from which Māori attacked General Cameron's army at Nukumaru on 24 and 25 January 1865. Cameron's decision not to attack Weraroa but advance further up the coast led to an argument with Grey, who captured the abandoned pā in July 1865 with a combined Pākehā and Whanganui Māori force. Cameron left New Zealand in August. Weraroa Redoubt (11.43) was later put up on the site.

A large pā of three connected strong-points, backed by a precipitous bushed scarp; double and single stockade lines with traversed firing trenches and huts behind.

Under pasture, the generally levelled earthworks appear as slight undulations in places. Excavated trenches and other features will survive underground.

11.43 Weraroa Redoubt

R22/65 (2659400E 6154600N); N137/55; recorded 1962, updates 1986, 2002; Fig. 122.

Waitotara; on high ground east of Waitotara River inland of SH3, at 'Weraroa No. 2' trig (114 m a.s.l.).

Established on the site of Weraroa pā (11.42) after the pā was taken in August 1865. Held by the 14th Regiment to August 1866; reoccupied by militia 1–16 November 1868, and later by Armed Constabulary from March 1869 to 1870 (Smart & Smart 1965).

Ditch and bank earthwork of a rectangular plan, with bastion defence at three corners covering four sides. Track from the north side leads down to the Waitotara River; a commemorative cairn was placed on the site in 1948.

Under pasture; clear in aerial photograph 375/25; stock damage to the northwest and southwest corners and stock erosion around the cairn.

11.44 Woodall's Redoubt

R22/147 (2674950E 6148450N); N137/103; recorded 1963, update 2002; also Peake's Redoubt after landowner; Fig. 123.

Kai Iwi; edge of high ground above school, south of the Kai Iwi Valley Road and SH3.

PLAN
OF
WERAROA PA
Evacuated 23rd July 1865.

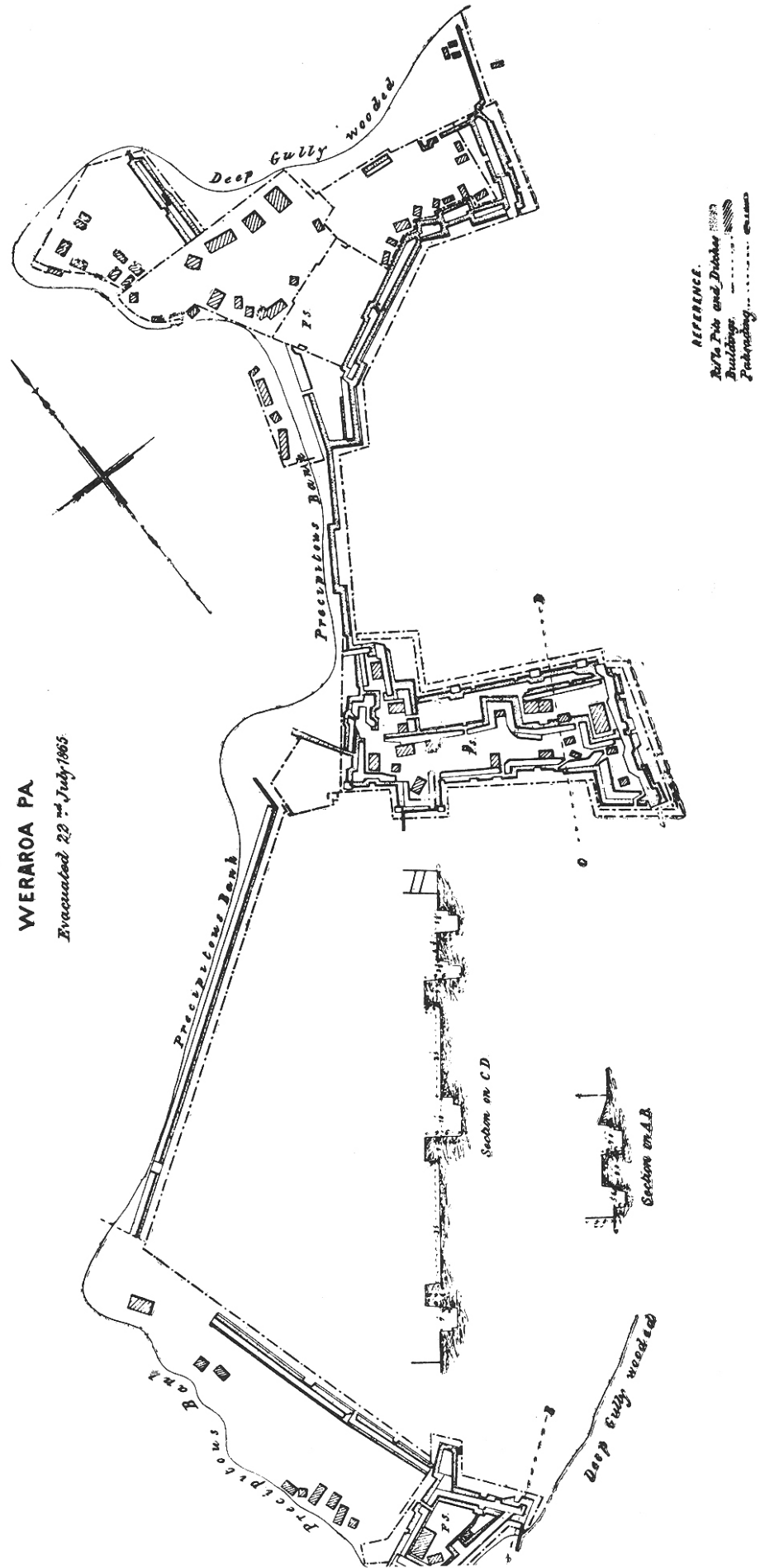


Figure 121. Weraroa pā. Cowan 1983 II: 50.

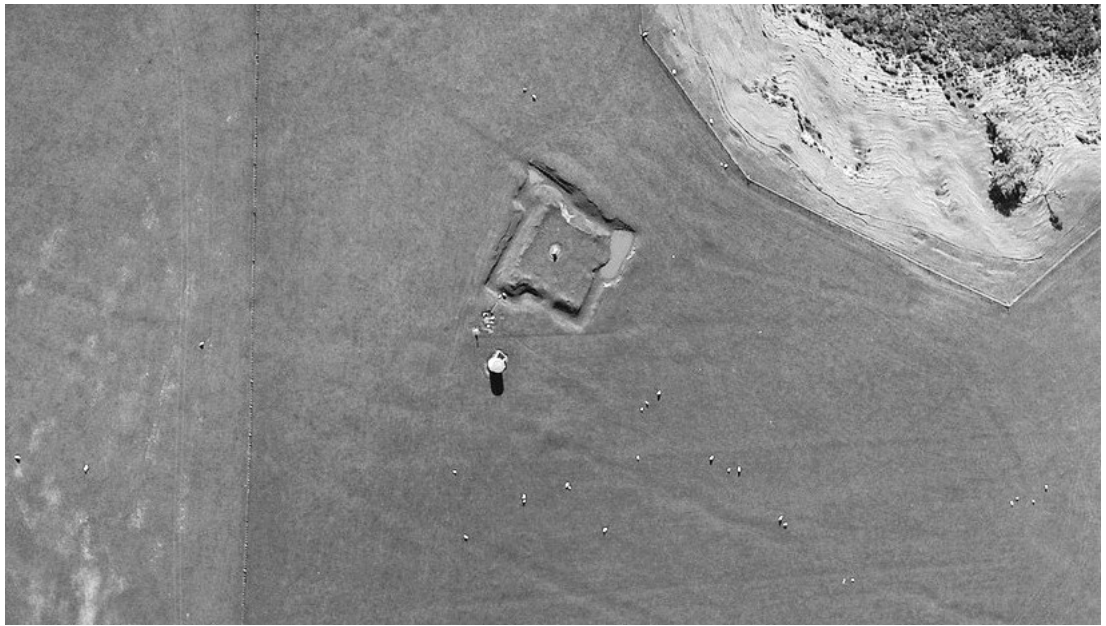


Figure 122. Weraroa Redoubt, 1865. *Photo: K.L. Jones, 1995.*



Figure 123. Woodall's Redoubt, Kai Iwi, Whanganui. *Photo: A.G. Buist, 1965.*

Established before General Cameron's 1865 South Taranaki campaign, in order to secure Pākehā settlement behind the advancing troops (see also Stewart's Redoubt, **11.35**). Held by 100 57th Regiment before militia took over on 31 January 1865 (War Office 1270 I: 141). Name from Captain T.N. Woodall, 57th Regiment. Reoccupied after Whitmore's November 1868 defeat at Moturoa, when the Armed Constabulary garrison exchanged shots at over 1000 yards (900 m) with a Māori outpost to the west.

Ditch and bank earthwork c. 25 × 25 m with bastions at three corners covering all four sides. At the terrace edge east of the redoubt are the remains of two dug-out soldiers' huts.

Well-preserved under pasture, some stock damage.

SOUTH—INCLUDING RANGITIKEI AND MANAWATU

11.45 Austin's Redoubt

S23 (2713000E 6130000N); no site record, not located.

Tutaenui, Marton; north of Jefferson's Line.

Established on 23 November 1868 (National Archives AD 1869, 2957). One of ten works put up and held by Rangitikei Militia and Volunteers as Titokowaru advanced on Whanganui (Lundy 1995: 30).

Redoubt of clay and fern for 100 men (National Archives AD 1869, 2957). Described as powerful work of redan form, with flanking angles (Lundy 1995: 30); a redan is defined as a V-shaped projection facing an expected line of attack.

Lundy (ms2) describes 'soil disturbance and marks in grounds of old house'. Present condition not known.

11.46 Bryce's Redoubt

S23 (2714000E 6127000N); no site record, not located.

Marton; Lundy (1995: 23) locates work east of the Tutaenui Road and Bryce's Line corner, east of Tutaenui Stream.

An earlier redoubt, history unknown, is said to have been rebuilt on 22 November 1868 (National Archives AD 1869, 2957). One of ten works put up and held by Rangitikei Militia and Volunteers as Titokowaru advanced on Whanganui (Lundy 1995: 30). A redoubt at Brunswick north of Whanganui has the same name (11.23).

Redoubt of clay and fern for 80 men (National Archives AD 1869, 2957).

Present condition not known.

11.47 Hassard's Redoubt

S23/94 (2708600E 6124800N); recorded 2000.

Bonny Glen, Marton; north of the Wanganui Road, east of Fern Flats Road.

The location was chosen by Lieutenant Colonel Jason Hassard, 57th Regiment, some time before January 1866 when he died of wounds received at Otapawa (10.15). Subsequently a redoubt was put up, later to be rebuilt on 23 November 1868 (National Archives AD 1869, 2957). One of ten works held by Rangitikei Militia and Volunteers as Titokowaru advanced on Whanganui (Lundy 1995: 30).

The redoubt was made of sods and clay and housed 60 men (National Archives AD 1869, 2957).

Site 'levelled in 1913' (Lundy ms1); in 1995 it was reported under the corner of a house (Lundy ms2). Present condition not known.

11.48 Hogg's Redoubt

S23/93 (2704800E 6120400N); recorded 2000.

Makirikiri South, Marton; south of SH3, on a low ridge northeast of Lake Dudding.

Established on 24 November 1868 (National Archives AD 1869, 2957). One of ten works put up and held by Rangitikei Militia and Volunteers as Titokowaru advanced on Whanganui (Lundy 1995: 30).

A bastioned redoubt made of sods and clay for 60 men (National Archives AD 1869, 2957).

Visible in 1962 NZ Aerial Mapping photograph 3630/11; 'bastions still faintly visible' on the ground (Lundy 1995). Present condition not known.

11.49 **Matthew's Redoubt**

S23/95 (2712800E 6123950N); recorded 2000, update 2005; also Marton Redoubt.

Marton; St Stephen's Church, 23 Maunder Street, now occupies the site (Lundy 1995).

Established 22 November 1868 (National Archives AD 1869, 2957). One of ten works put up and held by Rangitikei Militia and Volunteers as Titokowaru advanced on Whanganui (Lundy 1995: 30–31).

Redoubt made of wood, sod and clay, large enough for 100 men (National Archives AD 1869, 2957). Adjacent external blockhouse covered two sides of the earthwork (Lundy 1995: 30–31).

Nothing seen in 1995 (Lundy ms2).

11.50 **Marangai Blockhouse**

S22 ; no site record; also Cameron Blockhouse; Heritage New Zealand Category I registration No 7179; Fig. 8.

Marangai, Whanganui; 6 km south of Whanganui, in a paddock north of SH3.

Built in 1868 by local militia on John Cameron's farm as a secure place for local settlers, in response to Titokowaru's advance on Whanganui town and district.

Wooden building restored 1988–90.

11.51 **McDonald's Redoubt**

S22/125 (2704200E 6130600N); recorded 2000.

Turakina; Glenmore Station, in paddock west side of the Turakina Valley Road.

Established on 22 November 1868 (National Archives AD 1869, 2957). One of ten works put up and held by Rangitikei Militia and Volunteers as Titokowaru advanced on Whanganui (Lundy 1995: 30).

Sixty-man redoubt made of sods and clay (National Archives AD 1869, 2957).

Visible in NZ Aerial Mapping 1962 photograph 3625/18; since levelled (Lundy ms1); when visited in 1995 it had been recently cultivated (Lundy ms2).

11.52 **Nga Haere**

S25/60 (2701600E 6068500N); recorded 1990, update 2007.

Poroutawhao, Levin; on an old dune ridge 100 m south of the SH1 and Waitarere Beach Road corner.

Pā occupied in 1872 by the Ngāti Tuwhakawahai hapu of Ngāti Huia, for defence against Keepa Te Rangihiwini's Whanganui at nearby Pipiriki pā (11.54).

Reported by Adkin (1948: 246–247) as a pā defined by a level area 80 × 20 yards (66 × 18 m) along the crest of an old dune ridge, with numerous depressions marking sunken house sites and pits, a ditch across the ridge at the western end of the platform is the only remaining visible defensive work.

In 2007, under pasture with features vague and slumped; some visible midden material.

11.53 Parewanui

S23/4; (2707500E 6107350N); N143/7; recorded 1979, updates 1980, 2005; Heritage New Zealand Category II registration No 6231.

Parewanui, Bulls: 50 m west of Parewanui Road, 400 m south of the Pukehou Road corner, on low rise in a paddock.

Built in late 1868 by local Ngāti Apa in response to Titokowaru's advance on Whanganui.

Gunfighter pā of irregular rectangular layout c. 55 × 26 m, with ditch defences and ten pits scattered over the interior platform.

Shows clearly in 1942 NZ Aerial Mapping photograph 394/15. Some ploughing damage at the site margins (Lundy ms1). Now of subdued features, fenced off under grass.

11.54 Pipiriki

S25/51 (2700700E 6064400N); N152/54; recorded 1983, updates 1995, 2007.

Lake Horowhenua, Levin; west side of the lake on an old dune.

Pā built in 1872 by Whanganui chief Keepa Te Rangihwinui; named after Pipiriki on the Whanganui River, home of his mother's hapū (see also Nga Haere, 11.52).

Long, low dune with highest platform at the southern end.

A distinct scarp at the southern approach is the only clearly visible feature; other defences are vague on this deflated site. Formerly under pines which are now removed.

11.55 Robert's Redoubt

S23/96 (2717800E 6121900N); recorded 2000.

Marton; c. 100 m south of Onepuhi Road, at a cliff edge overlooking the Rangitikei River.

Established on 22 November 1868 (National Archives AD 1869, 2957). One of ten works put up and held by Rangitikei Militia and Volunteers as Titokowaru advanced on Whanganui (Lundy 1995: 31).

A 60-man redoubt made of sods and clay with a drawbridge, enclosing a private house (National Archives AD 1869, 2957).

Lundy (ms1) reported 'one corner of ditch and bank still visible—rest frequently ploughed'; and in 1995 still as above (Lundy ms2).

11.56 Ross's Redoubt

S23/5 (2705600E 6106100N); N143/8; recorded 1979; Heritage New Zealand Category II registration No 6232; also Ratahi Redoubt (Smart & Smart ms) and Waitatapia Redoubt (Heritage New Zealand registration).

Parewanui, Bulls: Waitatapia Station, c. 250 m south of the west end of Dalrymple Road.

First established by European settlers after 1863, in response to local inter-iwi conflict over land (Heritage New Zealand registration). Renovated on 23 November 1868 as Titokowaru advanced on Whanganui (National Archives AD 1869, 2957). One of ten redoubts held at the time by Rangitikei Militia and Volunteers (Lundy 1995: 31).

An 80-man redoubt of sods and clay with a drawbridge, enclosing a private house (National Archives AD 1869, 2957). Small square earthwork with flanking angles at two opposite corners, visible in NZ Aerial Mapping aerial photograph 394/13 (1942).

Under pasture; in 1995 visible in paddock beside farm road (Lundy ms2).

11.57 Strachan's Cave

S22/124 (2694300E 6141800N); recorded 1993, update 2007.

Okoia, Whanganui; Kaukatea Valley Road, 3 km from No 3 Line; 70 m south of road, on the steep east side of a gully.

Built by the Strachan family in 1860s.

Small excavated defensive cave with two gun slits.

Good to excellent condition; some vandalism, engraved names, etc.

11.58 Turakina Redoubt

S23/92 (2698800E 6126500N); recorded 2000.

Turakina; on a hill and terrace edge; the site now occupied by cemetery, east of SH3, above the township centre; hill name 'Pukepoto' (Smart & Smart ms).

An older work, rebuilt 18 November 1868 (National Archives AD 1869 2957). One of ten redoubts held by Rangitikei Militia and Volunteers as Titokowaru advanced on Whanganui (Lundy 1995: 29).

The 1868 200-man redoubt was made of timber, sods and clay, with a drawbridge, and blockhouse within the earthwork (National Archives AD 1869, 2957).

Reported 'destroyed' in 1963 (Smart & Smart 1965); in September 1995, Lundy (ms2) noted 'suggestive' surface features.

11.59 Willis's Redoubt

S23/9 (2713400E 6112000N); N143/14; recorded 1980; Heritage New Zealand Category II registration No 6233.

Bulls; access from High Street just north of Fagan Street, at the rear of a private garden, under macrocarpa trees on the edge of a terrace above Bulls Domain.

Established 23 November 1868 (National Archives AD 1869, 2957). One of ten works put up and held by Rangitikei Militia and Volunteers as Titokowaru advanced on Whanganui (Lundy 1995: 31).

Redoubt made of wood, sods and clay, to house 80 men; a bastioned front with low but abrupt scarp to the rear; a blockhouse was set diagonally within earthwork (National Archives AD 1869, 2957; Lundy 1995: 31).

Earthworks in good order under lawn, creepers and macrocarpa (Lundy ms1, ms2). Present condition not known.

12. Wellington and district

After the 1843 Wairau Incident, refuge fortifications for Pākehā civilians were put up at Wellington (sections 12.4–5) and at Nelson (section 13.2) and Akaroa (sections 13.1, 13.3–4) in the South Island. Two years later, racial tensions rose in the Wellington and Hutt Valley districts where Pākehā put up more fortified refuges and posts in case of fighting. At the same time, Māori fortified several pā in the Hutt Valley and at Porirua Harbour.

When fighting began in autumn 1846, more European works were put up as defensible camps for soldiers building the Porirua Road. Fortifications were erected at Paremata and Pauatahanui, to keep watch over Porirua Māori who threatened Hutt Valley settlers throughout the conflict that followed (Best 1921: 20). Fighting ended in August 1846 when the Ngati Toa chief Te Rangihaeata withdrew north to the Manawatu district. The last 65th Regiment garrison was withdrawn from Paremata in 1852.

Detailed accounts of 1846 fighting in the Wellington region are in Wards (1968: 214–300) and Cowan (1983 I: 88–134). Best (1921) describes European works of the period. Wellington and district fortifications are listed under:

- Wellington
- Hutt Valley
- Porirua Road and district

WELLINGTON

12.1 Fort Thorndon

R27 (2659200E 5991000N); no site record, not located; also Clifford's Stockade (Best 1921: 17).

Wellington, Thorndon; south side of Hobson Street in Wellington Girls College grounds. On Mr Clifford's property (Town Acre 597) and adjacent to the New Zealand Company acre (SO 10408; Wards 1968: 233).

One of several forts and places of refuge put up by settler authorities in Wellington and the Hutt Valley in 1845 as tensions rose between Māori and Pākehā.

A contemporary plan shows a triangular work, incorporating two buildings, 'Mr Clifford's Premises' at one corner and 'NZ Company Offices' at another, as well as a gun platform and drawbridge across the ditch (Wards 1968: 233). Contract specifications for the work, gate and drawbridge, etc. have survived (Wards 1968: 233–234). Smith (1989: 132) gives the area as 0.38 ha.

No visible remains, but archaeological evidence can be accurately located from the historical evidence, and subsurface features will have survived.

12.2 Karori Stockade

R27 (2656200E 5990000N); no site record, not located.

Karori, Wellington; south side of the Lancaster Street cutting.

Built in May–June 1846, in a bush clearing on Mr Chapman's land, under the supervision of Mr A.C. Strode (Best 1921: 18), by sailors from HMS *Calliope*, local militia and police, for protection against attack and as a refuge for settler families (Cowan 1983 I: 96–98).

A small stockade 28–30 × 20 ft (8.5–9 × 6 m), with 3–4 ft (900–1200 mm) ditch, which was 3–4 ft outside the wall to give room for a sentry. The loopholed stockade was mostly of split and

squared rimu and miro, 6–7 inches (152–175 mm) thick and 10 ft (3 m) high. Inside was a building of c. 16 × 12 ft (5 × 3.5 m) made of sawn rimu and kahikatea shingles, with 10 ft to the stockade wall all around (data from Cowan 1983 I: 96–98).

Present condition not known.

12.3 Te Aro Redoubt

R27 (2658700E 5989200N); no site record, not located.

Wellington; seaward side Manners Street, eastwards from c. Victoria St to half-way along along the city block to Cuba Street (location of town acres 207–209 as given in SO 10408).

Put up in 1845 by colonial authorities as a place of refuge for settlers as tensions rose with Māori, which led to fighting in 1846 (Cowan 1983 I: 92).

The Te Aro Redoubt contract specified a 10 ft (3 m) wide and 6 ft (1.8 m) deep ditch around three town acres 207, 208 and 209, except for part of 207 (Wards 1968: 234); Smith (1989: 132) gives the area as 1.23 ha. There was a ditch and bank around approximately half the perimeter, the harbour side being open and the remainder apparently left to existing buildings for defence (Wards 1968: 234; Cowan 1983 I: 92).

Any archaeological remains are now almost certainly destroyed.

12.4 Thorndon Redoubt

R27 (2659100E 5990800N); no site record, not located.

Wellington; near the cliff edge above the beach (now Thorndon Quay) between Pipitea Street and St Paul's Church, '... much nearer Pipitea Street than the church' (Cowan 1983: I: 93); at or near 1 or 3 Pipitea Street.

Put up at the north end of the town, matching Waterloo Redoubt at south end, in response to the June 1843 Wairau Incident (Cowan 1983: I: 93).

Redoubt earthwork of rectangular plan, with a long side overlooking the harbour; short east and west sides were completed but the rear was apparently unfinished (Cowan 1983 I: 93). Tony Walz gives historical details of the redoubt in Campbell (2009: 13–14).

There was no indication of the redoubt in 2008 archaeological excavations carried out by CFG Heritage west of Pipitea Street, about where the redoubt might have been expected (Campbell 2009). Any remains may now be largely or wholly destroyed.

12.5 Waterloo Redoubt

R27 (2658700E 5989600N); no site record, not located.

Wellington; above Willis Street and Lambton Quay corner, on headland named variously Clay Hill, Clay Point or Flagstaff Hill (Cowan 1983: I: 93).

At the end of June 1843, after the Wairau Incident, a headland at the south end of the town was fortified in one day and three 18-pounder guns mounted inside (Cowan 1983: I: 93–94).

Cowan (1983: I: 94) describes, '... not an enclosed redoubt, but a parapet facing the sea—an emplacement and protection for the guns, with a trench 9 feet wide.'

The headland has since been cut away and the site completely destroyed.

HUTT VALLEY

12.6 Boulcott's Farm Stockade

R27 (2671500E 5999000N); no site record, not located.

Lower Hutt; on the Hutt Golf Course near clubhouse; access by High Street and Military Road.

Stockade attacked in the early morning of 16 May 1846 by upper Whanganui River Māori under Topine Te Mamaku, with Ngati Rangatahi and Ngati Toa, who together heavily outnumbered the 58th Regiment garrison of 50. After a fight lasting 1½ hours, the attackers withdrew, leaving eight soldiers dead.

A loopholed stockade of slabs and small logs around a large barn (Cowan 1983 I: 104). Wards (1968: 260) refers to associated log breastworks.

Present condition not known.

12.7 Fort Richmond

R27 (2669100E 5997700N); no site record, not located.

Lower Hutt; within the present course of Hutt River, upstream of or under Ewen Bridge.

The first of several forts and refuges ordered in 1845 by the Wellington Police Magistrate, Major Mathew Richmond, as tensions rose between Māori and Pākehā. Built in April 1845 to a design by Captain George Compton of the Hutt Militia, in the style of works in North America where he had lived. Occupied by militia and British troops throughout the 1846 fighting.

The 90 × 90 ft (27 × 27 m) stockade was made mostly of sawn pukatea, 12 ft (3.5 m) high and 3 ft (900 mm) in the ground. Two totara and kahikatea blockhouses, with shingle roofs, had upper storeys diagonal to the lower, which was unique in New Zealand. The blockhouse near the river bridge was 15 × 15 ft (4.5 × 4.5 m) and 22 ft (6.5 m) high. The blockhouse at the opposite angle was smaller, at 12 × 12 ft (3.7 × 3.7 m) and 18 ft (5.5 m) high (Best 1921: 18; Cowan 1983 I: 94–96; Wards 1968: 232–233).

Site entirely destroyed.

12.8 Hutt Stockade

R27; no site record, no location.

Lower Hutt; near site of the earlier Fort Richmond (12.7); located by Best (1921: 28) in a paddock opposite Jillet's Hotel, on Plowman's land.

Built in 1860–61 at the same time as Upper Hutt Stockade (12.10), and probably to the same specifications; the tender was let for £725 (Best 1921: 28).

Stockade 95 × 95 ft (29 × 29 m), 9 ft (2.7 m) high; a 30 × 30 ft (9 × 9 m) blockhouse at the southwest angle extended 15 ft (4.5 m) from the line of stockade for flanking defence. There was also flanking defence at the northeast corner (Best 1921: 28).

Any remains not known.

12.9 Taita Stockade

R27 (c. 2674500E 6001500N); no site record, not located.

Taita, Lower Hutt; west of the '... present hotel at Taita' (Best 1921: 19).

Established in 1846 and garrisoned on 16 May that year when Boulcott's Farm (12.6) c. 3 km down the valley was attacked. A sergeant and ten Hutt Militia were at the post in October 1846 (Best 1921: 19–20).

Established before May 1846, but possibly altered in November to an entrenched fort of two squares connected at one angle of each (Best 1921: 19).

Not known if any remains exist.

12.10 Upper Hutt Stockade

R27/146 (2682200E 6006500N); recorded 1983; also Wallaceville Blockhouse; Heritage New Zealand Category I registration No 207; Fig. 124.



Figure 124. Corner blockhouse of Upper Hutt Stockade. Photo N. Prickett, 1990.

Upper Hutt; grounds of Heretaunga College; access from Fergusson Drive south of city centre, east into McHardie Street, then at c. 200 m turn left into a narrow lane to school grounds.

Erected in response to fears among local settlers of threats by Otaki and Wairarapa Māori at the start of the First Taranaki War (Best 1921: 24–25). A contract was advertised on 18 August 1860 for construction of a blockhouse and stockade at McHardy's Clearing to the same specifications as Hutt Stockade (12.8; Best 1921: 28). Built in early 1861; garrisoned in the 1860s by Upper Hutt Militia (Cowan 1983 I: 449).

Cowan (1983 I: 25–27) describes a near-square 9 ft (2.7 m) high stockade, 30 yards (27 m) east–west and slightly more north–south, with a low parapet outside a firing trench. There was a two-storey, loopholed, L-plan blockhouse at the north angle and stockade bastion at the south angle.

The unique blockhouse survives, with stockade earthworks easily visible under mown grass on adjacent ground.

PORIRUA ROAD AND DISTRICT

12.11 Clifford's Stockade

R27/235 (2661600E 5996700N); recorded 1993.

Johnsonville; Frank Johnson Street, exact location not known.

In 1845, Charles Clifford enlisted a volunteer company and in March 1846 started building the stockade, the first of several along Porirua Road. This was on Section 11/181, owned by Mr Johnson, in what was to be Johnsonville.

Cowan (1983 I: 98) describes a loopholed stockade, and small loft with ladder access which might have been part of an attached blockhouse or lookout.

Condition not known; unlikely to have survived.

12.12 Elliot's Stockade (1)

R27/242 (2664600E 6005800N); recorded 2001; also Fort Elliott.

Porirua; left bank of Kenepuru Stream (Wards 1968: 263–264), near Lyttelton Avenue, east of the Kenepuru Drive intersection.

One of several works along the Porirua Road for the security of road and road builders; the name is from Lieutenant Lempster Elliot (Hart 1849: 251) who commanded the 99th Regiment detachment at the post. Flooded at the end of 1846 and replaced by a new work (section 12.13) west of the Porirua Road (Wards 1968: 264).

The above information is from the historic record; exact location unknown.

Condition not known; unlikely to have survived.

12.13 Elliot's Stockade (2)

R27 (2664400E 6005700N); no site record, not located.

Porirua; Section 62 near Jackson's Ferry to Paremata (Wards 1968: 264); map reference from Walton (2003: 7).

Established at the end of 1846 after the first stockade was flooded (Wards 1968: 264).

Condition not known; unlikely to have survived.

12.14 Fort Strode

R26/258 (2669450E 6010650N); recorded 1993; Fig. 125.

Pauatahanui Inlet; near the shore of a prominent point on north side of inlet.

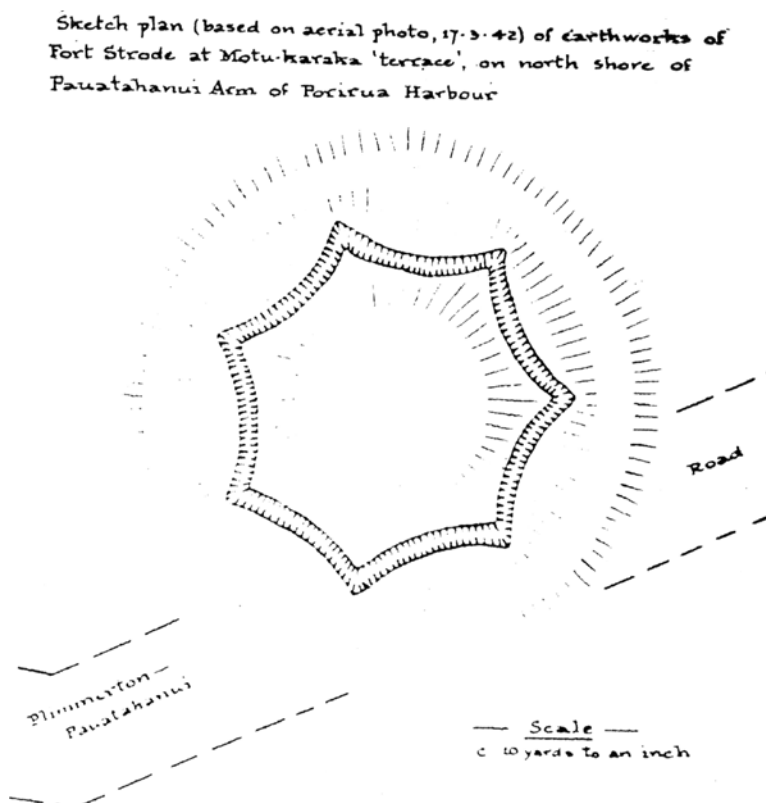


Figure 125. Fort Strode. George Leslie Adkin, *Māori Notebook 51* [1960-61], Ref.: MS-Papers-6061-52, Alexander Turnbull Library, Wellington.

Dating from 1846 Pākehā military operations for the control of the Pauatahanui district (see also Pauatahanui Stockade, section **12.21**); the name is from police Sub-Inspector A.C. Strode; formerly the site of Te Rangihaeata's Motu-Karaka pā before he moved to Matai-Taua (**12.17**).

Ditch and bank earthwork redoubt of a unique, scalloped, seven-sided plan; c. 22 yards (20 m) diameter, with flattened interior mound.

Destroyed by the shoreline road and by bulldozer preparation for a World War II American military camp.

12.15 Horokiri

R26/246 (2672800E 6015400N); recorded 1986, update 2003.

Battle Hill, Pauatahanui; access via walking track up ridge north of the graves and carpark off Paekakariki Hill Road.

When Te Rangihaeata abandoned Matai-Taua (**12.17**) on 1 August 1846, he was followed up by British troops, militia and police, and Te Atiawa and Ngati Toa forces, all under Major Edward Last. On 6 August, Last advanced through the bush and came upon Māori defences of felled trees and an earth breastwork across a narrow ridge, but came under fire and failed to dislodge the defenders. This was the last fight in the 1846 Wellington conflict. A week later Te Rangihaeata's forces were found to have gone (Cowan 1983 I: 125–134; Wards 1968: 282–284).

Makeshift work of felled trees and earth breastwork.

In pasture; a shallow trench can be traced across the ridge where it is cut by two farm tracks.

12.16 Leigh's Stockade

R27/238 (2663000 6002000N); recorded 2001; also Fort Leigh.

Tawa; west of Main Road near Oxford Street intersection; exact location not known.

Built May–December 1846 (Walton 2003: 7); one of several posts housing road builders and protecting the Porirua Road; name after Lieutenant Charles Leigh, 58th Regiment (Hart 1849: 251), who was in charge of a detachment at the post.

Located from historical records.

Condition not known; unlikely to have survived.

12.17 Matai-Taua

R27/135 (2671000E 6009300N); N160/113; recorded 1980, update 2005.

Pauatahanui; head of inlet on hill above road junction, St Alban's Church now on the site.

Te Rangihaeata's winter 1846 pā and headquarters; evacuated on 1 August when militia and Te Atiawa arrived from the Hutt Valley (Cowan 1983 I: 123–125).

Pā c. 80 × 40 m, generally rectangular but narrower at the west end; 15 ft (4.5 m) high outer palisade and an inner heavily timbered stockade of 10-inch square (250 × 250 mm) timber in front of a rifle trench. Some of many interior huts had tunnel access to the firing positions.

Surface evidence in church grounds and the paddock behind is not easy to interpret and may relate to the pā or to later Pauatahanui Stockade (**12.21**) on the same site, or both; surface midden scatters.

12.18 McCoy's Stockade

R27/236 (2663100E 6000900N); recorded 2001.

Tawa; next to Main Road, northeast of the Sunrise Boulevard intersection; from historical records, exact location not known.

Built in May–December 1846 (Walton 2003: 7); one of several posts housing road builders and protecting the Porirua Road. Name from Lieutenant Thomas M'Coy, 65th Regiment (Hart 1849: 217), in charge of the detachment.

Condition not known; unlikely to have survived.

12.19 Middleton's Stockade

R27/237 (2662500E 5999000N); recorded 2001.

Johnsonville; west of Middleton Road (Old Porirua Road), north of Johnsonville.

Built in May–December 1846 (Walton 2003: 7); one of several posts housing road builders and protecting the Porirua Road. Name is from Ensign Frederick Middleton, 58th Regiment (Hart 1849: 248), in charge of the detachment.

Stockade form not known.

Site destroyed when a house was built on the site in the late 1990s.

12.20 Paremata Barracks

R26/254 (2666700E 6010250N); recorded 1989, update 2004; Figs 126, 127.

Mana, Porirua City; Ngati Toa Domain, next to Mana Cruising Club building.

Governor Grey chose this fort site to control Porirua Harbour and an important north–south harbour crossing. In April 1846, 220 men of the 58th, 96th and 99th Regiments arrived by sea and set up camp behind a trench and parapet, which was soon replaced by a stockade, except at the harbour (south) side (Burnett 1963: 14–15). James Wilson then won a tender for £1,485 to build a stone barracks. Work began in October 1846 and was finished on 7 August 1847, with small towers added later (Burnett 1963: 16–18). When the 1848 Wellington earthquake damaged the upper storey, troops moved to huts in the adjacent stockade. The last garrison, of the 65th Regiment, left in June 1852 (Burnett 1963: 20). In 1855, the second Wellington earthquake brought down the upper storey (Wards 1968: 263).

Archaeological excavations in 1959–60 showed the two-storey stone fort to be 60 × 44 ft (18.3 × 13.4 m) with two 15 × 15 ft (4.6 × 4.6 m) bastions at opposite angles, and confirmed the contract specifications of 2 ft 3 inch (690 mm) outer and 1 ft 6 inch (460 mm) interior walls (Burnett 1963: 17, 29). A door at the northwest end led to a corridor giving access to four or more rooms, and to a magazine with 2 ft 6 inch (760 mm) walls.

There are important surviving remains despite continued deterioration of the walls. A protective fence was put up in 2004. There is no reported evidence of the associated preliminary earthwork or stockade.

12.21 Pauatahanui Stockade

R27 (2671000E 6009300N). No site record.

Pauatahanui; on a hill above the road junction at head of inlet, St Alban's Church now on the site; see also Matai-Taua (12.17).

When Te Rangihaeata evacuated Matai-Taua on 1 August 1846, on the same day Pākehā militia and local Te Atiawa took possession of the site. In October, the post was held by 100 men of the 65th Regiment under three officers; British troops remained at the stockade until 1850 to build roads in the neighbourhood (Best 1921: 23).

In 1847, the Pākehā stockade was described as retaining the pā stockade, with the interior now filled with wooden huts painted blue and shingled (Best 1921: 23).

Surface evidence in the church grounds and paddock behind will relate to the Pauatahanui Stockade or earlier Matai-Taua pā built on the same site, or both.

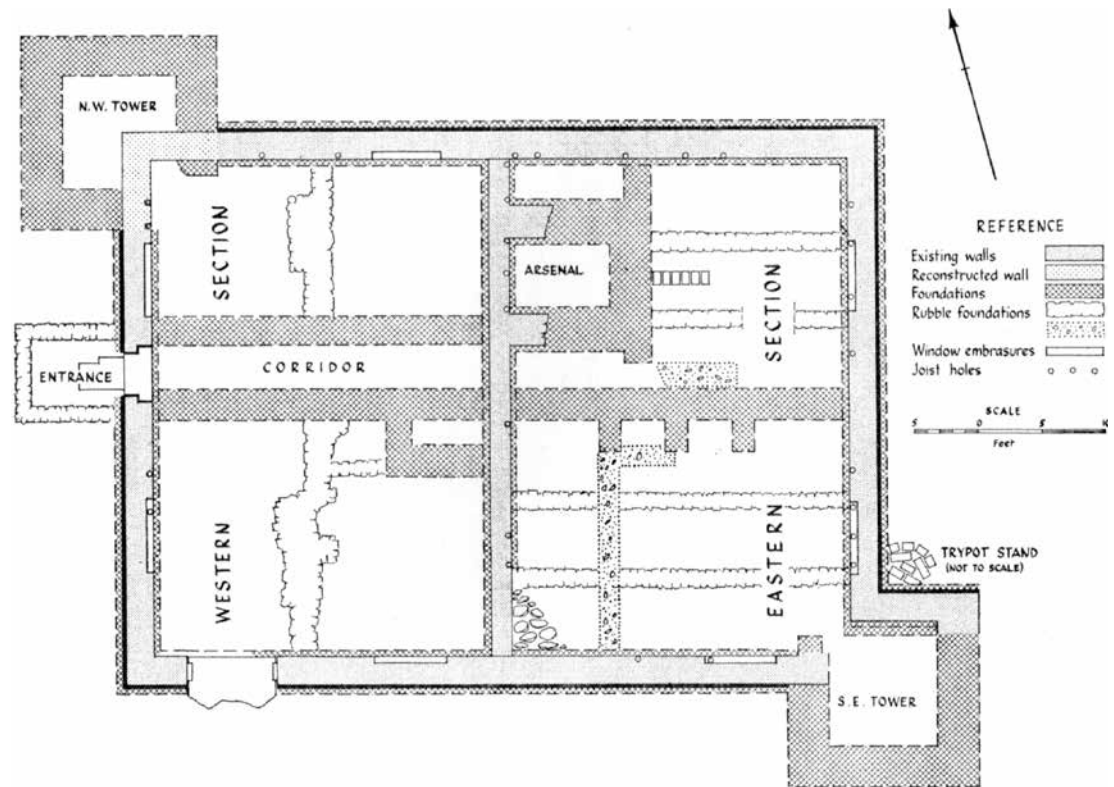


Figure 126. Paremata Barracks, plan. From Burnett 1963: 26.



Figure 127. Paremata Barracks. Photo: N. Prickett, 1990.

13. South Island and Chatham Island

The first fighting of the New Zealand Wars took place in the South Island, on the western edge of the Wairau Plain in what is now Marlborough. The Wairau Incident of 17 June 1843 prompted the erection of three fortifications at Akaroa on Banks Peninsula and one in Nelson, to act as refuges and protect local Pākehā communities. An earthwork redoubt at Waitangi on Chatham Island was part of the local military establishment when Māori from the North Island east coast were deported there after the fighting of 1865 and 1866.

SOUTH ISLAND

13.1 English Blockhouse

N36 (2506900E 5710800N); no site record, not located; Fig. 128.

Akaroa; near the point just north of the present wharf (Hight & Straubel 1957: Fig. 14).

Begun after the Wairau Incident to protect Pākehā civilians, but only completed in 1845 when news came of fighting in the Bay of Islands.

A two-storey loopholed blockhouse, with the upper storey extending out from the lower, and surrounded by a rectangular stockade.

Under foreshore road and/or adjacent buildings; largely or completely destroyed.



Figure 128. English Blockhouse, Akaroa, 1843. *W.B.D. Mantell sketch, in Hight & Straubel 1957: Fig. 14.*

13.2 Fort Arthur

O27/57 (2533700E 5992200N); S20/48; recorded 1985, update 2003; Heritage New Zealand Category II registration No 5961; Fig. 129.

Nelson; top of Church Hill, beneath Christ Church Cathedral and in surrounding gardens.

Built for the protection of Pākehā civilians after the 1843 Wairau Incident.

An initial timber and earthwork fort was later altered to a five-sided, bastioned earthwork at the top of the hill, enclosing more than an acre (.4 ha) of ground. Within the earthwork, a 47.5 × 15 m stockade was loopholed for muskets, with artillery comprising 18-pounder carronades (a type of mortar).

A bronze plaque marks the remains of an earthwork bastion a few metres from the cathedral's main door; other subsurface earthworks may survive in the gardens. Any remains of the stockade inside the earthworks were probably destroyed when the top of the hill was cut down for the cathedral.



Figure 129. Fort Arthur, Nelson, 1845. 'Sketch in Nelson, N.Z.', Miss Longueville, Nelson Provincial Museum, Bett Loan Collection, AC844.

13.3 French Blockhouse

N36; (2507300E 5711400N) no site record, not located.

Begun after the 1843 Wairau Incident for protection of Pākehā civilians; but completed only in 1845 with news of fighting in the Bay of Islands.

Two-storey loopholed blockhouse, upper storey extending out from lower, surrounded by a rectangular stockade.

Present condition not known.

13.4 Takamatua Blockhouse

N36 (2507400E 5713900N); no site record, not located.

Akaroa, Takamatua Bay; in reserve behind beach at the centre of the bay.

Established after the Wairau Incident to protect local Pākehā.

Two-storey loopholed blockhouse, upper storey extending out from lower, surrounded by rectangular stockade.

Present condition not known.

CHATHAM ISLAND

13.5 Waitangi Redoubt

Chatham Islands Sheet 1 (c. 450E 553N); no site record, not located; Fig. 130

Waitangi; terrace edge above the beach, at or near the end of Waitangi Tuku Road.

Built in 1866 by Māori prisoners who were mostly Te Aitanga-a-Mahaki and Rongowhakaata from Turanganui (Poverty Bay), and included Te Kooti Arikirangi (Binney 1995: 58–60). The redoubt was captured by Te Kooti and his fellow-prisoners on 4 July 1868, before they seized the schooner *Rifleman* and departed for Whareongaonga, south of Poverty Bay, and from there to several years of fighting in the central and eastern North Island.

Contemporary pictures show a rectangular work, c. 35 × 20 m, with sod walls and bastions at the northeast and southwest angles covering all sides. Largely filled with ponga and flax buildings. Contained a square magazine in the central courtyard (see also Cowan 1983 II: 227).

Present condition not known.

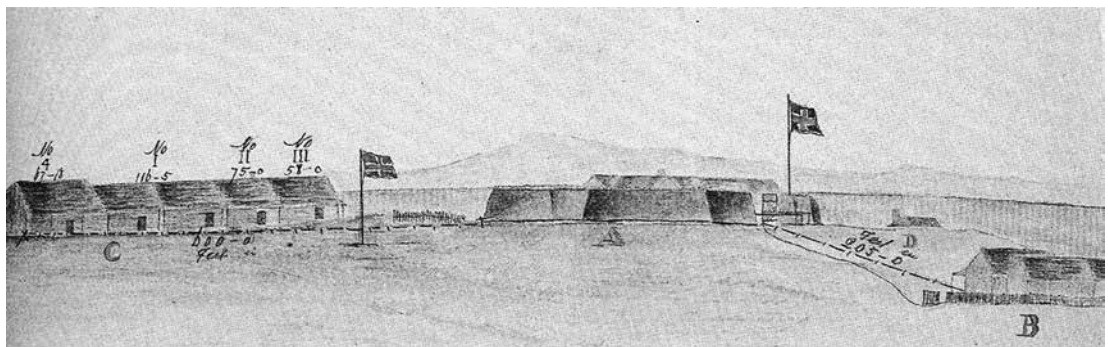


Figure 130. Waitangi Redoubt, Chatham Island. *Papers relating to Maori Prisoners of War and their guards on the Chatham Islands, Archives New Zealand, The Department of Internal Affairs Te Tari Taiwhenua, AD 31 3/15.*

14. Conclusions and recommendations

This report catalogues 505 New Zealand War fortifications, nearly two-thirds (322) European and one-third (183) Māori. Of the listed sites, 348 are recorded in the New Zealand Archaeological Association (NZAA) Site Record Scheme and 157 were not recorded when the work for this report was carried out. Summary regional data is given in Table 2. Basic data on each catalogue item is presented in Appendix 1.

While this report is the most complete record of fortifications at the time of publication, it is still only a work in progress. For listed sites the quality of available data varies considerably. Historical information is best where previous research has been carried out on a systematic basis such as that of the late Owen Wilkes in the Waikato, John Mitchell's work on Napier-Taupo Road sites, and my own Taranaki work. The many site records with little or no historical information, and 157 unrecorded works, require more historical research than the time for this project has allowed. More historical and field research is needed to establish the form of many works. Information on the present condition of sites depends on records from recent visits, which are not available for unrecorded sites or for a significant proportion of recorded sites which were recorded many years ago and not revisited since.

The lack of information, along with time constraints, has meant that an unknown number of fortifications are not included in the report. The biggest shortfall is almost certainly in Māori works. Pākehā works are more often noted and described in European written records, and the formal plan of European works makes for easier field identification than the irregular earthworks of Māori pā and rifle-pits. It is, however, likely that Māori built fewer works than Europeans: this was especially so in later years of the conflict when the capacity of Māori to build or fight from fixed positions declined, at a time when Pākehā were still engaged in building and maintaining fortified frontiers in much of the North Island.

14.1 The fortifications

14.1.1 Pākehā fortifications

Earthwork redoubts make up c.184 (57%) of the total of Pākehā works. The exact number is hard to establish because it is not always clear from a name or historical account what form the defences took. The only historical photographs of 'Waihi Redoubt' (10.26) show a stockade (see Cowan

Table 2. Numbers of European and Māori fortifications by region.

	TOTALS	PĀKEHĀ	MĀORI	NZAA RECORDS	PĀKEHĀ SITES RECORDED	MĀORI SITES RECORDED
Bay of Islands	13	5	8	8	2	6
Auckland	41	40	1	21	20	1
Waikato	82	59	23	78	57	21
Bay of Plenty	56	18	38	44	16	28
Central North Island	19	8	11	17	8	9
Poverty Bay and East Coast	22	3	19	11	3	8
Hawke's Bay and Wairarapa	16	12	4	11	7	4
North Taranaki	142	87	55	91	67	24
South Taranaki	29	19	10	17	12	5
Whanganui	59	47	12	39	30	9
Wellington	21	19	2	10	8	2
South Island and Chatham Island	5	5	0	1	1	0
Totals	505	322	183	348	231	117

1983 II: 183). Some works incorporated more than one form of defence, such as Whangamarino Redoubt (4.22), which had an earth parapet to the front, and a stockade at the rear to face nearby high ground. Taranaki works made up of two buildings joined by a stockaded yard might be labelled either 'blockhouse' or 'stockade' in the historical record. Others works changed from one defensive form to another. Mahoetahi Stockade (9.13) began in 1860 as a small timber work, was abandoned in 1863, and then reoccupied in 1864 with an added redoubt earthwork for a larger garrison. Matakara Redoubt (9.40) was first an earthwork redoubt for 120 Taranaki Bushrangers and later transformed into a 30-man stockade (Prickett 1996: 41).

Earthwork redoubts were mostly campaign works, and were the preferred form when fighting was anticipated or was taking place, their advantage being that they could be thrown up quickly and accommodate large numbers of men. In the Waikato, c. 47 of 59 European works, or 79.7%, were redoubts—telling of the significant fighting that took place there. Other regions with high proportions of redoubts were South Taranaki where as many of 16 of 19 (84.2%) of Pākehā works were redoubts, and the Bay of Plenty, 15 of 18 (83.3%).

Blockhouses number c. 56, to make up c. 17.4% of the total of European works; 47 stockades make up 14.6%. High proportions of blockhouses and stockades indicate an emphasis on defence not attack. In the Auckland region, there were 11 blockhouses, three redoubts and one stockade in the city, while in South Auckland, down the Great South Road, 12 redoubts and six stockades show the war to be altogether closer. The use of blockhouses in defence is also illustrated in New Plymouth, where nine were put up around the town in winter 1860. This was after the British defeat at Puketakauere, when Māori were largely in control of the countryside outside European military posts and lines. After the fighting of 1863–64, blockhouses were again common in a defensive role, but this time they were used to protect soldier-settlers on newly confiscated land at the frontier of Pākehā settlement.

Less common European fortification types include 'earthworks', fortified buildings, saps and one-off forms. The latter include the Firth Tower (4.49), Strachan's Cave (11.57) and the extensive stone-walled Albert Barracks (3.1). Earthworks of a more extensive form than redoubts include camp defences at Waimate (2.12), Mould's Redoubt (4.11), Te Papa Camp (5.15) and Camp Parawaha (9.94). Other earthworks provided town protection at New Plymouth (9.16) and Gisborne (7.3), and parapets in front of gun positions at Ruapekapeka (2.8), Moturoa (11.27) and Tauranga Ika (11.37).

Listed saps, or attacking trenches, are at Orakau (4.71), Pratt's Sap (9.53) near Waitara and at Kaihihi (9.98), also in Taranaki. Fortified churches in South Auckland were at Papakura (3.23), Pukekohe East (3.25) and St Bride's (3.29) in Mauku. Existing buildings could also be used as strong-points or part of the perimeter of larger works, as at Fort Thorndon (12.1) and Te Aro Redoubt (12.3) in Wellington.

14.1.2 Māori fortifications

Māori fortifications are mostly pā, with a very few stand-alone rifle pits listed. But although the 169 pā make up 92.3% of listed Māori works, they do have greater formal variation than European works. Included are purpose-built artillery-proof fighting positions, purpose-built pā where artillery was not a factor, as in fighting between Maori Groups in the 1850s Puketapu Feud in North Taranaki, and on the East Coast and in Te Urewera in 1865, and what were little more than palisaded kāinga. There were also older fortified pā or settlements caught up in the new form of fighting, for which they were unprepared.

The vast majority of pā were of the enclosed form derived from the older pā tradition of fortified settlements. Less common were barrier pā, which were particularly important in the Waikato strategy of contesting the enemy advance. Notable barrier pā are Rangiriri (4.14), Paterangi (4.33), Pukehinahina/ Gate Pa (5.11), Huirangi (9.27), Te Arei (9.56) and Moturoa (11.26).

The greatest number of pā are recorded in regions that had the most prolonged fighting. In the Bay of Plenty were 31 pā and four Māori works described as ‘redoubts’ from their form, in a total of 58 Māori and Pākehā works in the region. Māori ‘redoubts’, such as Te Niho-o-te-Kiore (5.21) and Kohi-a-tau (5.47) were built and manned by iwi forces allied to the government. Important groups of pā were part of inter-tribal fighting in Te Urewera and on the Rangitaiki Plain, Bay of Plenty. In North Taranaki are 54 listed pā, 19 of them from Māori fighting Māori in the Puketapu Feud, while c. 30 date from the year-long First Taranaki War. In later fighting there were fewer pā, for reasons of economy and because the changing balance in forces meant there was seldom sufficient Māori fighting strength for an effective fixed position.

In Waikato, only 21 pā are listed. Here, the critical struggle of the New Zealand Wars took just nine months, instead of the years of fighting which produced the large numbers of pā in Taranaki and the Bay of Plenty. In Whanganui, where different phases in the conflict extended also over many years, there are only 11 pā in a total of 59 works listed. This may have something to say of fighting strategy, Titokowaru, for example, focussed his strength at only three pā in his advance on Whanganui. There may also be greater gaps in the record.

Rifle-pits are the most under-recorded of New Zealand War fortification types. Most recorded rifle-pits are associated with pā, and so are part of a larger position. In the catalogue, these records are added to the relevant pā entry rather than each having a separate listing. Recorded pā with separately recorded rifle-pits are: Paparata (4.12; 9 associated rifle-pit records); Meremere (4.7; 1 rifle-pit record), Parawai (5.30; 2 rifle-pit records) and Te Porere (6.15; 1 rifle-pit record). There are also different treatments for groups of rifle-pits along a length of ridge. Makaretu (7.4) has three or four rifle-pit groups along c. 500 m of ridge included in one site record. In similar circumstances, at Koheroa (4.4) and Te Ponanga (6.14) there are four and two site records respectively for each separate pit group.

Recent excavations in Taranaki have revealed rifle-pits when working on other historic sites. In one case they were part of the flanking defence of Kaitake pā (9.79; Bruce 2006). At Waireka (9.92), they were found in excavations on a settler homestead destroyed in the First Taranaki War (Adamson 2008), where they appear to have made up a stand-alone position and not part of pā defences. These two finds are suggestive of more unrecorded rifle-pits in districts where fighting took place.

14.2 Recorded and unrecorded sites

There are differences between regions in the proportion of total fortification sites listed here to the number recorded in the NZAA Site Record Scheme (see Table 2). Archaeological site records exist for 348 (68.9%) of fortifications included in this report, while 157 (31.1%) are not yet recorded. In the Waikato list, 78 of 82 sites (95.1% of the total) have site records. Other regions with above average recorded sites are the Central North Island (89.5%) and Bay of Plenty (78.6%). Except for the South Island and Chatham Island (with five sites in total and only one recorded), the lowest proportion of recorded sites in the catalogue is for Wellington at 47.6%, with Poverty Bay and East Coast at 50%, Auckland 51.2%, South Taranaki 58.6% and the Bay of Islands 61.5%. Site records exist for 91 of the 142 listed sites (64.1%) in North Taranaki. The Hawke’s Bay and Wairarapa region has 68.8% recorded, and Whanganui 66.1%.

The number of unrecorded sites in a region can be greatly affected by particular groups of sites. In Auckland city, none of eight 1860 blockhouses on the urban fringe are recorded in a total of only 16 sites. One NZAA record exists from the ten listed sites in the Wellington and Hutt Valley areas. This makes a big difference in the wider Auckland and Wellington regions where total listed works are only 41 and 21 respectively. Only four of 14 listed pā on the East Coast, and five of 19 pā from the 1850s Puketapu Feud in North Taranaki, have site records.

Of 348 listed fortifications with NZAA site records, 231 (66.4%) are European and 117 (33.6%) are Māori. This puts sites with existing records at 63.9% of 183 listed Maori works, and 71.7% of the 322 total of Pākehā works listed in this report. More recording of New Zealand War sites is needed, especially of Māori sites.

14.3 The regions

The catalogue is organised into twelve regions. Table 1 shows the location of fortifications by region. Two-thirds of listed works are in four regions: North Taranaki (142), Waikato (82), Whanganui (59) and the Bay of Plenty (56). Other significant regions are Auckland (with 41 listed fortifications), and South Taranaki (29). Small numbers in other regions tell of a lesser role in the conflict. Appendix 1 gives basic data on all catalogue entries.

All regions except the Bay of Islands and South Taranaki have been subdivided in this report for ease of use in planning and conservation and for readers interested in the sites of a particular district, campaign or conflict. Some of these sub-divisions are remarkable for the density of fortifications from different war episodes. In North Taranaki, the New Plymouth and Bell Block, and Waitara areas (between New Plymouth and the Waitara River) have more than 70 fortifications from the 1850s Puketapu Feud, the First and Second Taranaki Wars and following the 1869 Māori raid on White Cliffs (Prickett 1999: 38–40). In Waikato, the Ngaruawahia and Waipa River area has 24 entries and Te Awamutu and district, 22.

Waikato has 59 listed Pākehā works of a regional total of 82 fortifications, reflecting the 1863–64 advance of British troops and the subsequent 20 years of fortified frontier. The 23 Māori works include large barrier pā at Meremere (4.7), Rangiriri (4.14), Paterangi (4.33) and Pikopiko (4.36) to show a level of man-power commitment that could not be maintained—and lasted only one spring and summer. A higher proportion of Māori works in North Taranaki (55 Māori and 87 Pākehā) reflects the 19 pā involved in the 1850s Puketapu Feud among Māori. Of major regions, only the Bay of Plenty has more Māori works (38) than Pākehā (18), to some extent reflecting a significant involvement of Māori on both sides of the conflict, particularly in the Eastern Bay of Plenty and Te Urewera. Whanganui has only 12 listed Māori works in a total of 59 listed works.

Regions with comparatively few listed Māori fortifications include Auckland with 40 Pākehā and one Māori site, reflecting the lack of fighting in that district and its distance from the Bay of Islands and Waikato conflicts. By contrast, there are 19 Māori pā and only three European works in Poverty Bay and East Coast. All 14 East Coast pā relate to Māori fighting Māori in 1865. In the Central North Island, all seven works at the north end of Lake Taupo are Pākehā posts of the Napier-Taupo Road, while 11 of 12 at the south end of the lake are Māori, some from inter-tribal conflict that took place as late as the 1880s. Wellington has 19 Pākehā and two Māori fortifications, and in the South Island and Chatham Island there are five Pākehā works only.

14.4 Fortifications and strategy

Fortification types tell of changing operational and strategic imperatives. Throughout the conflict period there was a shift in Pākehā works from blockhouses and stockades in the 1840s to redoubts in the early to mid-60s, then a return to timber works, as objectives shifted from defence to offence and back to defence. Māori pā, however, were mostly built for tactical advantage, in the first conflicts as in the last, telling of restricted Māori strategic options. In the decisive campaigns of the mid-60s and at the later fortified frontier Pākehā took the initiative and Māori responded.

Blockhouses and stockades played the most important role in protecting Pākehā towns at the early stages of conflict. The oldest group of these is in the South Island, after the 1843 Wairau Incident, where Fort Arthur (13.2) in Nelson had stockade and earthwork defences and there were three blockhouses at Akaroa. Two years later, at Russell in the Bay of Islands, Polack's Stockade (2.6), Maiki Blockhouse (2.2) and the Lower Blockhouse (2.1) failed to protect the town. In

Wellington and the Hutt Valley, stockades were preferred for both defence and refuge, with two forts dating from 1843, 16 from 1845–46 and two later works. The first Pākehā forts at Whanganui were the Rutland (11.7), York (11.9), Gunboat (11.4) and Lower (11.5) stockades. Except at Whanganui, fighting in the 1840s took place far from the critical battlegrounds of the 1860s. The Pākehā defensive priority continued in 1860 with the erection of eight blockhouses around urban Auckland and nine in New Plymouth.

Notable Māori works of the 1840s were Te Kahika (2.10), Ohaeawai (2.3) and Ruapekapeka (2.7), inland from the Bay of Islands, each of them the object of a major Pākehā expedition and attack. These were innovative works for a new form of warfare and, of the three, only Ruapekapeka was taken, after a ten-day siege. Experience in this campaign gave Māori throughout New Zealand confidence in their ability to match Pākehā in war.

In Taranaki, the first fighting was between Māori groups in the 1850s Puketapu Feud, when 19 pā, mostly reworked from older kāinga (fenced or palisaded settlements), defended their small communities. In the First Taranaki War of 1860–61, while most Pākehā fortifications were defensive, a series of eight redoubts (9.44–51) near Waitara is the outstanding example of Pākehā attacking works in all the New Zealand Wars. In the 1860–61 war pā were built to be attacked, when defenders would have an advantage. British troops were defeated at the twin pā of Onukukaitara (9.52) and Puketakauere (9.54). Four months later the result was reversed at Mahoetahi (9.12). Māori were also badly beaten at Kaipopo (9.78), an innovative pā with no stockade, and so the precursor of Orakau (4.69) and Pukehinahina/ Gate Pā (5.11) among others.

When war resumed in 1863 there were many more British troops in New Zealand than in the 1840s and early 1860s. Numbers peaked at more than 11,000 in early 1864. Also, the New Zealand Settlements Act of 1863 allowed the colonial government to confiscate land from any group considered to be in rebellion against the Crown. This brought military strategy into line with political objectives: the war would be won by taking the land. The critical campaigns of the New Zealand Wars took place in 1863–66, beginning in North Taranaki in autumn 1863, followed by fighting in the Waikato, Bay of Plenty and Whanganui/ South Taranaki regions. After the fighting, Pākehā fortifications shifted from prosecuting the war to holding confiscated land.

Waikato's significance in the wars is shown by the Māori commitment to barrier pā, as at Rangiriri (4.14), Paterangi (4.33) and Pikopiko (4.36), and also the determined fighting at Rangiriri and Orakau. On the Pākehā side, commitment is shown by c. 47 of 58 recorded works being redoubts, dating mostly from the fighting in 1863–64. Because of the proximity of the fighting, rear defensive screens, such as the Pokeno/ Firth of Thames line, were also made up of redoubts. There was no rear blockhouse screen in Waikato, as at Auckland and New Plymouth in 1860, nor was there any later campaign such as occurred in Taranaki, Whanganui and the Bay of Plenty. After nine months of fighting, a military frontier was established, and maintained along the aukati/ confiscation line for 20 years. The 1883 Kawhia A.C. Camp (4.80) was the last established Pākehā fortification relating to the New Zealand Wars.

In Whanganui, the high proportion of redoubts among Pākehā works indicates a preference in response to Titokowaru's 1868 campaign. Because they offered rapid construction when speed seemed necessary, eight defensive refuge redoubts were put up near the town, and another ten in Rangitikei. In South Taranaki most European works were redoubts, to tell of several episodes of fighting in the region, from 1865 to 1868.

The last fighting of the New Zealand Wars took place in the eastern Bay of Plenty, Poverty Bay, East Coast, Hawke's Bay and Taupo districts. As in the early conflict in the 1840s, all these regions were far from the major struggle of the 1860s. The return to blockhouses and stockades made best use of the small numbers of Armed Constabulary and other colonial units in often isolated locations. Seven posts along the Napier–Taupo Road were largely timber works.

Māori fortifications did not undergo such obvious changes. The Introduction details how pā changed in the 1845–46 Northern War in response to enemy artillery. More than two decades later, Tauranga Ika (11.36) was similar to Ruapekapeka (2.7) in scale and defensive arrangements. Nonetheless, there were innovations, in particular the move from stockade to earthwork defences, which required less investment of time and resources, and had the advantage of a low profile and smaller target for Pākehā artillery. Also, while protected and traversed rifle trenches were present in 1840s Bay of Islands pā, it was not until 1860 in Taranaki, that rifle-pits were placed forward and to the sides of pā, or used as stand-alone works.

14.5 Future research

The project reported here shows up big gaps in knowledge of the places and landscapes of the 19th century New Zealand Wars. The following suggestions for improvement of knowledge of New Zealand Wars fortifications will help make sense of individual works and assist in understanding the purpose and course of the wars. But fortifications cannot tell the story on their own. To make sense of them, it is necessary also to know of other historic sites and places of the period and the wider landscape contexts, and of course the historical context.

Historical research is required using the available historical documentation. The most valuable material is primary records, that is, records of first-hand observations at the time. Among these are the official reports and other accounts in Archives New Zealand; manuscripts, official (British and New Zealand government) and unofficial printed accounts, and photographs, paintings and drawings. These are in the major research libraries, notably the Alexander Turnbull Library in Wellington and the Hocken Library, Dunedin. with significant records also in other libraries. Contemporary newspapers are an under-used resource, and are accessible on the Papers Past website.

This project made considerable use of Cowan's (1983) two-volume work *The New Zealand Wars*, first published in 1922–23. This is the only published record of many fortifications and other historic places, and he visited many of the sites. The abstraction of all Cowan's references to historic places of the wars would enable their addition to existing NZAA. site records and give direction to further site recording.

Site recording is needed in many districts and regions. This might begin with the 157 fortifications listed here but not yet recorded in the NZAA site record files. Recording is best carried out on a regional or district basis, so that historically associated sites can be followed up, located, and the gaps filled on a systematic basis. Good site records need quality historic data. The Site Record Scheme, founded in 1958 as a research tool, is now more widely used in land management, where reliable and detailed records provide essential information for good protection and conservation decisions.

Archaeological excavations can enhance our knowledge about a particular historic place as well as add to general information about these kinds of sites. The significance of a fortification or other historic site is told by its recorded history as well as its location and observed or excavated features. Excavation can reveal details about how people lived there, used the site and altered it for their purpose, either briefly or over a period of years. Excavations revealed changes to the size and shape of Warea Redoubt (9.123) in Taranaki (Prickett 1994b). Also in Taranaki, excavation uncovered previously unknown Māori rifle-pits at Waireka (9.92) dating from the summer of 1860–61 (Adamson 2008). We cannot anticipate what any particular archaeological excavation might bring to knowledge the New Zealand Wars.

14.6 The archaeological landscape

The New Zealand Wars shaped our country. The results of expansion and of dispossession are still with us, as any hearing of the Waitangi Tribunal will show. A recent history of the period by a Māori historian is titled 'Wars Without End' (Keenan 2009). Locations and landscapes relating to the wars are important as places of memory and in the development of further knowledge about the conflict and its outcomes. We cannot know the present without knowledge of the past. The historical fortifications reported here make up an important resource for telling our story.

Each fortification of the New Zealand Wars has something to say on the course and outcome of the conflict. While pā and other works where major engagements took place are among our best known and most important historic places, everywhere Māori or Pākehā built a pā, redoubt or other strong point is important in the history of the period. Among other Māori sites of the period are unfortified kāinga, meeting houses, graves, gardens and tracks. European sites include farms, homesteads, camps, mission stations, churches, graves, roads, tracks and river landings. Battlefields tell the stories of particular places of conflict.

This report follows the New Zealand Historic Places Trust (now Heritage New Zealand) on-line document 'Planning a Future for New Zealand War Sites and Landscapes' (Prickett & McGovern-Wilson 2009), which lists all New Zealand War sites, not just fortifications, for which there are records in the NZAA site recording scheme. While these were not checked for accuracy the wider list does give access to sites not presented here.

14.7 Conservation

It is not surprising that regions most contested in the past are among places where people have always most wanted to live. That is why they were fought over. So it is that many New Zealand Wars landscapes are desirable today for farming, industry, housing, infrastructure and other developments. Since not all sites can be preserved, knowledge about the sites is essential for good conservation decisions. There is a real threat that many sites reported here will be lost through changes in land-use and natural processes before any serious study of them can be undertaken.

In considering the future of this resource it is necessary to look at the conservation issues relating to the particular historic places presented here. Each site has a unique story of the conflict. At the same time, groups of sites in a landscape can be more valuable than a single historic place, for historical and archaeological study and for presenting their story to the public. The sites may be associated with battles or events within a confined area, or be more widely distributed as part of larger events or campaigns. Every associated historic site can help make sense of the others.

Heritage New Zealand Pouhere Taonga has statutory responsibility for the protection of archaeological sites and for conditions placed on their modification or destruction. Heritage New Zealand is also responsible for the official registration of historic places to increase awareness and improve protection. Few New Zealand War sites are currently registered for protection. Those that are registered are not always the most significant. New Zealand War sites should be added to the Heritage New Zealand Register as soon as possible, beginning with the most significant sites.

Protecting sites on private land depends on recognising their significance before development proposals are made. When development planning has begun, often the best that can be expected is a salvage excavation. Although this gives useful information, it also clears the way for part or complete destruction of the site. Protected or significant sites can be identified in the Historic Places Trust Register, listed in district schemes, and included on land titles or detailed on a Land Information Memorandum attached to a particular piece of land. Prior recognition of significant sites and landscapes must be widely known and understood by landowners and local authorities, and easily accessed by public and private developers.

14.8 Recommendations

This report provides a basis for identifying significant sites and landscapes for protection. A planned and focussed programme of work will enable appropriate decisions to be made concerning the sites and landscapes to be protected, and so ensure the best possible outcomes.

Site recording is needed to:

1. Create records for the 157 sites listed in this report that are not yet included in the NZAA Site Record Scheme;
2. Upgrade existing site records which need further work in the areas of historical context, fortification description and site condition.
3. Record additional New Zealand War fortification and other sites not included in this catalogue.

Site protection and conservation depends on a place's historical and archaeological significance. Historically important fortifications such as Pukehinahina/ Gate Pā (5.11) and Orakau (4.69) deserve protection despite the level of damage they have sustained and the lack of visible evidence. Historically less-important fortifications that have outstanding archaeological value should also be protected. These sites may be protected on their own or as part of a wider landscape that includes other related fortifications and historic places.

Consideration for protection must begin with the most important sites. The list below is of sites that deserve immediate attention. Although not definitive, it is a starting point for the registration and notification work required to make effective protection and conservation decisions. Further consideration of sites deserving protection could be carried out on a regional basis. Note that the list below includes sites already in public ownership and/or under effective conservation management.

1. Bay of Islands: Ohaeawai (2.3), Ruapekapeka (2.7), Te Kahika (2.10).
2. Auckland: Albert Barracks (3.1), Onehunga Blockhouse (3.6), Alexandra Redoubt, Tuakau, (3.10), Queen's Redoubt (3.26), St Bride's Church (3.29), St John's Redoubt (3.30).
3. Waikato: Eglinton Redoubt (4.2), Esk Redoubt (4.3), Meremere (4.7), Miranda Redoubt (4.8), Rangiriri (4.14), Surrey Redoubt (4.17), Whangamarino Redoubt (4.22), Alexandra Redoubt, Pirongia (4.23), Paterangi (4.33), Waiari (4.44), Firth Tower (4.49), Te Tiki-o-te-Ihingarangi (4.57), Orakau (4.69), Rotoorangī Redoubt (4.78).
4. Bay of Plenty: Moerangi (5.8), Monmouth Redoubt (5.9), Pukehinahina/ Gate Pā (5.11), Te Ranga (5.16), Fort Galatea (5.43), Hinemoki (5.44–5.45), Okupu (5.50), Te Tapiri (5.55)
5. Central North Island: Opepe Redoubt (6.1), Tapuaeharuru Redoubt (6.4), Te Porere (6.15–16), Waiau (6.18–19).
6. Poverty Bay and East Coast: Ngatapa (7.5), Te Karetu (7.7), Waerenga-a-Hika (7.8), Manawahikitia (7.12), Pukepapa (7.16).
7. Hawke's Bay and Wairarapa: Onepoto Redoubt (8.4), Tokitoki (8.7).
8. North Taranaki: Fort Niger (9.8), Mahoetahi (9.12), Marsland Hill Stockade (9.14), Camp Waitara (9.26), Huirangi (9.27), Mataitawa Redoubt (9.39), No 3 Redoubt (9.46), No 7 Redoubt (9.50), Onukukaitara (9.52), Pratt's Sap (9.53), Puketakauere (9.54), Te Arei (9.56), Te Kohia (9.59), Pukearuhe Redoubt (9.66), Tikorangi Redoubt (9.68), Kaipopo (9.78), Kaitake Redoubt (9.80), Omata Stockade (9.83), St Andrew's Redoubt (9.86), Waireka Camp (9.90), Orongomaihangai (9.101), St George's Redoubt (9.104), Opunake Redoubt (9.117), Warea Redoubt (9.123).
9. South Taranaki: Kakaramea Redoubt (10.4), Manaia Redoubt (10.6), Manawapou Redoubt (10.7), Otapawa (10.15), Tangahoe Redoubt (10.21), Te Ngutu o te Manu (10.23), Turuturumokai Redoubt (10.25), Waihi Redoubt (10.26).

10. Whanganui: Rutland Stockade (11.7), Alexander's Farm Redoubt (11.21), Moturoa (11.26), Nukumarū Pickets and Redoubt (11.28-31), Oika (11.32), Tauranga Ika (11.36), Weraroa (11.42), Woodall's Redoubt (11.44), Marangai Blockhouse (11.50), Strachan's Cave (11.57).
11. Wellington: Upper Hutt Stockade (12.10), Matai-Taua (12.17), Paremata Barracks (12.20).
12. South Island and Chatham Island: Fort Arthur (13.2).

New Zealand War landscapes that require a level of wider conservation protection are listed below. They relate to particular events, notably battles, and to localities or districts with significant groups of historic and archaeological sites. Groups of sites that tell a particular story but are not in a contiguous landscape also fall into this category, such as Auckland's Great South Road and the several pā of Titikowaru. These significant landscapes can vary greatly in size.

Landscape conservation issues include: protection of the immediate landscape context of a significant site; the level of protection required; compatible and incompatible development; retention of battlefield and other views; and the level of protection for associated sites with archaeological and historical value.

The list below is not definitive; there are others that might be considered. The names of individual sites are not generally given, to encourage consideration of all the relevant sites in each landscape. Where a site name is given it indicates a relevant district or event and will include other fortifications and sites:

- 1. Bay of Islands:** 1. Te Kahika; 2. Ohaeawai; 3. Ruapekapeka.
- 2. Auckland:** 1. Albert Barracks; 2. Great South Road.
- 3. Waikato:** 1. Pokeno to Firth of Thames defensive line; 2. Pokeno, Mangatawhiri and Koheroa; 3. Meremere; 4. Rangiriri; 5. Waipa River sites; 6. Paterangi, Pikopiko, Te Rore and Waiari; 7. Pirongia; 8. Te Awamutu; 9. Hairini and Rangiaowhia; 10. Orakau.
- 4. Bay of Plenty:** 1. Pukehinahina / Gate Pā, Te Ranga and Te Papa; 2. the Te Tapiri ridge and associated sites.
- 5. Central North Island:** 1. the Napier-Taupo Road; 2. Te Kooti associated sites south of Lake Taupo.
- 6. Poverty Bay and East Coast:** 1. pā of 1865 East Coast fighting; 2. sites of the Ngatapa campaign.
- 7. Hawke's Bay and Wairarapa:** none identified.
- 8. North Taranaki:** 1. Puketapu Feud pā and other sites; 2. Waitara district inland to Te Arei (Te Kohia, Puketakauere, Huirangi, Pratt's Sap and redoubts, etc.); 3. Mahoetahi; 4. Tapuae (Waireka) ridge; 5. 1863 Tataraimaka campaign; 6. Mataitawa and Matakara; 7. 1869 Pukearuhe raid and associated sites; 8. Oakura district; 9. Warea district; 10. Parihaka Campaign.
- 9. South Taranaki:** 1. General Cameron's 1865 campaign (especially Waingongoro and Tangahoe site complexes); 2. pā and kāinga destroyed in 1866 by General Chute (including Otapawa); 3. Titokowaru's Campaign; 4. Parihaka Campaign.
- 10. Whanganui:** 1. Pipiriki and Whanganui River; 2. Nukumarū and Weraroa; 3. Titokowaru's Campaign; 4. the defence of Whanganui in 1868; 5. the Rangitikei redoubts.
- 11. Wellington:** 1. the Porirua Road 1846; 2. Pāuatahanui Inlet.
- 12. South Island and Chatham Island:** 1. Akaroa

Fortifications in towns and cities are not included in the list of significant landscapes, but deserve particular awareness. Wellington, Whanganui, New Plymouth, Auckland, Russell and Napier all have significant works within their present urban centres that will have suffered degrees of destruction. These sites and locations are listed in the catalogue. Archaeological evidence may survive at sites such as Te Aro Redoubt (12.3) in Wellington, Gunboat (11.4) and Lower (11.5) stockades in Whanganui and New Plymouth and Auckland blockhouses dating from 1860.

These are important historic places; their discovery and investigation as part of development mitigation work would be an important contribution to knowledge of the New Zealand Wars, and to understanding of the history of their respective towns and cities.

15. Acknowledgements

Thanks are due to many people who helped with this report. The project was initiated by Bronek Kazmierow, Kevin Jones and the late Tony Walton, from National Office, Department of Conservation, Wellington (Science Investigation Number 3971). Department of Conservation staff Mariska Wouters, Mark Stephen, Louise Hoather and Lynette Clelland have been helpful and supportive. Nicola Molloy and Richelle McKenzie provided work space and assistance with the central site record file.

Assistance regarding particular regions or sites was given by Janice Adamson, Ivan Bruce, Aidan Challis, Rod Clough, Peter Cooke, Kelvin Day, Warren Gumbley, Simon Holdaway, Michelle Horwood, Kevin Jones, Ron Lambert, Chris Mallows, John Mitchell, Mary O'Keefe, Ken Phillips, Alexy Simmons, Neville Ritchie and Wynne Spring-Rice. Others who added to my knowledge of New Zealand War sites before this project began include Owen Wilkes (Waikato), Randal Springer (Whanganui), Jim Mandeno (Waikato), Jim Lundy (Rangitikei), Maurice Lennard (South Auckland) and Alastair Buist (Taranaki), all now deceased. I would also like to thank the many land owners who allowed me to visit historic sites on their properties, and whose interest and stewardship is significant and valued.

16. References

- Adams, P.A. 1978: Rangiriri. *Records of the New Zealand Historic Places Trust 2*: 35–48.
- Adams, P.A. 1985: The Armed Constabulary and origins of Taupo. *Historic Places in New Zealand 9*: 26–27.
- Adamson, J. 2008: Preliminary report: Archaeological investigations at Omata, Taranaki, pursuant to Section 18, Historic Places Trust Act 1993, Authority No. 2008/139. Unpublished report to the New Zealand Historic Places Trust, 30 p.
- Adkin, G.L. 1948: Horowhenua. Department of Internal Affairs, Wellington.
- Alexander, J.E. 1863: Description of a serviceable field work, the Omata Stockade, Taranaki, New Zealand. *Journal of the Royal United Service Institution 6*: 595–599.
- Alington, M.H. 1988: Goodly stones and timbers. St Mary's Church, New Plymouth.
- Auckland Historical Society. 1993: Report on the redoubts of the Great South Road. *Auckland-Waikato Historical Journal 63* (Special Edition).
- Bagnall, A.G. 1954: Masterton's first hundred years. Masterton Centennial Committee, Masterton.
- Baker, J.V.T. 1966: Population. Pp. 821–833 in McLintock A.H. (Ed.): An encyclopaedia of New Zealand (Vol. 2). R.E. Owen, Government Printer, Wellington.
- Barton, F.M. 1997: Martyn's Farm military post. *Auckland-Waikato Historical Journal 69*: 1–20.
- Battersby, J. 2000: The one day war: the Battle of Omarunui, 1866. Reed Publishing, Auckland
- Belich, J. 1986: The New Zealand Wars. Auckland University Press, Auckland.
- Belich, J. 1989: I shall not die. Allen and Unwin/ Port Nicholson Press, Wellington.
- Bell, R.M. n.d.: Early military forces in Hawke's Bay 1857–1874. Hawke's Bay Museum & Art Gallery Leaflet No 8.
- Best, E. 1921: Old redoubts, blockhouses and stockades of the Wellington district. *Transactions of the New Zealand Institute 53*: 14–28.
- Best, E. 1925: Tuhoë: the children of the mist. *Memoirs of the Polynesian Society Vol. 6*.
- Bilcliffe, J. 1995: Well done the 68th. Picton Publishing, Chippenham.
- Binney, J. 1995: Redemption songs; a life of Te Kooti Arikirangi Te Turuki. Auckland University Press and Bridget Williams Books, Auckland.
- Binney, J. 2009: Encircled lands; Te Urewera, 1820–1921. Bridget Williams Books, Auckland.
- Bromley, A.P.C. 1981: Hawera district centenary. Centennial Committee of the Hawera District Council.
- Bruce, I. 2006: Excavation of lots 3 and 4, Tompkins Subdivision, Wairau Road, Oakura; preliminary report. Unpublished, 5 p.
- Bruce, I. 2009: Survey and assessment of the proposed town hall, Normanby. Unpublished report to the South Taranaki District Council, 20 p.
- Buist, A.G. 1968: Thacker's Redoubt, Manawapou, South Taranaki. *New Zealand Archaeological Association Newsletter 11*: 65–171.
- Buist, A.G. ms1: South Taranaki military redoubts. Unpublished typescript, 10 p.
- Buist A.G. ms2: Narrative history of establishment of redoubts. (Smart) MS Papers 1008–1009, Alexander Turnbull Library, unpublished typescript, 13 p.
- Buick, T.L. 1926: New Zealand's first war. Government Printer, Wellington.
- Burnett, R.I.M. 1963: The Paremata Barracks. Government Printer, Wellington.
- Campbell, M. 2009: Archaeological investigation of 1–15 Pipitea Street, Wellington. CFG Heritage, Auckland, 195 p.
- Carey, R. 1863: Narrative of the late war in New Zealand. Richard Bentley, London.
- Challis, A.J. 1990: The location of Heke's Pa, Te Kahika, Okaihau, New Zealand: a field analysis. *New Zealand Journal of Archaeology 12*: 5–27.
- Chambers, W.A. 1982: Samuel Ironside in New Zealand, 1839–1858. Wesley Historical Society of New Zealand. Ray Richards Publisher, Auckland.

- Church, I. ms: Redoubts and military sites. Pp. 103-144 in *Historic sites and technological change in South Taranaki*. Patea High School [1982]. Unpublished typescript 144 p.
- Clough and Associates. 2003: Excavation of Albert Barracks (R11/833): University of Auckland Student Amenities Project. Unpublished, 232 p.
- Cowan, J. 1922: The old frontier. *The Waipa Post*, Te Awamutu.
- Cowan, J. 1983: *The New Zealand Wars* (2nd reprint). Government Printer, Wellington.
- Downes, T.W. 1915: *Old Whanganui*. Parkinson, Hawera.
- Featou, J. 1971: *The Waikato War 1863-4* (reprint). Capper Press, Christchurch.
- Foljambe, C.G.S. 1868: *Three years on the Australian station*. Hatchard, London.
- Gifford, W.H.; Williams H.B. 1976: *The centenary history of Tauranga* (reprint). Reed Publishing, Dunedin.
- Gudgeon, T.W. 1879: *Reminiscences of the war in New Zealand*. Sampson Low, London.
- Gumbley, W. n.d.: Report on archaeological investigations of Alexandra East Redoubt (1964) (S15/375) and assessment of the archaeological values of the site. Unpublished.
- Gumbley, W.; Keith, S. 2010: Cambridge ten star redoubt (S15/320) archaeological investigation report. Unpublished 30 p.
- Hart, H.G. 1849: *The new annual army list for 1849*. John Murray, London.
- Hart, H.G. 1862: *The new annual army list, and militia list for 1862*. John Murray, London.
- Hart, H.G. 1869: *The new annual army list, and militia list for 1869*. John Murray, London.
- Hight, J.; Straubel, C.R. 1957: *A history of Canterbury: Volume I*. Canterbury Centennial Association and Whitcombe and Tombs, Christchurch.
- Holdaway S.; Gibb, R. 2006: SH3 stage three Bell Block archaeological excavations at Te Oropuriri; final report. Auckland UniServices Ltd for Transit New Zealand, unpublished, 683 p.
- Houston, J. 1965: *Maori life in old Taranaki*. Reed, Wellington.
- Jones, K.L. 1983: Moerangi: a fortification of the Tauranga bush campaign. Pp. 65-76 in
- Bulmer, S.E.; Law, R.G.; Sutton, D.G. (Eds): *A lot of spadework to be done: essays in honour of Lady Aileen Fox by her New Zealand friends*. New Zealand Archaeological Association Monograph 14.
- Jones, K.L. 1994: *Ngā tohuwhenua mai te rangi: a New Zealand archaeology in aerial photographs*. Victoria University Press, Wellington.
- Jones, K.L. 2004: Pa, forest and fire on the western approaches to the Urewera Ranges, New Zealand. *New Zealand Journal of Archaeology* 26: 103-128.
- Jones, K.L.; Simpson, P.G. 1995: Archaeological site stabilisation and vegetation management. Case Studies I: Coromandel, Bay of Plenty and Hawke's Bay, Central Volcanic Plateau and Taranaki. *Science & Research Series 84*, Department of Conservation, Wellington.
- Jones, K.L.; Tanner, V. 2002: Archaeological survey of the southern Hawke's Bay coast from the air. *Science for Conservation 202*. Department of Conservation, Wellington.
- Keenan, D. 2009: *Wars without end: the land wars in nineteenth-century New Zealand*. Penguin Books, Auckland.
- Kelly, L. 1939: Paratui pa. *Journal of the Polynesian Society* 48: 129-134.
- Lambert, T. 1925: *The story of old Wairoa*. Coulls Somerville Wilkie, Dunedin.
- Lawrence, J.; Prickett, N. 1984: Excavations at Pukearuhe (N99/49), north Taranaki, 1968. *Records of Auckland Institute & Museum* 21: 1-32.
- Leahy, A.; Nevin, D. 1993: Excavations at site P5/228. Pp. 27-55 in Sutton, D.G. (Ed), *The archaeology of the peripheral pa at Pouerua, Northland, New Zealand*. Auckland University Press, Auckland.
- Lennard, M. 1986: The road to war; the Great South Road 1862-64. *Whakatane and District Historical Society Monograph* 16.
- Lovegrove, C.L. 1969: *Military history of Waverley*. Patea Historical Society, 42 p.
- Lovegrove, C.L. 1971: *Patea Historical Society Historic and Scenic Drive 1971*. Old Patea militia district and areas west of the Waingongoro River. Itinerary and place histories. Unpublished typescript, 21 p.

- Lundy, J. 1995: The Rangitikei redoubts. *Historical Record; Journal of the Whanganui Historical Society* 26(2): 3–39.
- Lundy, J. ms1: Redoubts erected by Rangitikei militia and volunteers—November/December 1868. Notes, New Zealand Archaeological Association conference, Palmerston North, unpublished, [1980].
- Lundy, J. ms2: Rangitikei redoubts 30 September 1995. Unpublished typescript, 1 p.
- Lyon, M.J. 2009: Lt. Col. Lyon and his namesake fort. *The Volunteers* 35: 114–124.
- McFadgen, B.G. 1977: Location of Maori defences at Te Ranga battle site near Tauranga, determined by geophysical prospecting methods. *New Zealand Archaeological Association Newsletter* 20: 251–255.
- McFadgen, B.G.; Walton, T. 1988: Excavations at Roto-o-rangi Redoubt (N65/87), Waikato. *Archaeology in New Zealand* 31: 58–67.
- Mallows, C. 2006: Review of information regarding the existence of possible military graves at Patea Beach, Patea. Opus International Consultants, unpublished.
- Melvin, L.W. 1990: Horatio Gordon Robley: soldier artist in the Bay of Plenty 1864–1866. Tauranga Historical Society.
- Mitchell, J.S. 1983: The history and archaeology of the Armed Constabulary archaeological sites along the Napier–Taupo Road, 1869–1885. Unpublished research essay, Anthropology Department, University of Auckland, 81 p.
- Mitchell, J.S. n.d.: The Runanga Stockade 1869–1875. Oceanic Prehistory Records, Anthropology Department, University of Auckland, Auckland.
- Morris, N. 1963: The journal of William Morgan. Libraries Department, Auckland City Council, Auckland.
- Mould, T.R. 1863: On the engineer operations carried on in New Zealand during the war in 1860–61. *Professional Papers of the Royal Engineers (new series)* 11: 95–110.
- Mould, T.R. 1869: Sketch of military proceedings in New Zealand, from the termination of the Waitara Campaign in March 1861. *Professional Papers of the Royal Engineers (new series)* 47: 12–42.
- National Archives AD 1869 2957: Major John Marshall, Commanding Rangitikei Militia and Volunteers, 'Return of blockhouses, redoubts and stockades in the Rangitikei district, 8th May 1869.'
- Nevin, D.; Nevin, G. 1980: Archaeological sites of the engagement at Te Tapiri, 1865. *New Zealand Archaeological Association Newsletter* 23: 7–10.
- Newman, M. 1988: Archaeological investigations in the vicinity of Lake Rotoaira and the lower Tongariro River, 1966–1971. New Zealand Historic Places Trust, Wellington.
- Nichol, R. 1979: Preliminary report on the excavation of a well in the Albert Barracks, Auckland. *New Zealand Archaeological Association Newsletter* 23: 97–104.
- O'Keefe, M. 2000: 'Realignment of SH3: Hawera to Normanby'. Unpublished report to Opus International Consultants, Wanganui.
- Parsons, P. 1997: In the shadow of Te Waka: the history of the Te Pohue district. Te Pohue History Committee, Napier.
- Pasley, C. 1863: The war in New Zealand. *Journal of the Royal United Service Institution* 6(25): 559–594.
- Phillips, F.L. 1989: Nga tohu a Tainui; landmarks of Tainui (Vol. 1). Tohu Publishers, Otorohanga.
- Phillips, F.L. 1995: Nga tohu a Tainui; landmarks of Tainui (Vol. 2). Tohu Publishers, Otorohanga.
- Prickett, N.J. 1981: The archaeology of a military frontier: Taranaki, New Zealand, 1860–1881. Unpublished PhD thesis, University of Auckland, Auckland.
- Prickett, N.J. 1984: Puketakauere. *Historic Places in New Zealand* 4: 10–12, 22.
- Prickett, N.J. 1994a: Pakeha and Maori fortifications of the First Taranaki War, 1860–61. *Records of the Auckland Institute & Museum* 31: 1–87.
- Prickett, N.J. 1994b: Archaeological excavations at the Omata Stockade and Warea Redoubt, Taranaki. *New Zealand Archaeological Association Monograph* 20: 1–132.
- Prickett, N.J. 1996: British Army and colonial fortifications in north Taranaki, 1863–64. *Records of the Auckland Institute & Museum* 33: 1–51.
- Prickett, N.J. 1999: British Army and colonial fortifications in north Taranaki, 1865–69. *Records of the Auckland Institute & Museum* 36: 5–58.
- Prickett, N.J. 2002: Landscapes of conflict: a field guide to the New Zealand Wars. Random House, Auckland.

- Prickett, N.J. 2003: The history and archaeology of Queen's Redoubt, South Auckland. *Records of the Auckland Museum* 40: 5-37.
- Prickett, N.J. 2005: Maori casualties of the First Taranaki War, 1860-61. *Records of the Auckland Museum* 42: 81-124.
- Prickett, N.J. 2008: The military engagement at Katikara, Taranaki, 4 June 1863. *Records of the Auckland Museum* 45: 5-41.
- Prickett, N.J. 2010: Pākehā and Māori fortifications in Taranaki, 1860-1881: form and purpose. Pp. 81-103 in Day, K. (Ed.): *Contested ground Te Whenua i Tohea; the Taranaki Wars 1860-1881*. Huia, Wellington.
- Prickett, N.J.; McGovern-Wilson, R. (Eds) 2009: Planning a future for New Zealand war sites and landscapes. *Occasional Publications in Archaeology* 1. New Zealand Historic Places Trust, Wellington.
- Ritchie, N.A.; Gumbley, W. 1992: The 40th Regiment redoubt site, Te Awamutu S15/173 archaeological excavations, 1991. Department of Conservation, Hamilton, 286 p.
- Roberts, C.J. 1939: Centennial history of Hawera and the Waimate Plains. Hawera County Council, Hawera.
- Simmons, A. n.d.: Technical memorandum; historical research on the Hamilton West Redoubt. Unpublished report to Department of Conservation .
- Simmons, A.; Simmons-Ritchie, D. 2007: Archaeological report on work carried out under NZHPT Authority 2004/150 at 24 Bridge Street, Hamilton. Simmons and Associates Ltd, Hamilton, unpublished.
- Smart, M.J.G. ms.: Redoubts in the Whanganui area (Waverley to Bulls) 23-1-63. Alexander Turnbull Library, MS Papers 1008-10. Typescript 2 p.
- Smart, M.J.G.; Smart, C.D. ms.: Redoubts and blockhouses in the Wanganui District. Typescript 24 pp, 1965. Alexander Turnbull Library, MS Papers 1008-07.
- Smart, M.J.G.; Bates, A.P. 1973: The Wanganui story. Wanganui Newspapers, Wanganui.
- Smith, I.W.G. 1989: Fort Ligar: a colonial redoubt in central Auckland, New Zealand. *New Zealand Journal of Archaeology* 11: 117-141.
- Smith, S.P. 1910: History and traditions of the Maoris of the west coast North Island of New Zealand prior to 1840. *Memoirs of the Polynesian Society* 1.
- Sinclair, K. 1961: The origins of the Maori Wars. 2nd Edition. Auckland University Press, Auckland.
- Soutar, M. 2000: Ngāti Porou leadership—Rāpata Wahawaha and the politics of conflict. PhD thesis, Massey University, Palmerston North.
- Springer, R. ms1: The story of Alexander's Redoubt. Typescript, unpublished, 5 p.
- Springer, R. ms2: The occupation of Wanganui by British forces, 1846-1870. Unpublished typescript [2001], 36 p.
- Spring-Rice, W. 1983: The history and archaeology of Fort Galatea, Bay of Plenty, New Zealand, 1869-1969. Unpublished MA thesis, University of Auckland, Auckland.
- Stafford, D.M. 1967: Te Arawa; a history of the Arawa people. Reed Publishing, Wellington.
- Stafford, D.M. 1994: Landmarks of Te Arawa: Volume 1 Rotorua. Reed Publishing, Auckland.
- Stowers, R. 1996: Forest rangers. Published by the author, Hamilton.
- Swarbrick, N. 1984: Historic earth fortifications; redoubts and pa built during and after the Waikato Campaign of 1863-1864. Department of Lands and Survey, typescript 84 p.
- Taylor, M.; A. Sutton 2003: Preliminary report on archaeological excavations at St. Patrick's Redoubt, P19/19, New Plymouth. Unpublished report to the New Zealand Historic Places Trust.
- Walton, A. 1989: Fortifications of the Taupo campaign. *Historic Places in New Zealand* 25: 14-16.
- Walton, A. 2003: New Zealand redoubts, stockades and blockhouses, 1840-1848. *DOC Science Internal Series* 122, Department of Conservation, Wellington.
- Wards, I. 1968: The shadow of the land. Government Printer, Wellington.
- Wahaanga, M. 2004: A carved cloak for Tahu. Auckland University Press, Auckland.
- White, P. 1995: An archaeological survey of the Bluff Stockade, Pokeno. Unpublished report for course 03.331, Anthropology Department, University of Auckland, Auckland.
- Wilson, J.G. 1939: History of Hawke's Bay. Reed, Dunedin and Wellington.

- Wilson, O. 1961: War in the tussock; Te Kooti and the battle of Te Porere. Government Printer, Wellington.
- Woodhouse, A. 1970: British regiments in Napier 1858–1867. Hawke's Bay Museum & Art Gallery, Napier.
- Wylie, J. 2006: Waiu Pa: 'keep out: historic place'. *Archaeology in New Zealand* 49: 120–130.
- Young, H.W. 1869: Hints on house defence, blockhouses and redoubts. William Lyon, Wellington.

Official publications

AJHR: Appendices to the Journals of the House of Representatives.

GBPP: Great Britain Parliamentary Papers.

War Office 0270 I: Journals of the Deputy Quartermaster General in New Zealand; from the 24th December, 1861, to the 13th October, 1865 [Colonel Gamble].

War Office 0270 II: Selections from Despatches and Letters Relative to the Conduct of Military Operations in New Zealand 1860–5.

Appendix 1

Summary of fortifications

Chapter 2: BAY OF ISLANDS

2.1	Lower Blockhouse		1845	Blockhouse	
2.2	Maiki Blockhouse	Q05/709	1845	Blockhouse	
2.3	Ohaeawai	P05/205	1845		pā
2.4	Otuihu	Q05/398	1845		pā
2.5	Pakaraka	P05/228	1845		pā
2.6	Polack's Stockade		1845	Stockade	
2.7	Ruapekapeka	Q06/139	1845-46		pā
2.8	<i>Ruapekapeka British works</i>	Q06/565	1846	Earthworks	
2.9	Te Ahuahu		1845		pā
2.10	Te Kahika	P05/238	1845		pā
2.11	<i>Waikare pā</i>		1845		pā
2.12	<i>Waimate earthworks</i>		1845	Earthworks	
2.13	<i>Waka Nene's pā</i> (Okaihau)	P05/246	1845		pā

BAY OF ISLANDS TOTALS:

Fortifications—13

Sites recorded—8

5—Pākehā

Māori—8

Chapter 3: AUCKLAND

AUCKLAND

3.1	Albert Barracks	R11/833	1846	Stone	
3.2	<i>Auckland blockhouses—8</i>		c. 1860	8 brick blockhouses	
3.3	Fort Ligar	R11/1636	1845	Redoubt	
3.4	Fort Richard		1850s	Redoubt?	
3.5	Howick Stockade	R11/326	1863	Stockade	
3.6	Onehunga Blockhouse		1860	Blockhouse	
3.7	Otahuhu Blockhouse		1860	Blockhouse/stockade	
3.8	Panmure Redoubt			Redoubt?	
3.9	Whau Blockhouse	R11/1815	1860	Blockhouse	
		Fortifications—16	Sites recorded—4	16—pākehā	Māori—0

SOUTH AUCKLAND

3.10	Alexandra Redoubt	R12/141	1863	Redoubt	
3.11	Baird's Hill Stockade	R12/184	1862	Stockade	
3.12	Bluff Stockade	R12/161	1862	Stockade	
3.13	Commissariat Redoubt (Drury)		c. 1863	Redoubt	
3.14	Drury Redoubt	R12/123	c. 1863	Redoubt	
3.15	Drury Settlers' Stockade		c. 1863	Stockade	
3.16	Galloway Redoubt	S11/533	1863	Redoubt	
3.17	Kerr's Farm Redoubt		1863	Redoubt	
3.18	Kirikiri Redoubt	R11/956	1863	Redoubt	
3.19	<i>Kukutai's pā</i> (Camerontown)	R12/732	1863?		Pā
3.20	Lower Wairoa Redoubt	S11/534	1863	Redoubt or stockade	
3.21	Martyn's Farm Stockade	R12/183	1862	Stockade	
3.22	Papakura Redoubt	R12/120	1863	Redoubt	
3.23	<i>Papakura churches—3</i>		1863	3 fortified buildings	
3.24	Pokeno Stockade		1868	Stockade	
3.25	Pukekohe East Church Stockade	R12/741	1863	Fortified building	
3.26	Queen's Redoubt	S12/23	1862	Redoubt	

Continued on next page

Appendix 1 continued

3.27	Razorback Redoubt	R12/185	1863	Redoubt	
3.28	Rhodes Clearing	R12/186	1862	Redoubt	
3.29	St Bride's Church (Mauku)		1863	Fortified building	
3.30	St John's Redoubt	R11/534	1863	Redoubt	
3.31	Wairoa Stockade	S11/949	1863	Stockade	
3.32	Williamson's Clearing	R12/187	1863	?	
		Fortifications—25	Sites recorded—17	24—Pākehā	Māori—1

AUCKLAND TOTALS:

Fortifications—41 Sites recorded—21 40—Pākehā Māori—1

Chapter 4: WAIKATO

MANGATAWHIRI TO RANGIRIRI

4.1	Buckingham Redoubt	S12/321	1863	Redoubt	
4.2	Eglington Redoubt	S12/204	1863	Redoubt	
4.3	Esk Redoubt	S12/30	1863	Redoubt	
4.4	Koheroa rifle-pits	S12/21, 270, 274, 279	1863		Rifle-pits
4.5	Lower Redoubt (Koheroa)	S12/320	1863	Redoubt	
4.6	Mangatawhiri Stockade	S12/322	1863	Stockade	
4.7	Meremere	S13/116, 117	1863		Pā / rifle-pits
4.8	Meremere Redoubt	S13/7	1863	Redoubt	
4.9	Miranda Lookout	S12/203	1863	Redoubt	
4.10	Miranda Redoubt	S12/46	1863	Redoubt	
4.11	Mould's Redoubt	S13/112	1863	Earthwork	
4.12	Paparata	S12/45, 32-37, 40, 43-44	1863		Pā / rifle-pits
4.13	Pukekawa	R13/23	1863		Pā
4.14	Rangiriri	S13/50	1863		Pā
4.15	Rangiriri Commissariat Redoubt	S13/135	1863	Redoubt	
4.16	Suffolk Redoubt	S12/228	1863	Redoubt	
4.17	Surrey Redoubt	S12/38	1863	Redoubt	
4.18	Tapaeahina	S13/11	1863		Pā
4.19	Te Teoteo	S12/237	1863		Pā
4.20	Te Wheoro's Redoubt	S13/3	1863	Redoubt	
4.21	Waikare Tirohia	S13/61	1863		Pā
4.22	Whangamarino Redoubt	S12/22	1863	Redoubt	
		Fortifications—22	Sites recorded—22	14—Pākehā	Māori—8

NGARUAWAHIA AND WAIPA RIVER

4.23	Alexandra Redoubt	S15/28	1868	Redoubt	
4.24	Alexandra East Redoubt	S15/373	1864	Redoubt	
4.25	Alexandra West Redoubt	S15/334	1864	Redoubt	
4.26	Fort Newcastle	S14/190	late 1860s	Redoubt	
4.27	Harapepe Blockhouse	S15/381	1860s	Blockhouse	
4.28	Harapepe Redoubt	S15/354	1865	Redoubt	
4.29	<i>Mangaotama earthwork</i>	S15/31	1864?	Earthwork	
4.30	Ngahinapouri Redoubt	S15/350	1864	Redoubt	
4.31	Ngaruawahia Redoubt	S14/181	1863	Redoubt	
4.32	<i>Ngaruawahia Maori defences</i>	S14/187	1863		Pā / rifle-pits
4.33	Paterangi	S15/61	1864		Pā
4.34	Paterangi Redoubt	S15/75	1864	Redoubt	
4.35	Pikiarero	S14/181	1863		Pā
4.36	Pikopiko	S15/62	1864		Pā
4.37	<i>Te Pahu redoubt</i>	S15/38	1864	Redoubt	

Continued on next page

Appendix 1 continued

4.38	Te Rore Redoubt	S15/63	1864	Redoubt	
4.39	<i>Te Rore Redoubt</i>	S15/71	1864	Redoubt	
4.40	Te Rore Piquet	S15/311	1864	Redoubt	
4.41	<i>Te Rore Pā</i>	S15/279	1864		Pā
4.42	Waddy's Forward Post	S15/348	1864	Redoubt	
4.43	Waddy's Redoubt	S15/351	1864	Redoubt	
4.44	Waiari	S15/53	1864		Pā
4.45	Waiari Redoubt	S15/74	1864	Redoubt	
4.46	Whatawhata Redoubt	S14/74	1864	Redoubt/stockade	
	Fortifications—24	Sites recorded—24		18—Pākehā	Māori—6
HAMILTON AND WAIKATO RIVER					
4.47	Cambridge Redoubt	S15/320	1864	Redoubt	
4.48	Crow's Nest Redoubt	T15/4	1864	Redoubt	
4.49	Firth Tower		1882	Fortified tower	
4.50	Galloway Redoubt	S14/95	1868	Redoubt	
4.51	Hamilton A.C. Magazine	S14/57	1873	Earthwork	
4.52	Hamilton East Redoubt	S14/72	1864	Redoubt	
4.53	Hamilton West Redoubt	S14/57	1864	Redoubt	
4.54	Kirikiroa Redoubt	S14/45	1864?	Redoubt	
4.55	Pukerimu Redoubt (1)	S15/41	1864	Redoubt	
4.56	Pukerimu Redoubt (2)	S15/99	1864	Redoubt	
4.57	Te Tiki-o-te-Ihingarangi	T15/4	1864		Pā
	Fortifications—11	Sites recorded—10		10—Pākehā	Māori—1
TE AWAMUTU AND DISTRICTS					
4.58	40th Regiment Redoubt	S15/173	1864	Redoubt	
4.59	57th Regiment Redoubt	S15/380	1864	Redoubt	
4.60	65th Regiment Redoubt	S15/338	1864	Redoubt	
4.61	Ford Redoubt	S15/233	1864	Redoubt	
4.62	Hairini	S15/326	1864		Earthwork/fence
4.63	Hairini Picket	S15/379	1864	Redoubt	
4.64	Haurua		1864		Pā
4.65	Kihikihi Redoubt	S15/235	1864	Redoubt	
4.66	Kihikihi Stockade	S15/236	1860s	Stockade	
4.67	Ohaupo	S15/237	1864		Pā
4.68	Ohaupo Redoubt	S15/11	1864	Redoubt	
4.69	Orakau	S15/103	1864		Pā
4.70	Orakau Blockhouse	S15/346	1871	Blockhouse	
4.71	<i>Orakau sap</i>	S15/347	1864	Sap	
4.72	Paekuku Blockhouse	S15/343	1873	Blockhouse	
4.73	Paratui	S16/226	1864		Pā
4.74	Rangiaowhia Redoubt	S15/234	1864	Redoubt	
4.75	Rangiatea	S15/355	1864		Pā
4.76	Roto-o-Rangi	S15/344	1864?		Pā
4.77	Rotoorangi Blockhouse		1873	Blockhouse	
4.78	Rotoorangi Redoubt	S15/54	1873	Redoubt	
4.79	Te Roto-Marama		1864		Pā
	Fortifications—22	Sites recorded—19		14—Pākehā	Māori—8
WAIKATO WEST COAST					
4.80	Kawhia A.C. Camp	R15/498	1883	Blockhouse	
4.81	Raglan Redoubt	R14/341	1863	Redoubt	
4.82	Waitetuna Redoubt	R14/133	1863	Redoubt	
	Fortifications—3	Sites recorded—3		3—Pākehā	Māori—0

Continued on next page

WAIKATO TOTALS:					
Fortifications—82		Sites recorded—78		59—Pākehā	Māori—23
Chapter 5: BAY OF PLENTY					
TAURANGA AND DISTRICT					
5.1	Aongatete Blockhouse	U14/1001	Late 1860s	Blockhouse	
5.2	Durham Redoubt	U14/433	1864	Redoubt	
5.3	Fort Colville	V14/6	1864	Redoubt	
5.4	Gate Pā Redoubt	U14/192	1864	Redoubt	
5.5	Judea Redoubt	U14/336	1864	Redoubt	
5.6	<i>Maketu rifle-pits (1)</i>	V14/9	1864		<i>Rifle-pits</i>
5.7	<i>Maketu rifle-pits (2)</i>	V14/19	1864		<i>Rifle-pits</i>
5.8	Moerangi	U15/119	1867		Pā
5.9	Monmouth Redoubt	U14/174	1864	Redoubt	
5.10	Omanawa Redoubt	U14/210	1867	Redoubt	
5.11	Pukehinahina (Gate Pā)	U14/192	1864		Pā
5.12	Pye's Pa Redoubt	U14/64	1867	Redoubt	
5.13	Tawhiti Nui	U14/160	1864		Pā
5.14	Te Irihanga	U14/328	1867		Pā
5.15	Te Papa Camp	U14/3171	1864	Earthwork	
5.16	Te Ranga	U14/191	1864		Pā
5.17	Waoku	U15/146	1864		Pā
Fortifications—17		Sites recorded—17		9—Pākehā	Māori—8
ROTORUA AND DISTRICT					
5.18	Kaiteriria	U16/3	1870		Pā
5.19	Maharo Redoubt		1867	Redoubt	
5.20	Puraku	U15/49	1867		Pā
5.21	Te Niho-o-te-Kiore		early 1870s	Redoubt	
Fortifications—4		Sites recorded—2		0—Pākehā	Māori—4
EASTERN BAY OF PLENTY					
5.22	<i>Kutarere gun-fighter pa</i>	W15/170	1860s-70s		Pā
5.23	Oheu		1865		Pā
5.24	Omeheu		1865		Pā
5.25	Opotiki Redoubt	W15/884	1865	Redoubt	
5.26	Otamauru		1865		Pā
5.27	Otara Blockhouse		1869?	Blockhouse	
5.28	Pa-harakeke	V15/159	1865		Pā
5.29	Papaka	W15/10	?		Pā
5.30	Parawai	V15/46, 48, 50	1865		Pā / rifle-pits
5.31	Rauporoa	W15/35	1869		Pā
5.32	Te Matapihi	V15/14	1865		Pā
5.33	Te Paripari	W15/23	1865		Pā
5.34	Te Poronu Redoubt	W15/94	1868	Redoubt	
5.35	<i>Te Poronu rifle-pits</i>	W15/97	1868		Rifle-pits
5.36	Te Puia		1865		Pā
5.37	Te Tarata	W15/155	1865		Pā
5.38	Te Teko	V15/158	1865		Pā
5.39	Waioeka Redoubt		1867	Redoubt	
Fortifications—18		Sites recorded—12		4—Pākehā	Māori—14
UREWERA AND ITS APPROACHES					
5.40	Fort Alfred	V15/416	1869	Redoubt?	

Continued on next page

Appendix 1 continued

5.41	Fort Clarke	V16/265	1869	Redoubt	
5.42	Fort Galatea (1)	V17/8	1869	Redoubt	
5.43	Fort Galatea (2)	V17/6	1875	Redoubt	
5.44	Hinemoki (1)	V18/12	1865		Pā
5.45	Hinemoki (2)	V18/33	1865		Pā
5.46	Karamuramu	V17/7	1869	Redoubt	
5.47	Kohi-a-tau		1871		Redoubt
5.48	Kohimarama		1871		Redoubt
5.49	Koko Tahī	V17/4	1869		Pā
5.50	Okupu	V17/13	1865		Pā
5.51	Orangikawa		1869		Pā
5.52	Tauaroa		1869		Pā
5.53	Te Harema	V17/12	1869		Pā
5.54	Te Puhī a Kapu	V17/11	1869		Pā
5.55	Te Tapiri	V17/33	1865		Pā
5.56	Te Tuahu-a-te-Atua	V17/18	1865		Pā
		Fortifications—17	Sites recorded—13	5—Pākehā	Māori—12
BAY OF PLENTY TOTALS:					
		Fortifications—56	Sites recorded—44	18—Pākehā	Māori—38

Chapter 6: CENTRAL NORTH ISLAND

NORTH END OF LAKE					
6.1	Opepe Redoubt	U18/29	1870	Redoubt/stockade	
6.2	Pahautea Stockade	U18/95	1870	Stockade	
6.3	Runanga Stockade	V19/14	1870	Stockade	
6.4	Tapuaeharuru Redoubt	U18/2	1870	Redoubt	
6.5	Tarawera Stockade	V19/26	1870	Stockade	
6.6	Te Haroto Blockhouse	V19/26	1869	Blockhouse	
6.7	Titiokura Stockade	V20/76	1869	Stockade	
		fortifications—7	sites recorded—7	7—Pākehā	Māori—0
SOUTH END OF LAKE					
6.8	Auahitotara		1880		Pā
6.9	Donnelly's Fort	U21/1	ca 1881		Pā
6.10	<i>Mangaohane earthwork</i>	U21/2	ca 1881		Pā
6.11	Poutu	T19/167	1869?		Rifle-pits
6.12	Poutu Redoubt	T19/166	1869	Redoubt	
6.13	Tauranga Taupo		1869		Pā
6.14	Te Ponanga	T19/61, 71	1869		Rifle-pits
6.15	Te Porere (1)	T19/55, 116	1869		Pā
6.16	Te Porere (2)	T19/56	1869		Pā
6.17	Te Wehengaiti	T19/41	1869		Pā
6.18	Waiu (1)	T21/1	1880		Pā
6.19	Waiu (2)	T21/2	1880		Pā
		fortifications—12	sites recorded—9	1—Pākehā	Māori—11
CENTRAL NORTH ISLAND TOTALS:					
		fortifications—19	sites recorded—17	8—Pākehā	Māori—11

Chapter 7: POVERTY BAY AND EAST COAST

POVERTY BAY					
7.1	Crow's Nest	X17/32	1868	Earthwork	
7.2	Fort Richmond	X17/34	1868	Earthwork	

Continued on next page

Appendix 1 continued

7.3	<i>Gisborne trench</i>	Y18/426	1869	Earthwork	
7.4	<i>Makaretu rifle-pits</i>	X17/33	1868		Rifle-pits
7.5	Ngatapa	X17/1	1868		Pā
7.6	Pukeamionga	Y18/135	1865		Pā
7.7	Te Karetu		1868		Pā
7.8	Waerenga-a-Hika	Y18/34, 163	1865		Pā
		Fortifications—8	Sites recorded—7	3—Pākehā	Māori—5
EAST COAST					
7.9	Hungahungatoroa	Z14/91	1865		Pā
7.10	Kotare		1865		Pā
7.11	Makeronia	Z19/96	1865		Pā
7.12	Manawahikitia	Z14/102	1865		Pā
7.13	Pakairomiromi		1865		Pā
7.14	Pukeamaru		1865		Pā
7.15	Pukemaire		1865		Pā
7.16	Pukepapa	Z16/112	1865		Pā
7.17	Tahutahupo		1865		Pā
7.18	Tautini		1865		Pā
7.19	Te Hatepe		1865		Pā
7.20	Te Mawhai		1865		Pā
7.21	Tikapa		1865		Pā
7.22	Tikitiki		1865		Pā
		Fortifications—14	Sites recorded—4	0—Pākehā	Māori—14
POVERTY BAY AND EAST COAST TOTALS:					
		Fortifications—22	Sites recorded—11	3—Pākehā	Māori—19

Chapter 8: HAWKES BAY AND WAIRARAPA

NORTHERN HAWKE'S BAY					
8.1	Hiruharama	W19/176	1869		Pā
8.2	Marumaru Stockade	X19/270	early 1870s	Stockade	
8.3	Mohaka Blockhouse	W19/200	1869	Blockhouse	
8.4	Onepoto Redoubt	W18/2	early 1870s	Redoubt	
8.5	Te Ariki Redoubt	W19/107	1869	Redoubt	
8.6	Te Huke	W19/177	1869		Pā
8.7	Tokitoki	X19/57	1865		Pā
8.8	Wairoa Redoubt	X19/287	1868	Redoubt	
		fortifications—8	sites recorded—8	5—Pākehā	Māori—3
SOUTHERN HAWKE'S BAY					
8.9	Napier Barracks		1858	Redoubt	
8.10	Patoka Hill Stockade			Stockade	
8.11	<i>Porangahau pa</i>	V24/80	1866?		Pā
8.12	Takapau Blockhouse		1864	Blockhouse	
8.13	Tikokino Blockhouse		1863	Blockhouse	
8.14	Waipawamate Stockade	V22/588	1858?	Stockade	
8.15	Waipukurau Stockade		1858?	Stockade	
		Fortifications—7	Sites recorded—2	6—Pākehā	Māori—1
WAIRARAPA					
8.16	Masterton Stockade	T26/8	1868	Stockade	
		Fortifications—1	Sites recorded—1	1—Pākehā	Māori—0
HAWKE'S BAY AND WAIRARAPA TOTALS:					
		Fortifications—16	Sites recorded—11	12—Pākehā	Māori—4

Continued on next page

Chapter 9: NORTH TARANAKI

NEW PLYMOUTH AND BELL BLOCK				
9.1	Bell Block Stockade	P19/159	1860	Blockhouse and stockade
9.2	Carrington Road Blockhouse	P19/175	1860	Blockhouse
9.3	Dingle's Blockhouse	P19/155	1864	Blockhouse
9.4	Egmont Village Blockhouse		1868	Blockhouse
9.5	Fort Cameron		1860	Blockhouse
9.6	Fort Herbert	P19/174	1860	Blockhouse
9.7	Fort Murray		1860	Blockhouse
9.8	Fort Niger	P19/152	1860	Blockhouse
9.9	Fort Stapp		1860	Blockhouse
9.10	Henui Blockhouse		1860	Blockhouse
9.11	Katere	P19/242	1860	Pā
9.12	Mahoetahi	Q19/114	1860	Pā
9.13	Mahoetahi Stockade	Q19/118	1860	Stockade
9.14	Marsland Hill Stockade	P19/9	1855	Stockade
9.15	Mount Eliot		1855	Earthwork
9.16	<i>New Plymouth defences</i>		1860	Earthworks/Palisade
9.17	No 2 Blockhouse		1860	Blockhouse
9.18	No 3 Blockhouse	P19/121	1860	Blockhouse
9.19	Northcroft Stockade		1860	Stockade
9.20	Puketapu Feud—15 pa incl. Te Tima	Q19/224	1850s	15 Pā
9.21	Puketotara	P19/183	1860	Pā
9.22	Puketotara Blockhouse	P19/160	1864	Blockhouse
9.23	Ratanui Blockhouse	P19/161	1864	Blockhouse
9.24	Sentry Hill Redoubt	Q19/119	1864	Redoubt
9.25	Te Oropuriri	P19/262	1860	Pā
	Fortifications—39	Sites recorded—16		20—Pākehā Māori—19
WAITARA AND DISTRICT				
9.26	Camp Waitara	Q19/90	1860	Redoubt
9.27	Huirangi		1860	Pā/rifle-pits
9.28	Huirangi Blockhouse		1865	Blockhouse
9.29	Hurirapa	Q19/88	1850s	Pā
9.30	Kairau	Q19/151	1850s	Pā
9.31	Kirikiriraumate		1860	Pā
9.32	Kotewaiamaha		1860	Pā
9.33	Manganui Blockhouse		1866	Blockhouse
9.34	Manutahi		1860	Pā
9.35	Manutahi Blockhouse		1865	blockhouse
9.36	Manutahi Redoubt		1864	redoubt
9.37	Mataitawa		1860s	Pā
9.38	Mataitawa Blockhouse	Q19/155	1865	Blockhouse
9.39	Mataitawa Redoubt	Q19/162	1864	Redoubt
9.40	Matakara Redoubt	Q19/161	1864	Redoubt/ stockade
9.41	Matarikoriko	Q19/122	1860	Pā
9.42	Matarikoriko Stockade	Q19/122	1860	Stockade
9.43	Ngataiparirua		1860	Pā
9.44	No 1 (Kairau) Redoubt	Q19/142	1860	Redoubt
9.45	No 2 Redoubt	Q19/143	1861	Redoubt
9.46	No 3 Redoubt	Q19/144	1861	Redoubt
9.47	No 4 Redoubt	Q19/145	1861	Redoubt
9.48	No 5 Redoubt	Q19/146	1861	Redoubt

Continued on next page

Appendix 1 continued

9.49	No 6 (Huirangi) Redoubt	Q19/147	1861	Redoubt	
9.50	No 7 Redoubt	Q19/148	1861	Redoubt	
9.51	No 8 Redoubt	Q19/149	1861	Redoubt	
9.52	Onukukaitara	Q19/130	1860		Pā
9.53	Pratt's Sap	Q19/70	1860	Sap	
9.54	Puketakauere	Q19/120	1860		Pā
9.55	Puketakauere Stockade	Q19/130	1860	Stockade	
9.56	Te Arei		1861		Pā
9.57	Te Arei Blockhouse	Q19/154	1869	Blockhouse	
9.58	Te Arei Redoubt	Q19/163	1864	Redoubt	
9.59	Te Kohia	Q19/129	1860		Pā
9.60	Te Tutu	Q19/150	1861		Pā
9.61	Waitara Blockhouse	Q19/45	1860	Blockhouse	
	Fortifications—36	Sites recorded—25		22—Pākehā	Māori—14
NORTH OF WAITARA RIVER					
9.62	Kaipikari		1864		Pā
9.63	Mimi Stockade	Q19/60	1869	Stockade	
9.64	<i>No 2 Company Redoubt</i>	Q19/165	1865	Redoubt	
9.65	Papatiki Redoubt	Q18/40	1869	Redoubt	
9.66	Pukearuhe Redoubt	Q18/80	1865	Redoubt	
9.67	Takapu Redoubt	Q19/164	1869	Redoubt	
9.68	Tikorangi Redoubt	Q19/153	1865	Redoubt	
9.69	Tupari		1869		Pā
9.70	<i>Urenui Redoubt</i>	Q19/27	1865	Redoubt	
9.71	<i>Urenui north redoubt</i>	Q19/224	1879	Redoubt	
9.72	Urenui earthwork		1860s-70s	Earthwork	
9.73	Waiiti Redoubt	Q18/41	1869	Redoubt	
	Fortifications—12	Sites recorded—9		10—Pākehā	Māori—2
OMATA AND OAKURA DISTRICTS					
9.74	Ahuahu	P19/109	1864		Pā
9.75	Ahu Ahu Blockhouse		1864	Blockhouse	
9.76	Allen's Hill Blockhouse	P19/32	1864	Blockhouse	
9.77	Fort Robert	P19/20	1863	Redoubt	
9.78	Kaipopo	P19/120	1860		Pā
9.79	Kaitake	P19/98	1864		Pā
9.80	Kaitake Redoubt	P19/37	1864	Redoubt	
9.81	Lower Kaitake Blockhouse	P19/45	1864	Blockhouse	
9.82	Oakura A.C. Redoubt	P19/34	1879	Redoubt	
9.83	Omata Stockade	P19/35	1860	Stockade	
9.84	Pahitere Redoubt	P19/23	1864	Redoubt	
9.85	Poutoko Blockhouse		1864	Blockhouse	
9.86	St Andrew's Redoubt	P19/38	1863	Redoubt	
9.87	St Patrick's Redoubt	P19/19	1863	Redoubt	
9.88	Timaru Redoubt	P19/43	1864	Redoubt	
9.89	Tuahukino Blockhouse		1865	Blockhouse	
9.90	Waireka Camp	P19/36	1860	Redoubt	
9.91	<i>Waireka pa</i>		1860		Pā/rifle-pits
9.92	<i>Waireka rifle-pits</i>	P19/292	1860		Rifle-pits
	fortifications—19	sites recorded—15		14—Pākehā	Māori—5
TATARAMAKA AND OKATO DISTRICTS					
9.93	Bayly's Farm A.C. Camp	P19/41	1879	Redoubt	
9.94	Camp Parawaha	P19/39	1860	Earthwork	

Continued on next page

9.95	Crow's Nest	P19/218	1863	Redoubt	
9.96	Fort Strange	P19/44	1860	Redoubt	
9.97	Fort Turner	P19/42	1860	Redoubt	
9.98	<i>Kaihihi River sap</i>		1860	Sap	
9.99	Mataiaio	P19/105	1860		Pā
9.100	Okato Blockhouse	P19/47	1865	Blockhouse	
9.101	Orongomaihangai	P19/40	1860		Pā
9.102	Porou	P19/223	1863		Pā
9.103	Pukekakariki	P19/205	1860		Pā
9.104	St George's Redoubt	P19/44	1863	Redoubt	
9.105	Stoney River Redoubt	P19/33	1865	Redoubt	
9.106	Tataraimaka Blockhouse	P19/46	1865	Blockhouse	
9.107	<i>Tataraimaka pa—5</i>		1860		5 Pā
9.108	Te Tutu		1863		Pā
9.109	Tukitukipapa	P19/119	c. 1865		Pā
	Fortifications—21	Sites recorded—14		10—Pākehā	Māori—11
	SOUTH OF HANGATAHUA (STONE RIVER)				
9.110	Cape Egmont Camp	P20/107	1880	stockade	
9.111	Fort Rolleston	P20/110	1881	redoubt	
9.112	Kaikahu Redoubt	P20/109	1880	redoubt?	
9.113	Nekeua		1865		Pā
9.114	Ngakumikumi Camp	P20/24	1880	redoubt	
9.115	Okeanui	P20/99	1865		Pā
9.116	Opua Camp		1880	?	
9.117	Opunake Redoubt	P20/18	1865	redoubt	
9.118	Pungarehu Camp	P20/108	1880	redoubt	
9.119	Rahotu Stockade	P20/63	1880	stockade	
9.120	Waikoukou		1866		Pā
9.121	Waitaha Camp		1880	?	
9.122	Warea	P20/92	1860		Pā
9.123	Warea Redoubt	P20/17	1865	redoubt	
9.124	Werekino Camp	P19/116	1880	redoubt	
	fortifications—15	sites recorded—11		11—Pākehā	Māori—4
	NORTH TARANAKI TOTALS:				
	fortifications—142	sites recorded—90		87—Pākehā	Māori—55

Chapter 10: SOUTH TARANAKI

10.1	Canada Redoubt		1868	Redoubt/stockade?	
10.2	Hawera Stockade		1869	Stockade	
10.3	Kakaramea Blockhouse	Q21/329	1866	Stockade	
10.4	Kakaramea Redoubt	Q21/154	1865	Redoubt	
10.5	Ketemarae	Q21/32, 33			Pā
10.6	Manaia Redoubt	P21/24	1880	Redoubt	
10.7	Manawapou Redoubt	Q21/153	1865	Redoubt	
10.8	Mangamanga	Q21/34	1860s		Pā
10.9	Manutahi Redoubt		1865	Redoubt	
10.10	Meremere		1866		Pā
10.11	Mokoia Redoubt		1865	Redoubt	
10.12	Normanby Redoubt	Q21/372	1879	Redoubt	
10.13	Ohawe Redoubt		1865	Redoubt	
10.14	Okautiro Redoubt	Q21/232	1867	Redoubt	
10.15	Otapawa	Q21/123	1866		Pā

Continued on next page

Appendix 1 continued

10.16	Patea Blockhouse		1868	Blockhouse	
10.17	Patea Redoubt	Q22/10	1865	Redoubt	
10.18	Patea Redoubt (south)	Q22/9	1865	Redoubt	
10.19	<i>Patea River pa</i>	Q21/158	1868?		Pā
10.20	Rangitoto Redoubt		1865	Redoubt	
10.21	Tangahoe Redoubt	Q21/152	1865	Redoubt	
10.22	Tauranga-Riri		1866		Pā
10.23	Te Ngutu o te Manu		1867		Pā
10.24	Tirotiromoana		1866		Pā
10.25	Turuturumokai Redoubt	Q21/328	1867	Redoubt	
10.26	Waihi Redoubt	Q21/151	1866	Redoubt/stockade	
10.27	Waingongoro Redoubt	Q21/374	1865	Redoubt	
10.28	Waukina	Q21/29	1860s-70s		Pā
10.29	Whakamara				Pā

SOUTH TARANAKI TOTALS:

Fortifications—29

Sites recorded—17

19—Pākehā

Māori—10

Chapter 11: WHANGANUI

THE TOWN

11.1	Albuera Redoubt		1860s	Redoubt	
11.2	Aramoho Redoubt		?	Redoubt	
11.3	Castlecliff Redoubt		1868	Redoubt/blockhouse?	
11.4	Gunboat Stockade		1847	Stockade	
11.5	Lower Stockade		1846	Stockade	
11.6	Nixon's Redoubt		1868	Redoubt	
11.7	Rutland Stockade	R22/440	1846	Stockade	
11.8	<i>St John's Wood rifle-pits</i>		1847		Rifle-pits
11.9	York Stockade	R22/253	1847	Stockade	

Fortifications—9

Sites recorded—2

8—Pākehā

Māori—1

WHANGANUI RIVER

11.10	Buckthought's Redoubt	S22/43	1868	Redoubt	
11.11	Koroniti (Corinth) Stockade		1865	Stockade	
11.12	Missionary Road Redoubt		1868	Redoubt	
11.13	Nga Mokamokai	S21/5	1865		Pā
11.14	No 1 Redoubt	R21/1	1865	Redoubt	
11.15	No 2 Redoubt		1865	Redoubt	
11.16	No 3 Redoubt		1865	Redoubt	
11.17	Parikino Redoubt	S22/50	1865	Redoubt	
11.18	Pukehinau	R20/1	1865		Pā
11.19	Suffren's Redoubt	S22/37	1868	Redoubt	
11.20	Tawhitinui Redoubt		1865	Redoubt	

Fortifications—11

Sites recorded—6

9—Pākehā

Māori—2

NORTH TO PATEA

11.21	Alexander's Farm Redoubt	R22/145	1864	Redoubt	
11.22	Bluff Redoubt		1865	Redoubt	
11.23	Bryce's Redoubt	R22/6	1868	Redoubt	
11.24	<i>Kai Iwi Redoubt: R22/417</i>	R22/417	?	Redoubt	
11.25	Lyon's Redoubt: R22/146	R22/146	1868	Redoubt	
11.26	Moturoa		1868		Pā
11.27	<i>Moturoa attacking trenches</i>		1868	Earthworks	
11.28	<i>Nukumarū Picket (1)</i>	R22/106	1865	Redoubt	
11.29	<i>Nukumarū Picket (2)</i>	R22/107	1865	Redoubt	

Continued on next page

Appendix 1 continued

11.30	<i>Nukumaru Picket</i> (3)	R22/108	1865	Redoubt	
11.31	Nukumaru Redoubt	R22/109	1865	Redoubt	
11.32	Oika	Q22/28	1860s?		Pā
11.33	Okotuku		1868		Pā
11.34	Peake's Redoubt	R22/419	?	Redoubt	
11.35	Stewart's Redoubt	R22/148	1864-65	Redoubt	
11.36	Tauranga Ika	R22/110	1868-69		Pā
11.37	<i>Tauranga Ika attacking trenches</i>		1869	Earthworks	
11.38	Te Putahi	Q21/209	1866		Pā
11.39	Trafford's Redoubt	R22/5	1868	Redoubt	
11.40	Wairoa Redoubt	R22/455	1867	Redoubt	
11.41	Waitotara Redoubt	R22/117	1865	Redoubt	
11.42	Weraroa	R22/66	1865		Pā
11.43	Weraroa Redoubt	R22/65	1865	Redoubt	
11.44	Woodall's Redoubt	R22/147	1864-65	Redoubt	
	Fortifications—24	Sites recorded—19		18—Pākehā	Māori—6
SOUTH—INCLUDING RANGITIKEI AND MANAWATU					
11.45	Austin's Redoubt		1868	Redoubt	
11.46	Bryce's Redoubt		1868	Redoubt	
11.47	Hassard's Redoubt	S23/94	1868?	Redoubt	
11.48	Hogg's Redoubt	S23/93	1868	Redoubt	
11.49	Matthew's Redoubt	S23/95	1868	Redoubt	
11.50	Marangai Blockhouse		1868	Blockhouse	
11.51	McDonald's Redoubt	S22/125	1868	Redoubt	
11.52	Nga Haere	S25/60	1872		Pā
11.53	<i>Parewanui</i>	S23/4	1868		Pā
11.54	Pipiriki	S25/51	1872		Pā
11.55	Robert's Redoubt	S23/96	1868	Redoubt	
11.56	Ross's Redoubt	S23/5	1868	Redoubt	
11.57	Strachan's Cave	S22/124	1860s	Cave	
11.58	Turakina Redoubt	S23/92	1868	Redoubt	
11.59	Willis's Redoubt	S23/9	1868	Redoubt	
	fortifications—15	sites recorded—12		12—Pākehā	Māori—3
WHANGANUI TOTALS:					
	Fortifications—59	Sites recorded—39		47—Pākehā	Māori—12

Chapter 12: WELLINGTON AND DISTRICT

WELLINGTON					
12.1	Fort Thorndon		1845	Redoubt	
12.2	Karori Stockade		1846	Stockade	
12.3	Te Aro Redoubt		1845	Earthwork	
12.4	Thorndon Redoubt		1843	Redoubt	
12.5	Waterloo Redoubt		1843	Earthwork	
	Fortifications—5	Sites recorded—1		5—Pākehā	Māori—0
HUTT VALLEY					
12.6	Boulcott's Farm Stockade		1846	Stockade	
12.7	Fort Richmond		1845	Stockade	
12.8	Hutt Stockade		1860-61	Stockade	
12.9	Taita Stockade		1846	Stockade	
12.10	Upper Hutt Stockade	R27/146	1860-61	Stockade	
PORIRUA ROAD AND DISTRICT					

Continued on next page

Appendix 1 continued

12.11	Clifford's Stockade	R27/235	1846	Stockade	
12.12	Elliot's Stockade (1)	R27/242	1846	Stockade	
12.13	Elliot's Stockade (2)		1846	Stockade	
12.14	Fort Strode	R26/258	1846	Redoubt	
12.15	Horokiri	R26/246	1846		Pā
12.16	Leigh's Stockade	R27/238	1846	Stockade	
12.17	Matai-Taua	R27/135	1846		Pā
12.18	McCoy's Stockade	R27/236	1846	Stockade	
12.19	Middleton's Stockade	R27/237	1846	Stockade	
12.20	Paremata Barracks	R26/254	1846	Stone blockhouse	
12.21	Pauatahanui Stockade		1846	Stockade	
	Fortifications—11	Sites recorded—9		9—Pākehā	Māori—2
WELLINGTON AND DISTRICTS TOTAL:					
	Fortifications—21	Sites recorded—10		19—Pākehā	Māori—2

Chapter 13: SOUTH ISLAND AND CHATHAM ISLAND

SOUTH ISLAND					
13.1	Fort Arthur	O27/57	1843	Redoubt/stockade	
13.2	English Blockhouse		1843	Blockhouse	
13.3	French Blockhouse		1843	Blockhouse	
13.4	Takamatua Blockhouse		1843	Blockhouse	
CHATHAM ISLAND					
13.5	Waitangi Redoubt		1866	Redoubt	
SOUTH ISLAND AND CHATHAM ISLAND TOTAL:					
	Fortifications—5	Sites recorded—1		5—Pākehā	Māori—0